MATERIAL TO BE REFERRED FOR KNOWLEDGE OF ISLAM

by

Dr. ZAKIR NAIK

Material to be Referred for the knowledge of Islam

Sr.No : 1

Name of the package : Al-Qur'an Al-Karim

VERSION : 7.0

LANGUAGE : English / Arabic

DESCRIPTION : Display of the entire Qur'anic text in Ottoman calligraphy with vowelization marks and recitation of the Qur'anic text by two famous reciters with the ability to shift from one reciter to the other at any time. Information features related to the text such as: explanation of difficult terms; showing the occasion of revelation; and Tafsir (Interpretation) of the Holy Qur'an by Al-Qurtubi, Al-Tabari, Ibn Kathir and Al-Jalalain, enabling the user to compare the various interpretations of the same verse. In addition to Arabic, the programme is available in English, Malay, Turkish, French and German. You can copy and print text in any of these languages. Animated display of the points, qualities and manners of articulation, along with practical explanation of the rules of recitation. Extensive search facilities. Thematic search including fourteen main topics. Each main topic is divided into other sub-topics at six levels. Effective aid for memorizing the Qur'anic verses. The programme enables the user to listen to verse in his own voice and compare his recording to the recitation.

PRODUCER : Sakhr Software , P. O. Box 5189, Heliopolis, West Cairo 117711, Egypt. Tel: (202) 2494170 Fax:2485542 e-mail: heritage@ritsec1.com.eg

---

Sr.No : 2

Name of the package : The Glorious Qur'an

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : Arabic / English / French / German / Spanish / Malay / Indonesian

DESCRIPTION : It includes recitations of the entire Qur'an by Shaikh Mohammed Ayoub, Sheikh Khalil Husri, Sheikh Mohammed Siddiq Minshawi, Sheikh Ali bin Abdur Rahman Al-Hudaifi, and also other recitations, Surah information, English translation of the Holy Qur'an by Yusuf Ali, Pickthall, Daryabadi, Shakir, Muhsin Khan, Foreign Language translation of the Qur'an i.e. French, German, Spanish, Malay, Indonesian, transliteration, handwritten Qur'an scripts some of which are hundreds of years old, articles on the Qur'an.

PRODUCER: Par Excellence Software Post Box 42671, 38-7th Avenue, Fordsburg 2033, 2092 Johannesburg, Republic of South Africa. Tel: 27-11-8300097 Fax:8300947 www.parexcellence.co.za

---

Sr.No : 3

Name of the package : Al-Qur'an Al-Karim

VERSION : 4.2

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English / Arabic / Malay / Indonesian / Turkish / Chinese / Urdu

DESCRIPTION : Yusuf Ali's translation, Pickthall translation, Qur'an pronounciation, view a phonetic pronounciation guide, easily print Arabic script or English text Surah of Ayahs, audio recitation, learn the proper Qur'anic pronounciation by recording voice, Islamic terms and dictionary, Malaysian, Indonesian, Turkish, Chinese and Urdu translations and Arabic Tafseer.

PRODUCER : Micro Systems International Al-Madinah Ta'la Road, P.O. Box 13140, Jeddah 21493, Kingdom of Saudi Arabia Tel: (02) 6515989 / 6533421 Fax: 6323640

Sr.No : 4

Name of the package : The Holy Qur'an

VERSION : 1.5

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English / Arabic

DESCRIPTION : It contains the Holy Qur'an, word or words search facilities, statistics about of the Qur'an, display Qur'an, text recitation of the Qur'an and thematic search facility.

PRODUCER : SILICON Electronics Corp. P.O. Box 7917 (S.A.A.F.) Sharjah, United Arab Emirates. Tel: 9716-572048 Fax:572062

Sr.No : 5

Name of the package : Al-Furqan - Towards a Complete Encyclopedia for Qur'an

VERSION : 1

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English / Arabic / French / Malay / Indonesian

DESCRIPTION : Featrures : True image of the book with sound of Sheikh Al-Hossary, three translation of tafseer in English, French and Indonesian languages, five Arabic tafseer (meaning of the Qur'an), new memorisation techniques for verse and page, recitation of verse surah, hezb part whole the whole about Qur'an, the names of Allah and the tree of prophets in four languages, powerful search engine for letters, words, sound file copying capabilites, more than 16 background to select from, the menu system and many more.

PRODUCER : Khalifa Computer Group (KCG) 162 Malik Faisal Street, P. O. Box 339 Imbata, Al-Ramaz Al-Buredi 12411, Al-Jiza, Egypt. Tel+fax: 202-3829604 / 3837794

Sr.No : 6

Name of the package : Holy Qur'an

VERSION : 2.1

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English / French / Malaya / German / Persian / Spanish / Turkish

DESCRIPTION : Holy Qur'an in the Osmani Moshaf style with 30 hours recitation by sheik Mahmoud Sadiq Al-Menshawi in six language translation.

PRODUCER : HCI Masters (M) Sdn. Bhd. 115A, Jalan Gasing, 46000 Petaling Jaya, Selangore, Malaysia, Tele : 03-7549970 Fax : 03-7549980 e-mail : kifah@pc.jaring.my

---

Sr.No : 7

Name of the package : Softrade Qur'an CD

VERSION : 2.1

FORMAT : One CD-Rom + One Diskette

LANGUAGE : English / Malaya

DESCRIPTION : The Qur'anic text in Rasm Uthmani, Arranged according to Mushaf Syarif Madinah. Translation of the Qur'an in English (Allama Abdullah Yusuf Ali) and Malay (Tafsir Pimpinan-Ar-Rahman). Complete controll over navigations. Searching facilities.

PRODUCER : Software Trading No. 46, Jalan Empangan, 8/14, 40000 Shah Alam, Selangor, Malayasia Tel : (603) 5521586

Sr.No : 8

Name of the package : Hoda - The Holy Qur'an – Treasury

VERSION : 2.0

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : Dictionary of words and subjects of Holy Qur'an containing 2000 subjects and words, complete recitation and presenting Holy Qur'an narrations alongwith sound picture.

PRODUCER : Tolou Computer Company P. O. Box 61006, Dubai, United Arab Emirates

---

Sr.No : 9

Name of the package : Al-Qur'an Al-Karim - (Holy Qur'an) - A multimedia presentation of Islam's Holy Book

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : Arabic / English / French / German / Persian / Spanish / Turkish

DESCRIPTION : Entire Holy Qur'an in the Osmani Moshaf style with 30 hours recitation by Mahmoud Sadiq A-Menshawi;Has translation in six languagess.

PRODUCER : Pajohesh

Sr.No : 10

Name of the package : Qur'an Base

FORMAT : 1.44 X 2 Diskette

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : Contents : Translation of the Holy Qur'an, as it was, as it is, some information about Muslims, introductory material on Islam, tne Qur'anic commentaries and selections.

PRODUCER : Sound Vision 843 W. Van Buren, Suite 411, Chicago, IL 60607, USA Tel : (312) 2260205

Sr.No : 11

Name of the package : Tafseer Base

FORMAT : 1.44 x 3 Diskette

LANGUAGE : English / Arabic

DESCRIPTION : Contents : Search functions, a statistics system that presents the number of the Qur'anic letters, words, verses. Surahs are included and presented graphics charts, according to the Qur'anic revelations, the order of revelation or the length of the Surah's.

PRODUCER : Sound Vision 843 W. Van Buren, Suite 411, Chicago, IL 60607, USA Tel : (312) 2260205

Sr.No : 12

Name of the package : Al-Qur'an Data Base

FORMAT : Diskette

Sr.No : 13

Name of the package : The Alim

VERSION : 4.5

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : The Alim – a unique and exciting way to study Islam. Look up information from the Qur'an, Hadith, Islamic Law (Fiqh), Islamic History, biographies of the companions of the prophet, dictionary of Islamic terms and general information about Muslims and Islam. Search through volumes of authentic books on Islam in seconds. Learn from the Qur'an. Browse through the different English translations from A. Yusuf Ali to M. Pickthall. Search from the brief synopsis, overview of the history of the Surahs by Maududi or learn to recite in Arabic using a Roman transliteration of the Qur'an. It includes complete audio recitation with proper tajweed by a reknowned Qari.

PRODUCER : ISL Software Corp. 3037 Featherwood St.Silver Spring, MD 20904 6645, U.S.A. Tel: 800-4433636 e-mail: sales@islsoftware.comwww.islsoftware.com

---

Sr.No : 14

Name of the package : The Islamic Scholar

VERSION : 2

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : An information packed, it combines three leading Qur'an translations, together with Hadith, History of Prophets, Islamic history, Muslim contribution to the world and more in a simple intuitive, easy to use Windows compatible interface.

PRODUCER : Par Excellence Software Post Box 42671, Fordsburg 2033, Johannesburg, Republic of South Africa.

Sr.No : 15

Name of the package : The Islamic Library

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English / Arabic

DESCRIPTION : It includes Noble Qur'an, Summarized Sahih Al-Bukhari, Taqwiyat Ul-Iman, Ar-Raheeq Al-Mukhtum, Bulugh Al-Maram and the Pillars of Islam & Iman in an easy to use programme to facilitate the use of these references. With free text search and cross referencing between Arabic and English text.

PRODUCER : Ariss Computer Inc. Beirut - Lebanaon. Tel: 01-740848 Fax: 01-740862 AraSoft Riyadh,Kingdom of Saudi Arabia. Tel+Fax: 4615461

Sr.No : 16

Name of the package : E - Ustad

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English / Arabic

DESCRIPTION : It includes Qur'an Multimedia with English Meaning, search and recitation by Sheik Mahmood Khalil Al-Husari, 9500 Hadith from five famous books of hadith in English like Sahih Bukhari (9 volumes), Sahih Muslim, Sunan Abu Dawoud, Al-Muwatta, Mishkat Al Masibih, Colossal reference, Seera, biography accounts of the life of the Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) has been an essential part of islamic intellectual endeavor.

PRODUCER : HCI Masters (M) Sdn. Bhd. 115A, Jalan Gasing, 46000 Petaling Jaya, Selangaor, Malayasia Tel : 03-7549970 Fax : 03-7549980 e-mail : kifah@pc.jaring.my www.jaring.my/hci

---

Sr.No : 17

Name of the package : Qala Rasool Allah - Al-Bayan

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English / Arabic / Malay

DESCRIPTION : This programme handles more than 1700 Hadiths agreed upon by the two Imams, Bukhari and Muslim, it provides complete indexing, friendly interface and back tracking through the programme is available, with all its features in Arabic, English and Malaya.

PRODUCER : Sakhr Software P. O. Box 5189, Heliopolis, West Cairo 117711, Egypt Tel : (202) 2494170 Fax : 2485542 e-mail : heritage@ritsec1.com.eg

---

Sr.No : 18

Name of the package : Explanation of the Forty Hadith Al-Nawawi

VERSION : 1

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English / Arabic

DESCRIPTION : As a contribution for Imam Al-Nawawi's efforts in collecting the most important Forty Hadith (saying of the prophet). It contains the text and sound of all forty hadith explanations, lessons taught, new techniques for memorization and four Islamic games to enhance the understanding and benefits of the prophet's message.

PRODUCER : Khalifa Computer Group (KCG) 162 Malik Faisal Street, P. O. Box 339 Imbata, Al-Ramaz Al-Buredi 12411, Al-Jiza, Egypt. Tel+fax: 202-3829604 / 3837794

Sr.No : 19

Name of the package : Hadith Base

FORMAT : 1.44 x 10 Diskettes

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : Contents: Hadith and its place in Islam, importance of Sunnah in Islam, Imam Al-Bukhari, Sahih Al-Bukhari, the English translation of Al-Bukhari, some useful information about Hadith.

PRODUCER : Sound Vision 843 W. Van Buren, Suite 411, Chicago, IL 60607, USA Tel: (312) 2260205

ENGLISH TRANSLATION OF THE GLORIOUS QUR'AN

SR.NO : 1

NAME OF THE QUR'AN : THE HOLY QUR'AN

NO. OF VOLS : 1

TRANSLATOR : Abdullah Yusuf Ali

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Amana Corporation, 4411 41st Street, Brentwood, Maryland 20722 U.S.A.

EDITION & YEAR : New Revised Edition - 1989

SR.NO : 2

NAME OF THE QUR'AN : THE QUR'AN

NO. OF VOLS : 1

TRANSLATOR : Saheeh International

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Abul - Qasim Publication House P.O. Box 6156 Jeddah 21442 Saudi Arabia This book has been produced in collaboration with Saheeh International;

EDITION & YEAR : New Revised Edition - 1997

SR.NO : 3

NAME OF THE QUR'AN : THE NOBLE QUR'AN

NO. OF VOLS : 1

TRANSLATOR : Dr. Muhammad Taqi-ud-Din Al-Hilali and Dr. Muhammed Muhsin Khan

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Maktaba Dar-us-Salam P. O. Box 21441 Riyadh 11475 Saudi Arabia or King Fahd Complex for the Printing of the Holy Qur'an

EDITION & YEAR : Fourth Revised and Enlarged Edition - 1994

SR.NO : 4

NAME OF THE QUR'AN : THE MESSAGE OF THE QUR'AN

NO. OF VOLS : 1

TRANSLATOR : Muhammad Asad

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Dar Al-Andalus – Gibraltar, Distributors: E. J. Brill, Publishers and Book - Sellers, 41, Museum Street London - WCIAILX

EDITION & YEAR : 1980

SR.NO : 5

NAME OF THE QUR'AN : TAFSIR-UL-QUR'AN

NO. OF VOLS : 4

TRANSLATOR : Maulana Abdul Majid Daryabadi

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Darul Ishat, Urdu Bazar, Karachi 1, Pakistan

EDITION & YEAR : First Edition 1991

SR.NO : 6a

NAME OF THE QUR'AN : HOLY QUR'AN

NO. OF VOLS : 1

TRANSLATOR : Mohammed Marmaduke Pickthall

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Ta-Ha Publishers Ltd. 1 Wynne Road, London SW9 0BB

EDITION & YEAR : First Edition 1991

SR.NO : 6b

NAME OF THE QUR'AN : THE MEANING OF THE GLORIOUS QUR'AN

NO. OF VOLS : 1

TRANSLATOR : Muhammad Marmaduke Pickthall – Revised and edited in Modern Standard English by Arafat K. El-Ashi, Ph.D.

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Amana Publications Beltsville, Maryland, U.S.A.

EDITION & YEAR : First Edition 1996

SR.NO : 7a

NAME OF THE QUR'AN : THE MEANING OF THE QUR'AN

NO. OF VOLS : 6

TRANSLATOR : S. Abul a'la Maududi English Translation by Muhammad Akbar (I-III) and Abdul Aziz Kamal (IV - VI)

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Islamic Publication (Pvt.) Ltd., 13-E Shahalam Market, Lahore, Pakistan

EDITION & YEAR : 12th Edition 1992

SR.NO : 7b

NAME OF THE QUR'AN : TOWARDS UNDERSTANDING THE QUR'AN

NO. OF VOLS : 6 incomp.

TRANSLATOR : S. Abul a'la Maududi English Translation by Zafar Ishaq Ansari

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Islamic Foundation, Markfield Da'wah Centre, Ratby Lane, Markfield Leicestershire, LE670RN- UK

EDITION & YEAR : 1995

SR.NO : 8

NAME OF THE QUR'AN : DAWATUL QUR'AN

NO. OF VOLS : 3

TRANSLATOR : Shams Pirzada English Translation by Abdul Karim Sheikh

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Idara Dawatul Quran, 59, Muhammad Ali Road, Mumbai, India

EDITION & YEAR : 3rd Edition 1996

SR.NO : 9

NAME OF THE QUR'AN : TAFSEER IBN KATHIR

NO. OF VOLS : 10

TRANSLATOR : Revised by Safiur-Rahman Al-Mubarakpuri and other Scholars.

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Darussalam, P.O. Box 22743, Riyadh 11416, KSA

N.B. : Since translation of the Qur'an is the work of a human being, each and every translation has mistakes. However, the above translations have been mentioned, taking into consideration their positive points and not their mistakes and errors.

BOOKS ON LIFE OF PROPHET MUHAMMAD (PBUH)

SR.NO : 1

NAME OF THE BOOK : Muhammad: Encyclopaedia of Seerah

NO. OF VOLS : 8

TRANSLATOR : Afzalur-Rahman

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : The Muslim Schools Trust 78, Gillespie Road London N5 ILN, U.K.

EDITION & YEAR : 1st Edition 1981

SR.NO : 2

NAME OF THE BOOK : The Life of Muhammad

NO. OF VOLS : 1

TRANSLATOR : Tahia Al-Ismail

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Ta-Ha Publishers Ltd. 1, Wynne Road, London, SW9 OBD, U.K.

EDITION & YEAR : 1995

SR.NO : 3

NAME OF THE BOOK : Muhammad: His Life Based on Earliest Sources

NO. OF VOLS : 1

TRANSLATOR : Martin Lings

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Inner Traditions International Ltd. One park Street, Rochester, Vermont – 05767

EDITION & YEAR : 1983

SR.NO : 4

NAME OF THE BOOK : Ar - Raheeq Al-Makhtum The Sealed Nector – Biography of the Noble Prophet

NO. OF VOLS : 1

TRANSLATOR : Safi-ur-Rahman Al-Mubarakpuri

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Maktaba Darus-Salam Publication P.O. Box 22743 Riyadh - 11416 Saudi Arabia.

EDITION & YEAR : 1996

SR.NO : 5

NAME OF THE BOOK : The Life of Muhammad

NO. OF VOLS : 1

TRANSLATOR : Muhammad Husain Haykal

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Shorouk International 316/318 Regent Street, Morley House, WI London U.K.

EDITION & YEAR : 1983

ENCYCLOPEDIA ON ISLAM

SR.NO : 1

NAME : The Oxford Encyclopedia of the Modern Islamic World

NO. OF VOLS : 4

EDITOR : John L. Esposito

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Oxford University Press, New York, Oxford, U.S.A.

EDITION & YEAR : 1995

SR.NO : 2a

NAME : Encyclopedia on Islam

NO. OF VOLS : 8

EDITOR : H. A. R. Gibb

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : E. J. Brill, Leiden, The Netherlands

EDITION & YEAR : 1991

SR.NO : 2b

NAME : Shorter Encyclopedia of Islam

NO. OF VOLS : 1

EDITOR : H. A. R. Gibb and J. H. Kramers

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : E. J. Brill, Leiden, The Netherlands

EDITION & YEAR : 1995

SR.NO : 3

NAME : The Concise Encyclopedia of Islam

NO. OF VOLS : 1

EDITOR : Cyril Glasse

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Stacey International, London, U.K.

EDITION & YEAR : 1989

SR.NO : 4

NAME : Dictionary of Islam

NO. OF VOLS : 1

EDITOR : Thomas Patrick Hughes

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Rupa & Co. 15, Bankim Chatterjee Street, Calcutta 3831, Pataudi House Road, Daryaganj, New Delhi – 110002

EDITION & YEAR : 1988

Unfortunately there are no comprehensive Encyclopedias on Islam which have been completely written and edited by Muslims. Thus we may have to refer to the above mentioned encyclopedias even though many a times Islam has been misrepresented in them.

FORMS OF DA'WAH

by

Dr. ZAKIR NAIK

INTRODUCTION

Definition of *'Da'wah'*
'Da'wah' means an invitation. In the Islamic context it means an invitation to Islam. Thus*Da'wah* means conveying the message of Islam to Non-Muslims and inviting them to Islam.

Definition of *'Islaah'*
'Islaah' means to improve, correct, rectify or repair. In Islamic terminology, 'Islaah' means correcting a Muslim or providing more knowledge of Islam to a Muslim.

Difference between *Islaah* and *Da'wah:*
Usually people use the word *'Da'wah'* for the act of conveying the message of Islam, without differentiating whether the person being addressed is a Muslim or a Non-Muslim. Many consider *Da'wah* and *Islaah* to be one and the same activity. The appropriate word used for inviting a Non-Muslim to Islam is *Da'wah* and for providing correct and additional knowledge of Islam to a Muslim is *Islaah.*

Forms of *Da'wah:*
There are two forms of *Da'wah*: (i) live and direct without any media and (ii) indirect through means of media.

DIFFERENT MEDIA OF *DA'WAH:*

The media through which *Da'wah* can be done is broadly divided into four categories:

i) Print Media
ii) Audio
iii) Video
iv) Electronic Media

1. **Print Media:**
   Print Media can be further classified into non-periodical and periodical:
   i) Non-periodical print media consists of literature: pamphlets, booklets, books, etc.

ii) Periodical print media consists of newspapers, magazines, newsletters, etc. which are published periodically - either daily, weekly, fortnightly, monthly, quarterly, bi-annually, annually, etc.

2. **Audio:**

The popular audio media today are:

i) Audio cassettes

ii) Audio compact discs

iii) Digital Audio Tapes (DAT).

The audio media can be used at different levels:

a) Individual:

i) A person can listen at fixed places like home, office, etc. with the help of desktop audio equipment.

ii) While travelling in cars, buses, trains, planes, etc. with the help of audio equipmen fixed in the vehicle.

iii) While walking, moving or any of the above situations with the help of portable audio equipment.

b) Group:

Audio media can be used to convey the message to a group of family members, social and cultural gatherings, functions, meetings, etc.

c) Public level:

Audio media can be utilised to reach a multitude of people through radio broadcast.

3. **Video:**

The popular video media today are:

i) Video Cassettes

ii) Video Compact Discs - VCD

iii) Digital Video Discs - DVD

Video media too, like audio media, can be used to convey the message to an individual or to a group of people. It can also be used to convey the message to the public via Cable T.V. Networks, T.V. Stations and Satellite T.V. Channels.

4. **Electronic Media:**

Electronic Media or Computer Media is another media that can be used to convey the message to an individual or a group of people. It can also be used at a public level through the Internet by way of web sites, homepages, bulletin boards, e-mail messages, etc. Electronic Media can be stored on hard discs and on:

i) Diskettes or floppies

ii) Compact Discs: Read Only Memory - CD ROMs

iii) Digital Video Discs - DVD

Effectiveness of Different Media - Impact and Retention of Media:

1. **Retention levels of different media:**

Research has shown that different media have different percentage of retention of the message conveyed.

i) **<u>Print media - 10% retention:</u>**

An average person when he reads any material he remembers approximately 10% of what he has read.

ii) **<u>Audio - 20% retention:</u>**

An average person when he hears any message he remembers approximately 20% of what he has heard.

iii) **<u>Visual - 30% retention:</u>**

An average person when he sees anything he retains or remembers approximately 30% of what he has seen.

iv) **<u>Video (Audio Visual) - 50 % retention:</u>**

If an average person sees and hears a particular message he remembers about 50% of what he has seen and heard. The maximum retention is in the case of audio-video media since both the senses of sight and hearing are involved in grasping the message conveyed.

These first four types of media i.e. the print media, audio, video and electronic media, are mainly modes of one-way communication, i.e. conveying the message in one direction only without interaction and clarification from the person who receives the message. It is more of a monologue than a dialogue. A very minute portion of these media can be converted into an interaction or a dialogue, for e.g., a question and answer column in the periodical of the print media or a live question and answer session via the telephone on the radio or television channel or live chatting on the internet.

The major disadvantage is that it is one-sided, i.e. a monologue, rather than being both sided, i.e. a dialogue or a two-way interactive communication.

<u>Requirements of *Da'wah*:</u>

Basic knowledge and understanding of Islam and Comparative Religion is required for doing*Da'wah* irrespective of what the media is. However, to be effective in *Da'wah*, specialisation is required for which different media require different techniques, strategies and specialised exposure and training.

While being effective in print media requires one type of technique, to be effective through the audio, video and electronic media requires different techniques.

As far as this *Da'wah* training programme is concerned, we will not be dealing with indirect*Da'wah* done through these four media.

In this *Da'wah* training programme, we will concentrate on live and direct *Da'wah* without any media which may incorporate a few points of audio and video media.

<u>LIVE *DA'WAH* – WITHOUT MEDIA:</u>

Unlike *Da'wah* done through media, live and direct *Da'wah* is more of a dialogue than a monologue. It is interactive and involves two-way communication. Only in a few instances where a talk or a lecture is given to an individual or a group of people without allowing interaction or a question answer session, it becomes a monologue.

Live Interactive *'Da'wah'* can further be classified into:

i) Individual level i.e. Personal one to one basis.
ii) Public level i.e. to groups or to audiences

DA'WAH AT AN INDIVIDUAL LEVEL:

The techniques and strategies of *'Da'wah'* on a personal one to one basis besides depending on the category of person to whom *Da'wah* is addressed, differs depending on the availability of time

Da'wah **can be done to strangers as well as to known people.**

1. *Da'wah* to strangers e.g. co-passengers while travelling:

i) In a local train or bus you may have 10 - 30 minutes.

ii) In a plane, you may have a few hours.

iii) In a long distance train or bus journey, you may have a few hours to a couple of days.

These categories of people to whom *Da'wah* is done while travelling may be once in a lifetime opportunity for you. You may never meet the same person again in your life. In short, it consists of strangers whom you are not familiar with or known to

2. *Da'wah* to known people:

i) Friends and acquaintances, whom you meet once in a while.

ii) Schoolmates, colleagues, co-workers in offices, businessmen, etc. whom you meet almost daily and will be in contact with atleast for a few years.

iii) Neighbours and relatives whom you meet regularly, and will be in contact with for several years to come

3. Initiating the process of *Da'wah*:

Initiating the process of *Da'wah* is a very important technique especially while doing *Da'wah*on Personal, one to one basis.

a) It can be done by **asking simple questions like:**

i) Why are you wearing a cross? What is its significance?
(Topic: Was Christ (pbuh) Crucified?)

ii) Why are you wearing a *Teeka*, *Vermillon* or a *Mangalsutra*?
(Topic: Status of Women in Hinduism)

iii) During Christmas season: What is the significance of Christmas?
(Topic: Is Jesus God? or Can God be born?)

iv) If stuck in a traffic jam during *Ganesh Chaturthi* procession: who is *Ganesh*?
(Topic: Concept of God in Hinduism)

v) Since India is a multi-cultural country, there are several festivals thereby giving opportunities to initiate *Da'wah* by asking simple questions on these festivals

b) **Carry an attractive eye-catching booklet on Islam and Comparative Religion,** while travelling or going to school or office. On many occasions, people around you may request you for the book. Whenever a booklet on Islam is given to Non-Muslims, it is preferable not to give it away for good. He may never read it. Ask him in how much time will he return it giving you anopportunity to interact with him at the end of the period or to remind him if he has not read it. Even if you have to give the booklet for him to keep, take his telephone number so that you can clarify any of his misconceptions on the telephone.

c) **Statements or remarks to initiate '*Da'wah*':**

Only a few non-Muslims will willingly give you a hearing if you say that I want to talk to you about Islam. Instead of you asking him to give you time, you should instigate him to ask you to give him time for conveying the message of Islam.

i) Also helpful and effective are leading statements such as "without some men being allowed to marry more than one woman, all women cannot live with modesty". The Non-Muslim would not agree and would ask for a clarification. Grab the opportunity and say that you

can clarify it if he has 10 minutes to spare. Since he is asking you a question he will give you full attention and time to listen to the answer.

ii) If a Non-Muslim friend or acquaintance teases a girl, which is a common act in colleges and universities, ask him a simple question, "what would you do if someone teases your sister?" (Topic: *Hijaab* in Islam)

d) Instead of saying a thousand good things about Islam to a Non-Muslim it is preferable to ask him what he feels is wrong with Islam. (Topic: Replies to Most Common Questions asked by Non-Muslims about Islam).

***Da'wah* at PUBLIC LEVEL:**

i) Giving talks and lectures on Islam to a Non-Muslim audience. It is always preferable to have a question and answer session after the talk.

ii) Symposia

iii) Debates

TECHNIQUES OF DA'WAH RELATED PUBLIC SPEAKING

by

Dr. ZAKIR NAIK

I - <u>IMPORTANT TIPS</u>1. Body Language is very, very important.2. It is preferable that the talk be given without the help of notes.3. Speak without a podium to enable the audience to observe the body language.4. Before beginning your speech, remove any disturbances that may cause obstruction or hindrance.

II - PERSONAL APPEARANCE:

1. Keep a Beard.
(Sahih Bukhari Vol. 7, Book of Dress, Chapter no. 64 and 65 Hadith no. 780 & 781)2. It is preferable to wear a cap which is clean or cover your head.
(if the label shows your intent, wear it!)3. Wear formal clothes (avoid T-shirts, jeans and other casual wear).4. Wear formal shoes (avoid track shoes, slippers, etc.). If footwear are not allowed, wear only clean, untorn socks.5. Do not wear neck chains or wrist chains.6. Avoid wearing glamorous things like shining watches, rings, etc.7. Do not wear belts with big showy buckles.8. Button your shirt (except for collar button, all the other buttons should be closed).9. Do not fold your sleeves while lecturing.10. Do not keep anything (not even a pen) in your shirt pocket. Do not clutter your trouser pockets with things not required.11. If spectacles are worn then the frame should not be glamorous. (If the talk is being video recorded, then preferably the glasses should have an antiglare coating).12. Your overall appearance should be smart, appealing and confident.

III - POSTURE:

1. It is preferable to stand and talk rather than sitting and speaking.2. While standing, your legs should neither be too far apart nor too close.3. Stand erect on both your feet, without bending them at the knees.4. Stand upright and not with drooping shoulders.5. Do not move to and fro, i.e. sideways, or front and backward.6. Do not shake unnecessarily.7. Do not lean on anything like table, chair, etc.8. Your posture should be confident and energetic. It should be relaxed and not tense.

IV - GESTURES:

1. Do not stand rigid like a statue.2. Make gestures with hands very often.3. Gestures should be natural and not acted out or preplanned. (You may, however, see your own trial performance in the mirror to evaluate the effectiveness and impression of your gestures).4. Gestures should

be related to the matter that is being spoken.5. Avoid making similar gestures repeatedly throughout the speech.6. Your facial expressions should be warm, genial and cordial, and not appear stern or angry.7. Your face should have expressions according to the matter of your speech.8. If you have to turn or make a movement, do it from the hip and upper part of the body.

V - <u>TERMINUS:</u>

1.

Your hands should be placed one on top of the other on the navel or slightly below or above the navel, (or on the podium) when at rest, i.e. while not making gestures.

2.

Do not put your hands in your pockets or behind your back.

3. Do not play with your fingers.4.

Do not bite your nails.

5.

Do not fidget with your clothes.

6. Do not fidget with the mike, or the wire, or any article such as pen, paper, etc.

VI - <u>EYE MOVEMENT:</u>

1. At the beginning of the talk give a glance throughout the audience.2. Have eye to eye contact with as much of the audience as possible (each and every one if possible if you have a small audience).3. Do not look at the opposite sex if they are present in the audience. You may however give a passing glance occasionally.4. Look more often at the target audience (e.g. Non-Muslims, Questioners, etc.).5. You may draw attention of a person in the audience by looking at him directly. However, if this person continues to disturb or distract, it may be advisable at such times to ignore the distraction and continue with your talk.6. It will be helpful to you and enhance your confidence if you look more at those sections of the audience that appear to be supportive and attentive.7. Do not look at or fix your gaze on the ceiling, floor, empty space or above the heads of the audience.8. If referring to your notes is unavoidable, then do not peep at them from far in an apologetic half-hearted manner, but instead hold them close to you and look at them properly in a dignified manner.

VII - <u>MIKE HANDLING:</u>

1. If possible, prior to the commencement of the programme, adjust the equalizer (treble and bass or hi, mid and low), i.e. quality of the tone suitable to your voice.2. Always insist that the mike be fixed on a floor stand without a podium.3. Adjust the mike according to your height before the programme begins.4. If the mike is not adjusted before the programme, do it before beginning your speech. (It is better to spend a few seconds at the start, rather than being uncomfortable throughout the speech or to disturb your speech in between to adjust the mike).5. If the mike has an on/off switch, check that it is in the 'on' position before beginning the

speech.6.   The mike should not cover your face, as it would obstruct the view of the audience and the video shooting.7.   Your mouth should be a few inches away from the mike (not too close, nor too far). Distance also depends on the sensitivity of the mike.8.   The distance between the mouth and the mike should be constant throughout the speech and should not vary.9.   Sometimes for emphasis, you may move your mouth close to the mike without raising your voice.10.   The mouth should always be pointing towards the mike throughout the speech and should not vary at any point.11.   If you have to look in another direction, for eg. towards the chairman who is sitting behind on the stage, take a side step forward and then looking at the chairman, speak into the mike and not away from the mike.12.   Do not speak when your mouth moves away from the mike, e.g. while picking up a book from the table.14.   Never hold the mike on the stand while speaking.15.   Avoid giving a talk with a handheld mike since the gestures become restricted. There is a tendency for the hand to move thereby creating variations in the sound.

VIII -   <u>SPEECH:</u>

1.

Speak loudly.

2.

Speak at a moderate speed, neither too slow nor too fast.

3.   People can usually listen faster than the speed at which they can speak. Thus there should not be pauses or blanks, leaving the audience without something to listen and allowing their attention to be diverted.4.   However, after speaking on a difficult or unusual matter, give a short pause for the audience to grasp and assimilate the information.5.

Speak clearly. Speech should not be slurred.

6.   Speak confidently.7.   Speak with energy and enthusiasm. (You have to enthuse and charge-up the audience).8.

Speak forcefully (assertively) with conviction. Be persuasive.

9.

Repeat the important points for emphasis when required.

10.   During normal speech there should not be any repetition.11.   Do not speak monotonously. Modulate/Alter your voice. Change the Speed / Pace, Tone and Pitch appropriately (High tone, Low tone, hushed voice, depending on the matter). As far as possible, ensure that you hold the interest of your audience throughout your lecture.12.   Do not have a patterned speech like a sing-song voice which goes up and down at regular intervals. The concentration of the audience is lost. (This is common in memorised speeches).13.

However, rhythmic tempo in choice of words can be used.

14.

Do not interrupt your speech for petty reasons.

IX - MISCELLANEOUS:

1. Before the commencement of the speech, walk confidently and calmly towards the mike and not in a tense and rapid manner.2. Pause confidently before starting the speech.3. If there is any disturbance during the speech, if it can be overlooked, overlook it; or ask the disturbance to be stopped verbally, but don't interrupt your speech intermittently during the disturbance. The attention of the audience will be diverted at intervals and you will loose your grip on them.4.

It is preferable to drink water before starting the speech to lubricate the mouth. Only drink room temperature water and not cold water (Avoid drinking water while standing).

5. Visit the venue in advance, if possible, to familiarise yourself with the hall and the surroundings.6. The public address system should be professional, as sound is the most important part of the talk.7. Prepare a checklist of all the requirements. eg. (i) Professional Public Address System (ii) Mike on floor stand without a podium, (iii) A glass with a jug of water (at room temperature) to be kept on the table. These requirements and the check list can be given to the organisers, well in advance.

X - SEEK ALLAH'S HELP:

1. Do your supplications and *du'as* seeking Allah's help and support.2. It is highly recommended that you offer two *rakaah Salaah* before the talk (seeking Allah's help) and also after the talk (as thanksgiving).3. Always be in 'Tahaarat' (state of ablution) while delivering a speech.

STRUCTURE AND CONTENT OF ISLAMIC TALKS

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

I - <u>BEGINNING</u>:

1.

Always begin the speech by praising Allah (swt) and by wishing / sending peace to the Prophet (pbuh) and his Companions. eg. *"Al-Hamdu lillaah, Was-Salaatu Was-Salaam 'Ala Rasoolillaah, Wa-Ala Alihi Wa-ashaabihi Ajma'een. Amma Ba'ad".*
("Praise be to Allah and Peace and Blessing on the Prophet of Allah, his Descendents and all his Companions...")

2.

Then seek Allah (swt)'s protection from Satan the accursed by saying, "*Auzoo Billahi Minash-Shaytaanir-Rajiim*".
("I seek refuge in Allah from Satan the accursed")

3.

This should be followed by, "*Bismillaahir-Rahmanir-Rahiim*"
(In the name of Allah, Most Gracious, Most Merciful).

4.

It is preferable to follow this with Arabic recitation of any verse or verses of the Glorious Qur'an which are relevant to the topic.

5.

It is advisable to seek Allah (swt's) help in delivering the message by reciting Surah Ta-Ha, Chapter 20 Verses 25-28 of the Glorious Qur'an. "*Rabbishrah lii sadrii; Wa yassir liii 'amrii; Wahlul 'uqdatam-mil-li-saanii, Yafqahuu qawlii*:"
("O my Lord! expand me my breast; Ease my task for me; And remove the impediment from my speech, So they may understand what I say")

6.

Mention the name of the Chairman, Chief guest, any other speakers on the stage if present, and then address the audience and welcome them by saying, "...Respected Elders and My Dear Brothers and Sisters, I welcome all of you with the Islamic greetings...."

7.

Now wish the audience, "*As-Salaamu Alaikum, Wa Rahmatullahi, Wa Barkatahu*", "May Peace, Mercy and Blessing of Allah (swt) be on all of you".

(Combine step 6 and 7)

N.B. Do not mention the translation of the Arabic verses within brackets

II - **INTRODUCTION**:

1.

Mention the topic of the talk.

2.

Clarify the meaning of the topic if required (for eg. the word Da'wah).

3. State the importance of the topic.4.

If applicable, give the relevance of your talk to the present situation (current issues, special occasions like graduation ceremony, etc.).

5. Explain historical background, if required.6. Clarify misconceptions, if any, regarding the subject of the talk.

III - **BODY OF THE LECTURE**:

1.

Divide the body of the lecture into various sub-headings (eg. The topic 'Women's Rights in Islam' can be divided into spiritual, economic, social, educational, legal and political rights of Women in Islam).

2.

If required, mention the sub-headings at the outset.

3.

The duration of the body should at least be twice in length and duration than that of the beginning, introduction and conclusion put together.

4.

Explain the different points of your lecture in such a way that even a common man understands it, unless the lecture is addressed to a particular audience consisting of specialists in that field.

5.

It is preferable to mention few points with different explanations and examples rather than mentioning several points which are difficult to assimilate.

6.

If possible, analyse and discuss the topic from different angles.

7.

Do not divert or stray away from the topic.

8. Do not beat around the bush by giving vague and irrelevant matter.9. Your matter should be interesting enough to hold the attention and concentration of the audience.10.

The content should do full justice to the topic of the talk.

IV - <u>CONCLUSION:</u>

1.

Plan the conclusion well.

2.

Refrain from saying "Finally ..." or " In conclusion ..." more than once.

3. Summarise the body, if required.4.

Do not repeat the complete speech again while summarising.

5.

Appeal for action, based on implications.

6.

Conclude the talk by giving a very striking example or a relevant incident or a thought provoking quotation.

7.

You may conclude the talk with an emphatic Qur'anic verse.

8.

An excellent conclusion is very important for a lasting impression of the talk.

9.

The last sentence preferably should be Surah Yunus chapter 10 verse 10 *'Wa aakhiru da'waa naa 'anil- Hamdulillaahi Rabbil-'aalamiin*'
("And the close of our cry will be: Praise be to Allah the cherisher and Sustainer of the Wolds!") or any other relevant verse of the Qur'an or authentic Hadith to be quoted in Arabic.

V - IMPORTANT TIPS FOR AN IMPRESSIVE AND AUTHENTIC TALK:

1.

Do not carry the text of your full speech to the stage or the podium. It is unimpressive. There will be very little impact if you read the lecture.

2.

It is preferable that you do not carry any summary or points of the lecture. It is best to speak altogether from memory.

3.

If under unavoidable circumstances, you have to refer to points, write only the headings, sub-headings and the very important points in big bold letters on sheets of paper. (While doing so, make sure that you number and arrange them to avoid last moment shuffling).

4.

Quote as many relevant verses of the Qur'an as possible which deal with the subject.

5.

Whenever feasible, expound quotations of the Qur'an by giving cross- references (the best commentary of the Qur'an is the Qur'an itself).

6.

If possible, quote verses of the Qur'an in Arabic alongwith the translation.

7.

Quote only authentic Ahadith.

8.

Whenever you quote any religious scripture, it is highly preferable to give the reference.

9.

Quote statistics for better impact and emphasis.

10.

Mention the source of any quotation or statistics that you cite.

11.

If possible, display the books from which you quote, e.g. Qur'an, Bible, etc.

12.

Audio-Visual aids like clippings from video cassettes, over head projectors, slide projectors, flipcharts, etc. are useful for seminars and small discussions, but are not very effective when Islamic lectures are addressed to large audiences.

13. You may include stories, incidents and common examples from day-to-day life to make the talk interesting.14.

If the speech is inherently serious, you may include a humorous incident, example or joke, to keep the audience engrossed and to break the monotony. But the joke should be relevant and not cheap.

15.

When appropriate, a few words in Urdu / Hindi (or in the local language) may be said to prevent monotony.

VI - <u>OTHER IMPORTANT TIPS:</u>

1.

Always bear in mind that your objective is to seek Allah's pleasure and to communicate the message of Islam.

2.

Never boast about yourself or your achievements. Be humble and polite.

3.

As a speaker, you should establish credibility. The audience should have faith and confidence in the speaker.

4.

Give the translation of each and every Qur'anic verse you quote as well as the one you quote at the beginning of the talk (the prayer at the beginning and conclusion of talk need not be translated).

5.

Provide maximum information in the shortest time possible by being to the point and brief.

VII - POINTS TO BE AVOIDED:

1.

If you forget any point, do not make it obvious by giving a long pause. Jump to the next point or say something relevant to the previous point, while trying to recollect what is forgotten. Always be prepared with fillers, for e.g. certain verses of the Qur'an like 16:125.

2.

Avoid using the same favourite repetitive words or sentences.

3.

Do not interject your speech with unnecessary phrases / fillers (eg. "I mean", "you know", "hope you understand", "and all ", etc.).

4.

Avoid slang words like "stuff", "guy", etc.

5.

Do not ever say, "I am sorry, I did not have time to prepare", "My speech will not be good", "I do not know much about the subject of the talk". Directly enter into the subject confidently and do your best.

6. Do not exceed the time alloted.

VIII - PRELIMINARY PREPARATION:

1.

Obtain a brief idea of the audience you are going to address:

a) the language they understand.b)

background of the majority of the expected audience.

c)

whether the audience consists of a group of specialists or professionals, or whether it is a heterogeneous group.

d)

the group to be addressed, is it hostile or friendly?

2.   Study the occasion & the reason for the talk:

IX -   PREPARATION OF THE MATTER OF THE SPEECH:

1.   Notes: Prepare notes of your complete speech well in advance.2.   Outline: Prepare a point-wise summary or a skeletal outline of your complete written talk for a final glance or revision.3.   Qur'anic Quotations: Note all the Qur'anic Verses to be quoted along with their translation on a seperate sheet for a final glance or revision.4.   Duration: (a) A short talk should be of a duration of 15 minutes to 30 minutes.(b) A long speech should not exceed 45 minutes.
(However, if the speaker is an expert orator and
can hold the attention and interest of the audience,
he may speak for about an hour).5.   Order: It is preferable to arrange the talk in a topic-wise order rather than chronological order unless required.6.   Continuity and Sequence: There should be continuity and sequence in the speech and it should flow smoothly from the begining to the

end.7.   Link: Link should be established between various points covered in the speech.

X -   RESEARCH:

1.   Do extensive reading and research for your talk. (You should have much more additional information and knowledge regarding the subject of the talk besides what you will be speaking).2.   Read as many books as possible (related to the subject of your talk) by various authors.3.   View as many video cassettes as possible (relevant to the subject) by various speakers.4.   Viewing video cassettes of international speakers will give you an idea of the style of speaking, presentation, matter, etc.5.   Whenever you use a quotation from any book or audio / video tape of any speaker, check its authenticity from the source as well as the authenticity of the source. Do not blindly repeat it without having checked its authenticity.6.   Whenever you repeat the logical and convincing example of any other speaker, either repeat it verbatim or change the example only if you can improve upon it, or if it has the same impact (without having any defects or loopholes).7.   Prepare yourself thoroughly for the question and answer session. The entire impact and credibility of a good speech delivered well is lost, if the speaker fumbles while answering questions, or gives long, incoherent and unconvincing replies.

XI -   REHEARSAL:

1. Practice makes you perfect.2. It gives you confidence.3. It gives you an opportunity to rectify your mistakes.4. You can time your speech.5. The more rehearsals and trials you give, the better will be your final speech delivery or presentation.6. It is preferable to have an experienced person sitting in the audience during the trial who can point out your mistakes. The last option is to give the trial in front of a mirror.7. If possible, do a video recording of the trial and also of the actual talk itself so that you yourself can judge and improve your speech in future. It can also be given to experts for evaluation.8. Check and practise the pronunciation of new and difficult words.

Usage of Audio-Visuals

I REASONS FOR USING AUDIO-VISUAL AIDS

1. People learn in many ways. Use of audio-visuals in conveying information enhances learning.2. People can grasp and retain more if verbal communication is supplemented with visuals. This helps to increase the impact of the presentation.3.(i) Visual aids are overhead transparencies (with the help of OHPs), 35 mm slides, and flip charts.(ii) Audio-Visual aids are films (videotapes or filmstrips), CD ROMs, slide / tape presentations.(iii) A slide is a transparent photographic film that is projected on a distant large screen.(iv) OHP transparencies are transparent plastic sheets that can be written on and projected on a large screen placed nearby.(v) Flip charts are large paper sheets that are placed on an easel, written on and turned over after use.

II AUDIO-VISUAL PRESENTATIONS

A. How to plan Audio-Visual Presentations:1. Plan the usage of audio-visual aids on the basis of different factors such as reliablity, cost effectiveness, profile of the audience, equipment and resources available and ease of use.2. Plan to prepare visuals for highlighting key ideas, vital information or important messages.3. Do not prepare a visual aid unless you are convinced that it is absolutely necessary and that it will add value to your presentation.4. Each visual aid should be clear and simple. Remember, one good visual is more effective than many dull ones.

B. How to design Audio-Visual aids:1. Text and graphics can both be used. It is preferable to use coloured pictures and designs instead of words wherever possible.2. Text on visual aids should be legible thirty-two feet from the screen. Each slide should not contain more than seven lines and each line should contain not more than six words. Maintain appropriate spacing between texts. Remember: less text is more effective than more text.3. Avoid using too many words, words with small font-size, words at all angles, and always use colours without compromising on visiblity.

C. Use of Audio-Visual aids during your presentations:1. While using slides make sure that your back and side do not face the audience frequently.2. It is very distracting if you leave visuals up on the screen for too long. Avoid this.3. It is not preferable to read your visuals to the audience.4. Don't depend too much on your presentation aids. The main attraction of your presentation should always be you and your message. These aids are only meant to supplement your presentation.5. Make sure that all equipment work. Cross-check the system till you are sure that it will not fail. Also ensure that you know how to handle the situation if any of the equipment fail to function.

III COMPARATIVE ADVANTAGES AND DISADVANTAGES OF SLIDES, OVERHEADS AND FLIP CHARTS

COMPARATIVE ADVANTAGES

OF SLIDES, OVERHEADS AND FLIP CHARTS	
Slides	*Slides are easy to carry or mail* *They can be used in both, rear or front projection systems* *Convenient for reproduction of photographs*
Overhead (Transparencies)	*Lights need not be dimmed* *You can maintain eye contact with the audience* *Overheads are easy and inexpensive to make* *Overhead projectors and transparencies are easy to use* *Your transparencies can be photocopied to make handouts* *A photocopy of the set of transparencies can be used by you during the course of you presentation* *You can continue discussion with the audience and yet show OHP transparencies*
Flip Charts	*They are inexpensive* *They provide spontaniety and flexibility during the presentation* *One can maintain normal room lighting and partial eye contact* *A group's entire work as recorded on the flipchart can later be typed out and given as handouts*
Slides	*Each updation needs to be done on a new slide* *It is at the cost of eye contact since room light must be dimmed* *Preparation of slides is highly time consuming* *It is difficult to conduct discussions with the*

	audience while showing the slides *Appropriate screens are required* *Slides are expensive to make in India* *Now obsolete with power point presentations on LCD projectors.*
Overhead (Transparencies)	*Tiltable screens are required* *Photographs' reproduction on transparencies is dull*
Flip Charts	*Flip charts cannot be used for large amounts of matter* *Complex preprinted or predrawn charts require much time for preparation* *Does not support eye contact since your back is towards the audience when you write on the Flip Chart* *Visibility is a major problem*

IV Checklist for Using Audio-visuals

(Slides, Overhead Transparencies, and Flip Charts)

ITEM	***YES***	***NO***
1. Accessories: *Please check if you have:*	________	________
- *adapters?*	________	________
- *extension cords?*	________	________
- *marker pens?*	________	________
- *additional bulbs for projectors?*	________	________
2. Equipment: *Please check if you have:*	________	________
- *obtained instructions on the use of equipment?*	________	________
- *found whether replacement of the equipment can be done quickly, if the need arises?*	________	________
- *arranged back-up equipment in the room?*	________	________
- *tested all equipment in advance?*	________	________

***3. Room Check:** Are you aware:*

- *where the light switches are?*
- *whether the curtains adequately block natural light?*
- *of the location of electrical outlets?*
- *whether the power cords are sufficiently long?*
- *if the power cords can be taped down to prevent tripping?*
- *where the nearest phone is?*
- *whom should you call for help?*

4. Physical Set-up and Layout:

- *Have you worked on the physical set-up in advance?*
- *Is the screen high enough for clear visiblity by all?*
- *Can they be seen from all corners of the auditorium including the farthest one?*
- *Will the beam not be disturbed or interrupted by viewers' heads?*
- *Are volume and balance levels marked with tape?*

5. Presentation Rehearsal:

- *Have you checked for the right ordering of the visuals?*
- *Are your visual aids right side up?*
- *Have you run through the program at least once?*

CONCEPT OF GOD IN ISLAM

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

INTRODUCTION

Islam is a Semitic religion, which has over one billion adherents all over the world. Islam means "submission to the will of God". Muslims accept the Qur'an, as the word of God revealed to His last and final prophet, Mohammed (peace be upon him). Islam states that Allah sent messengers and prophets throughout the ages with the message of Unity of God, and accountability in the Hereafter. Islam thus makes it an article of faith to believe in all the earlier prophets, starting with Adam, and continuing with Noah, Abraham, Ishmael, Isaac, Jacob, Moses, David, John and Jesus amongst many others (may peace be on them all).

The Most Concise Definition of God:

The most concise definition of God in Islam is given in the four verses of Surah Ikhlas which is Chapter 112 of the Qur'an:

"Say: He is Allah,
The One and Only.
"Allah, the Eternal, Absolute.
"He begets not, nor is He begotten.
And there is none like unto Him."
[Al-Qur'an 112:1-4]

The word '*Assamad*' is difficult to translate. It means 'absolute existence', which can be attributed only to Allah (swt), all other existence being temporal or conditional. It also means that Allah (swt) is not dependant on any person or thing, but all persons and things are dependant on Him.

Surah Ikhlas - the touchstone of theology:

Surah Ikhlas (Chapter 112) of the Glorious Qur'an, is the touchstone of theology. '*Theo*' in Greek means God and '*logy*' means study. Thus Theology means study of God and to Muslims this four line definition of Almighty God serves as the touchstone of the study of God. Any candidate to divinity must be subjected to this 'acid test'. Since the attributes of Allah given in this chapter are unique, false gods and pretenders to divinity can be easily dismissed using these verses.

What does Islam say about 'god-men'?

India is often called the land of 'god-men'. This is due to the abundance of so-called spiritual masters in India. Many of these 'babas' and 'saints' have a large following in many countries. Islam abhors deification of any human being. To understand the Islamic stand towards such pretenders to divinity, let us analyze one such 'god-man', Osho Rajneesh.

Let us put this candidate, 'Bhagwan' Rajneesh, to the test of Surah Ikhlas, the touchstone of theology:

i) The first criterion is "Say, He is Allah, one and only". Is Rajneesh one and only? No! Rajneesh was one among the multitude of 'spiritual teachers' produced by India. Some disciples of Rajneesh might still hold that Rajneesh is one and only.

ii) The second criterion is, 'Allah is absolute and eternal'. We know from Rajneesh's biography that he was suffering from diabetes, asthma, and chronic backache. He alleged that the U.S. Government gave him slow poison in prison. Imagine Almighty God being poisoned! Rajneesh was thus, neither absolute nor eternal.

iii) The third criterion is 'He begets not, nor is He begotten'. We know that Rajneesh was born in Jabalpur in India and had a mother as well as a father who later became his disciples.

In May 1981 he went to U.S.A. and established a town called 'Rajneeshpuram'. He later fell foul of the West and was finally arrested and asked to leave the country. He came back to India and started a commune in Pune which is now known as the 'Osho' commune. He died in 1990. The followers of Osho Rajneesh believe that he is Almighty God. At the 'Osho commune' in Pune one can find the following epitaph on his tombstone:

"Osho – never born, never died; only visited the planet Earth between 11th December 1931 to 19th January 1990."

They forget to mention that he was not granted visa for 21 countries of the world. Can a person ever imagine 'God' visiting the earth, and requiring a visa to enter a country! The Archbishop of Greece said that if Rajneesh had not been deported, they would have burnt his house and those of his disciples.

(iv) The fourth test, which is the most stringent is, "There is none like unto Him". The moment you can imagine or compare 'God' to anything, then he (the candidate to divinity) is not God. It is not possible to conjure up a mental picture of the One True God. We know that Rajneesh was a human being, having two eyes, two ears, a nose, a mouth and a white flowing beard. Photographs and posters of Rajneesh are available in plenty. The moment you can imagine or draw a mental picture of an entity, then that entity is not God.

Many are tempted to make anthropomorphic comparisons of God. Take for instance, Arnold Schwarzenegger, the famous body builder and Hollywood actor, who won the title of 'Mr. Universe', the strongest man in the world. Let us suppose that someone says that Almighty God is a thousand times stronger than Arnold Schwarzenegger. The moment you can compare any entity to God, whether the comparison is to Schwarzenegger or to King Kong, whether it is a thousand times or a million times stronger, it fails the Qur'anic criterion, "There is none like unto Him".

Thus, the 'acid test' cannot be passed by anyone except the One True God.

The following verse of the Glorious Qur'an conveys a similar message:

"No vision can grasp Him
But His grasp is over
All vision: He is
Above all comprehension,
Yet is acquainted with all things."
[Al-Qur'an 6:103]

By what name do we call God?

The Muslims prefer calling the Supreme Creator, Allah, instead of by the English word 'God'. The Arabic word, 'Allah', is pure and unique, unlike the English word 'God', which can be played around with.

If you add 's' to the word God, it becomes 'Gods', that is the plural of God. Allah is one and singular, there is no plural of Allah. If you add 'dess' to the word God, it becomes 'Goddess' that is a female God. There is nothing like male Allah or female Allah. Allah has no gender. If you add the word 'father' to 'God' it becomes 'God-father'. God-father means someone who is a guardian. There is no word like '*Allah-Abba*' or 'Allah-father'. If you add the word 'mother' to 'God', it becomes 'God-mother'. There is nothing like '*Allah-Ammi*', or 'Allah-mother' in Islam. Allah is a unique word. If you prefix tin before the word God, it becomes tin-God i.e., fake God. Allah is a unique word, which does not conjure up any mental picture nor can it be played around with. Therefore the Muslims prefer using the Arabic word 'Allah' for the Almighty. Sometimes, however, while speaking to the non-Muslims we may have to use the inappropriate word God, for Allah. Since the intended audience of this article is general in nature, consisting of both Muslims as well as non-Muslims, I have used the word God instead of Allah in several places in this article.

God does not become a human being:

God does not take human form:

Some may argue that God does not become a human being but only takes a human form. If God only takes a human form but does not become a human being, He should not possess any human qualities. We know that all the 'God-men', have human qualities and failings. They have all the human needs such as the need to eat, sleep, etc.

The worship of God in human form is therefore a logical fallacy and should be abhorred in all its forms and manifestations.

That is the reason why the Qur'an speaks against all forms of anthropomorphism. The Glorious Qur'an says in the following verse:

"There is nothing whatever like unto Him."
[Al-Qur'an 42:11]

God does not perform ungodly acts:

The attributes of Almighty God preclude any evil since God is the source of justice, mercy and truth. God can never be thought of as doing an ungodly act. Hence we cannot imagine God telling a lie, being unjust, making a mistake, forgetting things, or having any such human failings. Similarly God can do injustice if He chooses to, but He will never do it because being unjust is an ungodly act.

The Qur'an says:

"Allah is never unjust In the least degree."
[Al-Qur'an 4:40]

God can be unjust if He chooses to be so, but the moment God does injustice, He ceases to be God.

God does not make mistakes

God can make mistakes if He wants to, but He does not make mistakes because making a mistake is an ungodly act. The Qur'an says:

"…my Lord never errs."
[Holy Qur'an 20:52]

The moment God makes a mistake, he ceases to be God.

God does not forget

God can forget if He wants to. But God does not forget anything because forgetting is an ungodly act, which reeks of human limitations and failings. The Qur'an says:

"…my Lord never errs, nor forgets."
[Al-Qur'an 20:52]

God only performs Godly acts:

The Islamic concept of God is that God has power over all things. The Qur'an says in several places (Al -Qur'an 2:106; 2:109; 2:284; 3:29; 16:77; and 35:1):

"For verily Allah has power over all things"

Further, the Glorious Qur'an says:

"Allah is the doer of all that He intends."
[Al-Qur'an 85:16]

We must keep in mind that Allah intends only Godly acts and not ungodly acts.

PHILOSOPHY OF ANTHROPOMORPHISM

Many religions at some point believe, directly or indirectly, in the philosophy of anthropomorphism i.e. God becoming a human. Their contention is that Almighty God is so pure and holy that He is unaware of the hardships, shortcomings and feelings of human beings. In order to set the rules for human beings, He came down to earth as a human. This deceptive logic has fooled countless millions through the ages. Let us now analyze this argument and see if it stands to reason.

The Creator prepares the instruction manual:

Suppose I manufacture a video cassette recorder (VCR). Do I have to become a VCR to know what is good or what is bad for the VCR? What do I do? I write an instruction manual: "In order to watch a video cassette, insert the cassette and press the play button. In order to stop, press the stop button. If you want to fast forward press the FF button. Do not drop it from a height or it will get damaged. Do not immerse it in water or it will get spoilt". I write an instruction manual that lists the various do's and don'ts for the machine.

Holy Qur'an is the instruction manual for the human being:

Similarly, our Lord and Creator Allah (swt) need not take human form to know what is good or bad for the human being. He chooses to reveal the instruction manual. The last and final instruction manual of the human beings is the Glorious Qur'an. The 'dos' and 'don'ts' for the human beings are mentioned in the Qur'an.

If you allow me to compare human beings with machines, I would say humans are more complicated than the most complex machines in the world. Even the most advanced computers, which are extremely complex, are pale in comparison to the myriad physical, psychological, genetic and social factors that affect individual and collective human life.

The more advanced the machine, greater is the need for its instruction manual. By the same logic, don't human beings require an instruction manual by which to govern their own lives?

Allah chooses Messengers:

Allah (swt) need not come down personally for giving the instruction manual. He chooses a man amongst men to deliver the message and communicates with him at a higher level through the medium of revelations. Such chosen men are called messengers and prophets of God.

Some people are 'blind' and 'deaf':

Despite the absurdity of the philosophy of anthropomorphism, followers of many religions believe in and preach it to others. Is it not an insult to human intelligence and to the Creator who gave us this intelligence? Such people are truly 'deaf' and 'blind' despite the faculty of hearing and sight given to them by Allah. The Qur'an says:

"Deaf, dumb, and blind,
They will not return (to the path)."
[Al-Qur'an 2:18]

The Bible gives a similar message in the Gospel of Matthew:

"Seeing they see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand."
[The Bible, Matthew 13:13]

A similar message is also given in the Hindu Scriptures in the Rigveda.

"There may be someone who sees the words and yet indeed does not see them; may be another one who hears these words but indeed does not hear them." 1
[Rigveda 10:71:4]

All these scriptures are telling their readers that though the things are made so clear yet many people divert away from the truth.

Attributes of God:

To Allah belong the most beautiful names:

The Qur'an says:

"Say: Call upon Allah, or
Call upon Rahman:

By whatever name you call
Upon Him, (it is well):
For to Him belong
The Most Beautiful Names."
[Al-Qur'an 17:110]

A similar message regarding the beautiful names of Allah (swt) is repeated in the Qur'an in Surah Al-A'raf (7:180), in Surah Taha (20:8) and in Surah Al-Hashr (59:24).

The Qur'an gives no less than ninety-nine different attributes to Almighty Allah. The Qur'an refers to Allah as *Ar-Rahman* (Most Gracious), Ar-Raheem (Most Merciful) and *Al-Hakeem* (All Wise) among many other names. You can call Allah by any name but that name should be beautiful and should not conjure up a mental picture.

Each attribute of God is unique and possessed by Him alone:

Not only does God possess unique attributes, but also each attribute of Almighty God is sufficient to identify Him. I shall clarify this point in detail. Let us take an example of a famous personality, say Neil Armstrong. Neil Armstrong is an astronaut. The attribute of being an astronaut possessed by Neil Armstrong is correct but not unique to Neil Armstrong alone. So when one asks, who is an astronaut? The answer is, there are hundreds of people in the world who are astronauts. Neil Armstrong is an American. The attribute of being American possessed by Neil Armstrong is correct but not sufficient to identify him. So when one asks, who is an American? The answer is, there are millions of people who are American. To identify the person uniquely we must look for a unique attribute possessed by none except that person. For example, Neil Armstrong was the first human to set foot on the moon. So when one asks, who was the first man to set foot on the moon, the answer is only one, i.e. Neil Armstrong. Similarly the attribute of Almighty God should be unique. If I say God is the constructor of buildings, it is possible and true, but it is not unique. Thousands of people can construct a building. But each attribute of Allah is unique and points to none but Allah. For example, God is the creator of the universe. If someone asks who is the creator of the universe, the answer is only one, i.e. Almighty God is the Ultimate Creator. Similarly, following are some of the many unique attributes possessed by none other than the Creator of the universe, Almighty Allah:

"*Ar-Raheem*", the Most Merciful
"*Ar-Rahman*", the Most Gracious
"*Al-Hakeem*", the Most Wise

So when one asks, "Who is '*Ar-Raheem'*, (the Most Merciful)?", there can only be one answer: "Almighty Allah".

One attribute of God should not contradict with other attributes:

Besides the attribute being unique, it should not contradict other attributes. To continue with the earlier example, suppose somebody says that Neil Armstrong is an American astronaut who was the first human to set foot on the moon and was an Indian. The attribute possessed by Neil Armstrong of being the first man to set foot on the moon, is correct. But its associated quality of being an Indian, is false. Similarly if someone says that God is the Creator of the Universe and has one head, two hands, two feet, etc., the attribute (Creator of the Universe) is correct but the associated quality (in the form of human being) is wrong and false.

All attributes should point to the one and same God:

Since there is only one God, all the attributes should point to one and the same God. To say that

Neil Armstrong was an American astronaut who first set foot on the moon, but he was born in 1971 is wrong. Both these unique qualities belong to one and the same person, i.e. Neil Armstrong. Similarly to say that the Creator of the universe is one God and the Cherisher is another God is absurd because God possesses all these attributes combined together.

Unity of God:

Some polytheists argue by saying that the existence of more than one God is not illogical. Let us point out to them that if there were more than one God, they would dispute with one another, each god trying to fulfill his will against the will of the other gods. This can be seen in the mythology of the polytheistic and pantheistic religions. If a 'God' is defeated or unable to defeat the others, he is surely not the one true God. Also popular among polytheistic religions is the idea of many Gods, each having different responsibilities. Each one would be responsible for a part of man's existence e.g. a Sun-God, a Rain-God, etc. This indicates that one 'God' is incompetent of certain acts and moreover he is also ignorant of the other Gods' powers, duties, functions and responsibilities. There cannot be an ignorant and incapable God. If there were more than one God it would surely lead to confusion, disorder, chaos and destruction in the universe. But the universe is in complete harmony. The Glorious Qur'an says:

"If there were, in the heavens
And the earth, other gods
Besides Allah, there would
Have been confusion in both!
But glory to Allah,
The Lord of the Throne:
(High is He) above
What they attribute to Him!"
[Al-Qur'an 21:22]

If there were more than one God, they would have taken away what they created. The Qur'an says:

"No son did Allah beget,
Nor is there any god
Along with Him: (if there were
Many gods), behold, each god
Would have taken away
What he had created,
And some would have
Lorded it over others!
Glory to Allah! (He is free)
From the (sort of) things
They attribute to Him!"
[Al-Qur'an 23:91]

Thus the existence of one True, Unique, Supreme, Almighty God, is the only logical concept of God.

TAWHEED:

Definition and Categories:

Islam believes in '*Tawheed*' which is not merely monotheism i.e. belief in one God, but much more. *Tawheed* literally means 'unification' i.e. 'asserting oneness' and is derived from the Arabic

verb '*Wahhada*' which means to unite, unify or consolidate.

Tawheed can be divided into three categories.

1. *Tawheed ar-Ruboobeeyah*
2. *Tawheed al-Asmaa-was-Sifaat*
3. Tawheed al-Ibaadah.

A. *Tawheed ar-Ruboobeeyah* (maintaining the unity of Lordship)

The first category is '*Tawheed ar-Ruboobeeyah'*. '*Ruboobeeyah'* is derived from the root verb "*Rabb*" meaning Lord, Sustainer and Cherisher.

Therefore '*Tawheed-ar-Ruboobeeyah*' means maintaining the unity of Lordship. This category is based on the fundamental concept that Allah (swt) alone caused all things to exist when there was nothing. He created or originated all that exists out of nothing. He alone is the sole Creator, Cherisher, and Sustainer of the complete universe and all between it, without any need from it or for it.

B. *Tawheed al-Asmaa was-Sifaat* (maintaining the unity of Allah's name and attributes):

The second category is '*Tawheed al Asmaa* was *Sifaat'* which means maintaining the unity of Allah's name and attributes. This category is divided into five aspects:

(i) Allah should be referred to as described by Him and His Prophet

Allah must be referred to according to the manner in which He and His prophet have described Him without explaining His names and attributes by giving them meanings other than their obvious meanings.

(ii) Allah must be referred to as He has referred to Himself

Allah must be referred to without giving Him any new names or attributes. For example Allah may not be given the name *Al-Ghaadib* (the Angry One), despite the fact that He has said that He gets angry, because neither Allah nor His messenger have used this name.

(iii) Allah is referred to without giving Him the attributes of His creation

In a reference to God, we should strictly abstain from giving Him the attributes of those whom He has created. For instance in the Bible, God is portrayed as repenting for His bad thoughts in the same way as humans do when they realise their errors. This is completely against the principle of Tawheed. God does not commit any mistakes or errors and therefore never needs to repent.

The key principle when dealing with Allah's attributes is given in the Qur'an in Surah Ash-Shura:

"There is nothing
Whatever like unto Him,
And He is the One
That hears and sees (all things)."

[Al-Qur'an 42:11]

Hearing and seeing are human faculties. However, when attributed to the Divine Being they are without comparison, in their perfection, unlike when associated with humans who require ears, eyes, etc. and who are limited in their sight and hearing in terms of space, time, capacity, etc.

(iv) God's creation should not be given any of His attributes

To refer to a human with the attribute of God is also against the principle of *Tawheed*. For example, referring to a person as one who has no beginning or end (eternal).

(v) Allah's name cannot be given to His creatures

Some Divine names in the indefinite form, like '*Raoof*' or '*Raheem*' are permissible names for men as Allah has used them for Prophets; but '*Ar-Raoof*' (the Most Pious) and *Ar-Raheem* (the most Merciful) can only be used if prefixed by '*Abd*' meaning 'slave of' or 'servant of' i.e. '*Abdur-Raoof*' or '*Abdur-Raheem*'. Similarly '*Abdur-Rasool*' (slave of the Messenger) or '*Abdun-Nabee*' (slave of the Prophet) are forbidden.

C. *Tawheed al-Ibaadah* (maintaining the unity of worship):

(i) Definition and meaning of '*Ibadaah*':

'*Tawheed al-Ibaadah*' means maintaining the unity of worship or '*Ibaadah*'. *Ibaadah* is derived from Arabic word '*Abd*' meaning slave or servant. Thus *Ibaadah* means servitude and worship.

(ii) All three categories to be followed simultaneously.

Only believing in the first two categories of *Tawheed* without implementing *Tawheed-al-Ibaadah* is useless. The Qur'an gives the examples of '*Mushrikeens*' (idolaters) of the Prophet's time who confirmed the first two aspects of *Tawheed*. It is mentioned in the Qur'an:

"Say: 'Who is it that
Sustains you (in life)
From the sky and from the earth?
Or who is it that
Has power over hearing
And sight? And who
Is it that brings out
The living from the dead
And the dead from the living?
And who is it that
Rules and regulates all affairs?'
They will soon say, 'Allah'.
Say, 'Will you not then
Show piety (to Him)?' "
[Al-Qur'an 10:31]

A similar example is repeated in Surah Zukhruf of the Glorious Qur'an:

"If thou ask them, Who
Created them, they will
Certainly say, 'Allah': how
Then are they deluded
Away (from the Truth)?"
[Al-Qur'an 43:87]

The pagan Meccans knew that Allah (swt) was their Creator, Sustainer, Lord and Master. Yet they were not Muslims because they also worshipped other gods besides Allah. Allah (swt) categorised them as '*Kuffaar*' (disbelievers) and '*Mushrikeen*' (idol worshippers and those who associate partners with God).

"And most of them
Believe not in Allah
Without associating (others
As partners) with Him!"
[Al-Qur'an 12:106]

Thus '*Tawheed al-Ibaadah*' i.e. maintaining the unity of worship is the most important aspect of *Tawheed*. Allah (swt) alone deserves worship and He alone can grant benefit to man for his worship.

***SHIRK*:**

A. Definition: The omission of any of the above mentioned categories of tawheed or deficiency in the fulfillment of any criteria of Tawheed is referred to as 'shirk'.(Please note that the Arabic word 'Shirk' has the same sound as in the English word 'ship' and not as in the English word 'shirk',which means 'to evade'

'Shirk' literally means sharing or associating partners. In Islamic terms it means associating partners with Allah and is equivalent to idolatry.

B. Shirk is the greatest sin that Allah will never forgive:

The Qur'an describes the greatest sin in Surah Al-Nisa':

"Allah forgives not
That partners should be set up
With Him; but He forgives
Anything else, to whom
He pleases; to set up
Partners with Allah
Is to devise a sin
Most heinous indeed."
[Al-Qur'an 4:48]

The same message is repeated in Surah Al-Nisa':

"Allah forgives not
(The sin of) joining other gods
With Him; but He forgives
Whom He pleases other sins
Than this: one who joins

Other gods with Allah,
Has strayed far, far away
(From the Right)."
[Al-Qur'an 4:116]

C. ***Shirk* leads to hell fire:**

The Qur'an says in Surah Ma'idah:

"They do blaspheme who say:
'Allah is Christ the son
Of Mary.' But said Christ:
'O Children of Israel! Worship Allah, my Lord
And your Lord'. Whoever joins other gods with Allah –
Allah will forbid him the Garden, and the Fire
Will be his abode. There will for the wrongdoers
Be no one to help."
[Al-Qur'an 5:72]

D. **Worship and Obedience to none but Allah:**

The Qur'an mentions in Surah Ali-'Imran:

Say: "O people of the Book!
Come To common terms
As between us and you:
That we worship none but Allah;
That we associate no partners with Him;
That we erect not, from among ourselves,
Lords and patrons other than Allah."
If then they turn back,
Say ye: "Bear witness that we (at least)
Are Muslims (bowing to Allah's Will)."
[Al-Qur'an 3:64]

The Glorious Qur'an says:

"And if all the trees on earth were pens
And the Ocean (were ink), with seven Oceans behind it
To add to its (supply), yet would not the Words
Of Allah be exhausted (In the writing): for Allah
Is Exalted in power, Full of Wisdom."
[Al-Qur'an 31:27]

Our analysis of Concept of God in various Religion shows that monotheism is an integral part of every major religion of the world. However, it is unfortunate that some adherents of these religions violate the teachings of their own scriptures and have set up partners to Almighty God.

An analysis of the scriptures of various religions, reveals that all scriptures exhort mankind to believe in, and submit to One God. All these scriptures condemn the association of partners to God, or the worship of God in the form of images. The Glorious Qur'an says:

"O men! Here is
A parable set forth!
Listen to it! Those
On whom, besides Allah,
You call, cannot create
(Even) a fly, if they all
Met together for the purpose!
And if the fly should snatch
Away anything from them,
They would have no power
To release it from the fly.
Feeble are those who petition
And those whom they petition!"
[Al-Qur'an 22:73]

The basis of religion is the acceptance of Divine guidance. A rejection of this guidance has serious implications for society. While we have made great strides in science and technology, true peace still eludes us. All 'isms' have failed to provide the much vaunted deliverance.

The scriptures of all major religions exhort mankind to follow that which is good and eschew that which is evil. All scriptures remind mankind that good will not go unrewarded and evil will not go unpunished!

The question we need to address is, which of these scriptures provides us with the correct 'instruction manual' that we need to regulate our individual and collective lives?

I hope and pray that Allah guides all of us towards the Truth (Aameen).

Techniques of Handling
The Question and Answer Session

RULES AND REGULATIONS OF THE QUESTION AND ANSWER SESSION

To be Announced by the Chairman:

"To derive more benefit for all present here today, in the limited time available, we would like the following guidelines or rules to be observed during the Question and Answer Session:

1.
Questions asked should be on the topic only. Questions not relevant to the topic will not be entertained.
2.
Kindly state your question briefly and to the point. This is a Question and Answer time and not a Lecture or a Debate time.
3.
Only one question at a time may be asked. For your 2nd question you will have to go at the back of the row again, and await your 2nd chance for questioning.
4.
3 Mikes have been provided for the questions from the audience: 2 for the Gents next to the stage on the right and left sides, and 1 at the back for the Ladies. Please stand in a queue at one of the mikes if you wish to put a question to the speaker, and speak into the mike only when the mike is handed to you by the mike handling assistants.
5.

We will allow one question on each of the mikes in clockwise rotation.

6.
Written questions on slips of paper, which are available from our volunteers in the sides, would be given second preference after the open questions on the mikes are answered by the speaker.
7.
In the interest of not having any time wasted on irrelevant issues, and to ensure a more educative and an interesting Question & Answer Session, our decision to allow or disallow irrelevant questions will be final.
8.
In the interest of getting a proper and clear answer from the speaker, kindly state your name and profession before putting forth your question.

STRUCTURE AND CONTENT
WHILE ANSWERING A QUESTION IN PUBLIC

I INTRODUCTION OF THE ANSWER:

1.
While the question is being asked, pay careful attention to each and every word of the question.
2.
Repeat the question in brief mentioning only the important points.
3.
If a question contains two different questions or sub-questions, mention at the outset, that the brother has asked two questions or that the brother's question contains two or three parts.
4.
Advantages of repeating the questions are:(i)It helps the audience to understand the question better.(ii)If the speaker has misunderstood the question, the questioner can correct him.(iii)During video recording, it enables the questions to be recorded clearly.(iv)If you are not prepared with the answer, it gives you time to think and formulate the contents of the answer, and their sequence.
5.
Advantages of repeating the questions are:(i)Brother has asked a Good Question.(ii)Brother has asked an Important Question.(iii)Brother has asked a Relevant Question.(iv)Brother has asked a Tricky Question.(v)

Brother has asked a Common Question.

(vi)Brother has asked an Unusual Question.
6.
Mention the relevance of the question, if any, to the occasion of the talk, present situation, surrounding, etc.
7.
If the questioner prolongs his question, after it is clear to you, by giving unnecessary details and background which are not required, then politely interrupt the questioner by saying:(i)Brother, I have understood your question.(ii)Brother, the question is clear to me since I am in the field of Da'wah.
8.
If the questioner gives a short speech or makes several irrelevant comments without asking a question, then politely interrupt by saying:(i)Brother, could you please pose your question?(ii)Brother, could you please be precise and to the point?"
9.
If the question is not related to the topic (unless it is an open question and answer session) comment by saying: "I am sorry brother, the question is not relevant to the topic under discussion but…"(i)

"…you are most welcome to have it clarified on Sunday morning at IRF during the open question and answer session (or refer him to an appropriate source)."

(ii)"…however you can refer to my video cassette on the topic… (or any other video cassette of another speaker) for the answer to your question."
10.
If the question is on '*fiqh'* or '*masaail*' or if it is a controversial question, ask the questioner to go to a *Maulana* or an expert in that field. You may quote Al-Qur'an 16:43 or 21:7.
11.
If the question is related to the topic, and you do not know the answer, reply in a humble manner by saying:(i)"I am sorry, I do not know the answer, but Inshallah, I will refer and let you

know."(ii)Refer him to the appropriate person by saying, "Shaikh _____________ will do better justice in replying the question".

II BODY OF THE ANSWER:

Answer the question by covering all the following four aspects if possible or as many as possible.
1.
Islamic viewpoint(i)Quote with reference the relevant Qur'anic verse, if any.(ii)Quote with reference the relevant authentic hadith, if any.(iii)Commentary and explanation of the Qur'anic verse or hadith quoted.(iv)View of an expert, scholar or any knowledgeable person in the Islamic field, related to the topic.
2.
Comparative Religion(i)Quote the portions of scriptures of other religions (e.g. Bible, Veda, Upanishad, Geeta, etc.) related to the answer.(ii)Commentary and explanation of the verses of the religious scripture quoted.(iii)View of an expert or a scholar of the respective religion, if beneficial.
3.
Reason and Logic(i)Explain the answer with the help of reason and logic.(ii)Give logical examples to prove your point.(iii)Give simple examples related to day to day living e.g. school life, household examples, etc.(iv)Use universally accepted facts to prove your point e.g. 2 + 2 = 4, the world is spherical, etc.(v)Give statistics to support the answer, mentioning its source.(vi)Quote articles to support your answer from reputed newspapers, magazines, etc.(vii)Give references from authentic and famous books to support your answer.(viii)Quote scholars, historians and experts in the field, related to the answer.
4.
Scientific Viewpoint(i)Mention established scientific facts, if any, to support your answer.(ii)Give medical reasons, if any, to support your answer.(iii)Give references from medical journals and books, if any, to support your answer.(iv)Quote the viewpoint of any Scientist or Doctor, if any, to support your answer.

III CONCLUSION

Use any one or two of the following:(i)

Give a hitting example.

(ii)

Ask a rhetoric question.

(iii)

Give a quotation with reference of a relevant Qur'anic verse.

(iv) The last sentence should be emphatic: hitting with a punch line.(v) Whenever there is room for discussion in the answer, or if the contents of the answer are not clearly mentioned in the Qur'an or in authentic Ahadith, then conclude your answer by saying, "*Wallaahu-A'alam*" (And Allah knows best).

IV IMPORTANT POINTS WHILE ANSWERING:

1.
Follow all the important points of the structure and content of Islamic lectures.
2.

The answer should not contradict any of your other answers.

3.
If the question contains an argument or example to prove the Islamic viewpoint wrong, then either (i) Agree with the questioner's reasoning of the argument or example and give another example to turn the table over and use the same reasoning to prove the Islamic view point, or (ii) Prove the questioner's reasoning of the argument or example wrong by giving another argument or example.
4.
Do not let the question and answer session run into a discussion or a debate. If required, ask the questioner to meet you after the programme.
5.
Non-Muslims should be given preference to ask questions.
6.
Notes should never be carried for a question and answer session.
7.
The same Qur'anic verse can be utilized in answering several questions.
8.
Follow the guidelines of Surah Nahl chapter 16 verse 125 while answering the questions.

V PREPARATION FOR QUESTION AND ANSWER SESSION:

1.
View all the video cassettes of various Islamic orators dealing with the topic on which you have to speak. (Talk plus question and answer session).
2.
Prepare a list of all the possible questions that can be asked on the topic, including the questions asked to various other speakers while they gave the talk on the same topic and categorise the list into very important, important and other questions.
3.
Prepare the answer to each and every question.
4.

Memorise all the answers.

5.
Portions of your talks on other topics can be utilized in answers, if relevant.

6.
Memorisation of talks on various topics along with the answers helps you in handling a variety of questions.
7.

Note all the verses of the Qur'an dealing with the topic.

8.

Note as many authentic hadith as possible dealing with the topic.

PUBLIC SPEAKING TECHNIQUES WHILE ANSWERING QUESTIONS:

I IMPORTANT POINTS

1. Follow all the techniques of public speaking.

2.

Answer very confidently.

3.

Answer very loudly.

4. Look more at the questioner while answering, but do not neglect the others.5. If someone contradicts any of your statements but you are positive about your homework and statistics, please don't get shaken up.6. Do not allow the answers to be interrupted by frequent, unwanted comments.7. Always keep your mind open and alert while answering.

II POINTS TO BE AVOIDED

1. Do not get irritated with the questioner.2.

Do not get angry, and always remain cool and calm.

3. Do not beat around the bush and answer precisely to the point.4.

Do not give false and wrong information.

5.

Do not confuse yourself while answering.

6.

Do not become blank.

7.

Do not fumble.

8.

Do not look tense.

9.

Do not become nervous.

III UNUSUAL CIRCUMSTANCES

1.

Questioner is provocative and violent:

(i)If the questioner is provocative and violent, do not get angry. Maintain your cool and calmness by answering humbly.(ii)The more violent and provocative the questioner is, the more humble, calm and soft should your approach be while answering.(iii)Try to have the maximum contrast between the attitude of the questioner and yourself while answering, to win over the questioner and the audience.(iv)Note and answer all his points with logic and reason.
2.

Questioner's intention is to play mischief:

(i)Note and answer all his points with logic and reason.(ii)

Do not get irritated.

(iii)If required try and expose his intention to the audience by giving an appropriate example.
3.

Questioner tries to insult and put down the speaker:

(i)

Do not feel offended.

(ii)

Do not get nervous or tense.

(iii)

Answer very firmly and confidently.

(iv)If required you may raise your voice and answer loudly but do not loose your temper.(v)Answer loudly to be effective but not out of anger or in retaliation.(vi)

Ask rhetoric questions to the questioner, to substantiate his claim.

(vii)Give information or statistics to prove his point wrong.
4.

Questioner interrupts the Answer:

It may happen that the questioner interrupts the answer and makes some comments or remarks before the answer is complete. In such a situation:(i)If his intention seems to be good and it is a genuine interruption, be patient and complete the answer and include the clarification he requires.(ii)If the interruption is not required and he poses a sub-question, politely ask him to be patient and say, "I was about to cover the answer to this sub-question and I request you to be patient till I complete my reply".(iii)If the questioner often interrupts and disturbs, then say that you gave him a fair hearing while he was posing the question and it is his duty to give you a fair hearing while you are answering. (If the chairman is well-versed, then he too can ask the questioner not to interrupt you).
5.

If the Questioner argues with the speaker:

(i)Politely but firmly reply that this is a question and answer session and not a discussion or a debate session.(ii)Say, "This is my view regarding the question, if you like it then *Alhamdulillah,* you may agree with it. If you don’t, no one forces you to follow it blindly. And Allah knows best".(iii)Say, "If you have any additional question, you are most welcome to go at the back of the queue and await your next chance to ask your next question."

METHODOLOGY OF REPLYING QUESTIONS

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

ADDITIONAL PUBLIC SPEAKING TECHNIQUES WHILE ANSWERING QUESTIONS:

1. Follow all the techniques of public speaking.2. Answer very confidently.3. Answer loudly.4. Don't confuse yourself while answering.5. Look more at the questioner while answering, but do not neglect the others.6. If someone contradicts any of your statements but you are positive about your homework and statistics, please don't get shaken up.7. Do not allow the answers to be interrupted by frequent, unwanted comments.8. Always keep your mind open and alert while answering.

STRUCTURE AND CONTENT WHILE ANSWERING A QUESTION IN PUBLIC

I INTRODUCTION OF THE ANSWER:

1.

While the question is being asked, pay careful attention to each and every word of the question.
2.
Repeat the question in brief mentioning only the important points.
3.

If a question contains two different questions or sub-questions, mention at the outset, that, the brother has asked two questions or the brother's question contains two or three parts.

4.

Advantages of repeating the questions are:

(i)It helps the audience to understand the question better.(ii)If the speaker has misunderstood the question, the questioner can correct him.(iii)During video recording, it enables the question to be recorded clearly.(iv)If you are not prepared with the answer, it gives you time to think and formulate the contents of the answer, and their sequence.
5.

Appreciate or comment on the question, if required:

(i)The brother has asked a good question.(ii)The brother has asked an important question.(iii)The brother has asked a relevant question.(iv)The brother has asked a tricky question.(v)The brother has asked a common question.
6.
Mention the relevance of the question, if any, to the occasion of the talk, present situation, surrounding, etc.
7.

If the questioner prolongs his question after it is clear to you, by giving unnecessary details and background that are not required, then politely interrupt the questioner by saying:

(i)Brother, I have understood your question.(ii)Brother, the question is clear to me since I am in the field of Da'wah.
8.
If the questioner gives a short speech or makes several irrelevant comments without asking a question, then politely interrupt by saying:(i)Brother, could you please pose your question?(ii)Brother, could you please be precise and to the point?
9.
If the question is not related to the topic (unless it is an open question and answer session) comment by saying: "I am sorry brother, the question is not relevant to the topic under discussion but…"(i)"…you are most welcome to have it clarified on Sunday morning at IRF during the open question and answer session (or refer him to an appropriate source)."(ii)"…however you can refer to my video cassette on the topic… (or any other video cassette of any other speaker) for the answer to your question".
10.
If the question is on 'fiqh' or 'masael' or if it is a controversial question, ask the questioner to go to an Alim or an expert in that field. You may quote Al-Qur'an 16:43 or 21:7.
11.
If the question is related to the topic, and you do not know the answer, reply in a humble manner by saying:(i)"I am sorry, I do not know the answer, but Inshallah, I will refer and let you know."(ii)Refer him to the appropriate person by saying, "Shaikh _______ will do better justice in replying the question".

II <u>BODY OF THE ANSWER:</u>

1.
Islamic viewpoint.

Answer the question covering all the following four aspects if possible or as many as possible:

(i)Quote with reference the relevant Qur'anic verse, if any.(ii)Quote with reference the relevant authentic hadith, if any.(iii)Commentary and explanation of the Qur'anic verse or hadith

quoted.(iv)View of an expert, scholar or any knowledgeable person in the Islamic field, related to the topic.
2.

Comparative Religion.

(i)Quote the portions of the scriptures of other religions (e.g. Bible, Veda, Upanishad, Geeta, etc.) related to the answer.(ii)Commentary and explanation of the verses of the religious scripture quoted.(iii)View of an expert or a scholar of the respective religion, if beneficial.
3.
Reason and Logic.(i)Explain the answer with the help of reason and logic.(ii)Give logical examples to prove your point.(iii)Give simple examples related to day to day living e.g. school life, household examples, etc.(iv)Use universally accepted facts to prove your point eg. 2 + 2 = 4, the world is spherical, etc.(v)

Give statistics to support the answer, mentioning its source.

(vi)Quote articles to support your answer from reputed newspapers, magazines, etc.(vii)Give references from authentic and famous books to support your answer.(viii)Quote scholars, historians and experts in the field, related to the answer.
4.

Scientific Viewpoint.

(i)Mention established scientific fact, if any, to support your answer.(ii)Give medical reasons, if any, to support your answer.(iii)Give references from medical journals and books, if any, to support your answer.(iv)Quote the viewpoint of Scientists or Doctors, if any, to support your answer.

III CONCLUSION

(i)Give a hitting example.(ii)Ask a rhetoric question.(iii)Give a quotation with reference of a relevant Qur'anic verse.(iv)The last sentence should be emphatic: hitting with a punch line.

IV IMPORTANT POINTS WHILE ANSWERING:

1.

Follow all the important points of the structure and content of Islamic lectures.

2.

The answer should not contradict any of your other answers.

3. If a person gives an illogical argument to prove his point, agree with him for the sake of argument and prove him wrong by applying the same illogical argument in his context.4. Do not let the question and answer session run into a discussion or a debate. If required, ask the questioner to meet you after the programme.5.

Non-Muslims should be given preference in asking questions.

6.

Notes should never be carried for a question and answer session.

7.

The same Qur'anic verse can be utilized in answering several questions.

8. Follow the guidelines of Surah Nahl chapter 16 verse 125 while answering questions.

V PREPARATION FOR QUESTION AND ANSWER SESSION:

1. View all the video cassettes of various Islamic orators dealing with the topic on which you have to speak. (Talk plus question and answer session).2. Prepare a list of all the possible questions that can be asked on the topic, including the questions asked to various other speakers while they gave the talk on the same topic and categorise the list into very important, important and other questions.3. Prepare the answer to each and every question.4. Memorise all the answers.5. Portions of your talks on other topics can be utilized in answers, if relevant.6. Memorisation of talks on various topics along with the answers helps you in handling the question and answer session.7. Note all the verses of the Qur'an dealing with the topic.8. Note as many authentic hadith as possible dealing with the topic.

<u>Most Common Questions asked by Non-Muslims</u>

INTRODUCTION

<u>*Da'wah* is a duty</u>

Most Muslims know that Islam is a universal religion, meant for all mankind. Allah (swt) is the Lord of the entire Universe, and Muslims have been entrusted with the duty of conveying His message to all mankind. Alas, most Muslims today have become callous towards this duty! While accepting Islam as the best way of life for ourselves, most of us are unwilling to share this knowledge with those to whom the message has not yet been conveyed.

The Arabic word *Da'wah* means a call or an invitation. In Islamic context, it means to strive for the propagation of Islam.

The Glorious Qur'an says:

"Ah! Who is more unjust than those who conceal the testimony they have from Allah?
But Allah is not unmindful of what ye do!"
[Al-Qur'an 2:140]

<u>Twenty Most Common Questions</u>

In order to convey the message of Islam, dialogue and debate become inevitable. The Glorious Qur'an says:

"Invite (all) to the way of thy Lord, with wisdom and beautiful preaching, and argue with them in ways that are best and most gracious!"
[Al-Qur'an 16:125]

In conveying the message of Islam to a non-Muslim, it is usually not sufficient to highlight only the positive nature of Islam. Most non-Muslims are not convinced about the truth of Islam because there are a few questions about Islam at the back of their minds that remain unanswered.

They may agree with your contentions about the positive nature of Islam. But, in the same breath, they will say - "Ah! But you are the same Muslims who marry more than one woman. You are the same people who subjugate women by keeping them behind the veil. You are fundamentalists, etc."

I personally prefer asking the non-Muslim upfront, what he feels is wrong in Islam. With their limited knowledge, whether right or wrong, from whichever source it may be, I prefer asking directly, what they feel is wrong in Islam. I encourage them to be very frank and open and convince them that I can take criticism about Islam.

In the past few years of my *da'wah* experience, I have realized that there are barely twenty most common questions that a common non-Muslim has regarding Islam. Whenever you ask a non-Muslim, "what do you feel is wrong in Islam?", he poses five or six questions, and these questions invariably fall among the twenty most common questions.

Logical replies can convince the majority

The twenty most common questions about Islam can be answered with reason and logic. A majority of non-Muslims can be convinced with these answers. If a Muslim memorizes or simply remembers these answers, *Inshallah* he will be successful, if not in convincing non-Muslims about the complete truth of Islam, then at least in removing misconceptions about Islam and neutralizing the negative thinking about Islam and Muslims that the non-Muslims have. A very few non-Muslims may have counter arguments to these replies, for which further information may be required.

Misconceptions due to media

The common misconceptions about Islam arise in the minds of a majority of non-Muslims, because they are constantly being bombarded with misinformation about Islam. International media is mainly controlled by the western world, whether it is international satellite channels, radio stations, news papers, magazines or books. Recently the Internet has become a powerful medium of information. Though it is not controlled by anybody, one finds a large amount of virulent propaganda about Islam on the Internet. Of course, Muslims too are utilizing this tool to portray the right image of Islam and Muslims, but they are far behind as compared to the propaganda against Islam. I hope the efforts by the Muslims will increase and continue to be pursued.

Misconceptions change with time

The most common questions about Islam are different in different periods and eras. This set of twenty most common questions is based on present times. Decades earlier, the set of questions was different and decades later too, the set of questions may change depending upon how Islam is projected by the media.

Misconceptions are the same throughout the world

I have interacted with people in different parts of the world and have found these twenty most common questions about Islam to be the same everywhere. There may be a couple of additional questions depending upon the locale, the surrounding or culture. For instance in America, the additional common question is - "Why does Islam prohibit taking and giving of interest?"

I have included among these twenty most common questions, certain questions more common among the Indian non-Muslims. For instance, "why do Muslims have non-vegetarian food?" The reason for including such questions is that people of Indian origin are spread throughout the world and constitute about 20% i.e. 1/5th of the world population. Thus, their questions become common questions asked by non-Muslims throughout the world.

Misconceptions of non-Muslims who have studied Islam

There are many non-Muslims who have studied Islam. Most of them have only read books on Islam written by biased critics of Islam. These non-Muslims have an additional set of twenty common misconceptions about Islam. For instance, they claim to have found contradictions in the

Qur’an, they contend that the Qur’an is unscientific, etc. There is another set of additional replies clearing these twenty misconceptions among non-Muslims who have studied Islam from distorted sources. I have also given the replies to twenty additional less common questions among the non-Muslims.

1.

POLYGAMY

Question:

Why is a man allowed to have more than one wife in Islam? i.e. why is polygamy allowed in Islam?

Answer:

1.
Definition of Polygamy Polygamy means a system of marriage whereby one person has more than one spouse. Polygamy can be of two types. One is polygyny where a man marries more than one woman, and the other is polyandry, where a woman marries more than one man. In Islam, limited polygyny is permitted; whereas polyandry is completely prohibited.

Now coming to the original question, why is a man allowed to have more than one wife?
2.
The Qur’an is the only religious scripture in the world that says,"marry only one".

The Qur’an is the only religious book, on the face of this earth, that contains the phrase ‘marry only one’. There is no other religious book that instructs men to have only one wife. In none of the other religious scriptures, whether it be the Vedas, the Ramayan, the Mahabharat, the Geeta, the Talmud or the Bible does one find a restriction on the number of wives. According to these scriptures one can marry as many as one wishes. It was only later, that the Hindu priests and the Christian Church restricted the number of wives to one.

Many Hindu religious personalities, according to their scriptures, had multiple wives. King Dashrat, the father of Rama, had more than one wife. Krishna had several wives.

In earlier times, Christian men were permitted as many wives as they wished, since the Bible puts no restriction on the number of wives. It was only a few centuries ago that the Church restricted the number of wives to one.

Polygyny is permitted in Judaism. According to Talmudic law, Abraham had three wives, and Solomon had hundreds of wives. The practice of polygyny continued till Rabbi Gershom ben Yehudah (95% C.E to 1030 C.E) issued an edict against it. The Jewish Sephardic communities living in Muslim countries continued the practice till as late as 1950, until an Act of the Chief Rabbinate of Israel extended the ban on marrying more than one wife.

3.
Hindus are more polygynous than Muslims

The report of the 'Committee of The Status of Woman in Islam', published in 1975 mentioned on page numbers 66 and 67 that the percentage of polygamous marriages between the years 1951 and 1961 was 5.06% among the Hindus and only 4.31% among the Muslims. According to Indian law only Muslim men are permitted to have more than one wife. It is illegal for any non-Muslim in India to have more than one wife. Despite it being illegal, Hindus have more multiple wives as compared to Muslims. Earlier, there was no restriction even on Hindu men with respect to the number of wives allowed. It was only in 1954, when the Hindu Marriage Act was passed that it became illegal for a Hindu to have more than one wife. At present it is the Indian Law that restricts a Hindu man from having more than one wife and not the Hindu scriptures.

Let us now analyse why Islam allows a man to have more than one wife.

4.
Qur'an permits limited polygyny

As I mentioned earlier, Qur'an is the only religious book on the face of the earth that says 'marry only one'. The context of this phrase is the following verse from Surah Nisa of the Glorious Qur'an:

"Marry women of your choice, two, or three, or four; but if ye fear that ye shall not be able to deal justly (with them), then only one."

[Al-Qur'an 4:3]

Before the Qur'an was revealed, there was no upper limit for polygyny and many men had scores of wives, some even hundreds. Islam put an upper limit of four wives. Islam gives a man permission to marry two, three or four women, only on the condition that he deals justly with them.

In the same chapter i.e. Surah Nisa verse 129 says:

"Ye are never able to be fair and just as between women...."

[Al-Qur'an 4:129]

Therefore polygyny is not a rule but an exception. Many people are under the misconception that it is compulsory for a Muslim man to have more than one wife.

Broadly, Islam has five categories of Do's and Don'ts:

i. '*Fard'* i.e. compulsory or obligatory
ii. '*Mustahab*' i.e. recommended or encouraged
iii. '*Mubah*' i.e. permissible or allowed
iv. '*Makruh*' i.e. not recommended or discouraged
v. '*Haraam*' i.e. prohibited or forbidden

Polygyny falls in the middle category of things that are permissible. It cannot be said that a Muslim who has two, three or four wives is a better Muslim as compared to a Muslim who has only one wife.

5.

Average life span of females is more than that of males

By nature males and females are born in approximately the same ratio. A female child has more immunity than a male child. A female child can fight the germs and diseases better than the male child. For this reason, during the pediatric age itself there are more deaths among males as compared to the females.

During wars, there are more men killed as compared to women. More men die due to accidents and diseases than women. The average life span of females is more than that of males, and at any given time one finds more widows in the world than widowers.

6.

India has more male population than female due to female foeticide and infanticide

India is one of the few countries, along with the other neighbouring countries, in which the female population is less than the male population. The reason lies in the high rate of female infanticide in India, and the fact that more than one million female foetuses are aborted every year in this country, after they are identified as females. If this evil practice is stopped, then India too will have more females as compared to males.

7.

World female population is more than male population

In the USA, women outnumber men by 7.8 million. New York alone has one million more females as compared to the number of males, and of the male population of New York one-third are gays i.e sodomites. The U.S.A as a whole has more than twenty-five million gays. This means that these people do not wish to marry women. Great Britain has four million more females as compared to males. Germany has five million more females as compared to males. Russia has nine million more females than males. God alone knows how many million more females there are in the whole world as compared to males.

8.

Restricting each and every man to have only one wife is not practical

Even if every man got married to one woman, there would still be more than thirty million females in U.S.A who would not be able to get husbands (considering that America has twenty five million gays). There would be more than four million females in Great Britain, 5 million females in Germany and nine million females in Russia alone who would not be able to find a husband.

Suppose my sister happens to be one of the unmarried women living in USA, or suppose your sister happens to be one of the unmarried women in USA. The only two options remaining for her

are that she either marries a man who already has a wife or becomes public property. There is no other option. All those who are modest will opt for the first.

In Western society, it is common for a man to have mistresses and/or multiple extra-marital affairs, in which case, the woman leads a disgraceful, unprotected life. The same society, however, cannot accept a man having more than one wife, in which women retain their honourable, dignified position in society and lead a protected life.

Thus the only two options before a woman who cannot find a husband is to marry a married man or to become public property. Islam prefers giving women the honourable position by permitting the first option and disallowing the second.

There are several other reasons, why Islam has permitted limited polygyny, but it is mainly to protect the modesty of women.

2.

POLYANDRY

Question:

If a man is allowed to have more than one wife, then why does Islam prohibit a woman from having more than one husband?

Answer:

A lot of people, including some Muslims, question the logic of allowing Muslim men to have more than one spouse while denying the same 'right' to women.

Let me first state emphatically, that the foundation of an Islamic society is justice and equity. Allah has created men and women as equal, but with different capabilities and different responsibilities. Men and women are different, physiologically and psychologically. Their roles and responsibilities are different. Men and women are equal in Islam, but not identical.

Surah Nisa' Chapter 4 verses 22 to 24 gives the list of women with who you can not marry and it is further mentions in Surah Nisa' Chapter 4 verse 24 "Also (prohibited are) women already married"

The following points enumerate the reasons why polyandry is prohibited in Islam:

1.
If a man has more than one wife, the parents of the children born of such marriages can easily be identified. The father as well as the mother can easily be identified. In case of a woman marrying more than one husband, only the mother of the children born of such marriages will be identified and not the father. Islam gives tremendous importance to the identification of both parents, mother and father. Psychologists tell us that children who do not know their parents, especially their father undergo severe mental trauma and disturbances. Often they have an unhappy childhood. It is for this reason that the children of prostitutes do not have a healthy childhood. If a child born of such wedlock is admitted in school, and when the mother is asked the name of the

father, she would have to give two or more names! I am aware that recent advances in science have made it possible for both the mother and father to be identified with the help of genetic testing. Thus this point which was applicable for the past may not be applicable for the present.
2.
Man is more polygamous by nature as compared to a woman.
3.
Biologically, it is easier for a man to perform his duties as a husband despite having several wives. A woman, in a similar position, having several husbands, will not find it possible to perform her duties as a wife. A woman undergoes several psychological and behavioral changes due to different phases of the menstrual cycle.
4.
A woman who has more than one husband will have several sexual partners at the same time and has a high chance of acquiring venereal or sexually transmitted diseases which can also be transmitted back to her husband even if all of them have no extra-marital sex. This is not the case in a man having more than one wife, and none of them having extra-marital sex.
The above reasons are those that one can easily identify. There are probably many more reasons why Allah, in His Infinite Wisdom, has prohibited polyandry.

3.

HIJAAB FOR WOMEN

Question:

Why does Islam degrade women by keeping them behind the veil?

Answer:

The status of women in Islam is often the target of attacks in the secular media. The '*hijaab'* or the Islamic dress is cited by many as an example of the 'subjugation' of women under Islamic law. Before we analyze the reasoning behind the religiously mandated '*hijaab*', let us first study the status of women in societies before the advent of Islam

1.

In the past women were degraded and used as objects of lust

The following examples from history amply illustrate the fact that the status of women in earlier civilizations was very low to the extent that they were denied basic human dignity:

1. Babylonian Civilization:
   The women were degraded and were denied all rights under the Babylonian law. If a man murdered a woman, instead of him being punished, his wife was put to death.
2. Greek Civilization:
   Greek Civilization is considered the most glorious of all ancient civilizations. Under this very 'glorious' system, women were deprived of all rights and were looked down upon. In Greek mythology, an 'imaginary woman' called 'Pandora' is the root cause of misfortune of human beings. The Greeks considered women to be subhuman and inferior to men.

Though chastity of women was precious, and women were held in high esteem, the Greeks were later overwhelmed by ego and sexual perversions. Prostitution became a regular practice amongst all classes of Greek society.

3. Roman Civilization:
   When Roman Civilization was at the zenith of its 'glory', a man even had the right to take the life of his wife. Prostitution and nudity were common amongst the Romans.
4. Egyptian Civilization:
   The Egyptian considered women evil and as a sign of a devil.
5. Pre-Islamic Arabia:
   Before Islam spread in Arabia, the Arabs looked down upon women and very often when a female child was born, she was buried alive.

2.

Islam uplifted women and gave them equality and expects them to maintain their status.

Islam uplifted the status of women and granted them their just rights 1400 years ago. Islam expects women to maintain their status.

***Hijaab* for men**

People usually only discuss '*hijaab*' in the context of women. However, in the Glorious Qur'an, Allah (swt) first mentions '*hijaab*' for men before '*hijaab*' for the women. The Qur'an mentions in Surah Noor:

"Say to the believing men that they should lower their gaze and guard their modesty: that will make for greater purity for them: and Allah is well acquainted with all that they do."
[Al-Qur'an 24:30]

The moment a man looks at a woman and if any brazen or unashamed thought comes to his mind, he should lower his gaze.

***Hijaab* for women.**

The next verse of Surah Noor, says:

" And say to the believing women that they should lower their gaze and guard their modesty; that they should not display their beauty and ornaments except what (must ordinarily) appear thereof; that they should draw veils over their bosoms and not display their beauty except to their husbands, their fathers, their husbands' fathers, their sons..."
[Al-Qur'an 24:31]

3.
Six criteria for *Hijaab*.

According to Qur'an and Sunnah there are basically six criteria for observing *hijaab*:

1. Extent:

The first criterion is the extent of the body that should be covered. This is different for men and women. The extent of covering obligatory on the male is to cover the body at least from the navel to the knees. For women, the extent of covering obligatory is to cover the complete body except the face and the hands upto the wrist. If they wish to, they can cover even these parts of the body. Some scholars of Islam insist that the face and the hands are part of the obligatory extent of '*hijaab*'.

All the remaining five criteria are the same for men and women.

2. The clothes worn should be loose and should not reveal the figure.
3. The clothes worn should not be transparent such that one can see through them.
4. The clothes worn should not be so glamorous as to attract the opposite sex.
5. The clothes worn should not resemble that of the opposite sex.
6. The clothes worn should not resemble that of the unbelievers i.e. they should not wear clothes that are specifically identities or symbols of the unbelievers' religions.

4.

<u>*Hijaab* includes conduct and behaviour among other things</u>

Complete '*hijaab*', besides the six criteria of clothing, also includes the moral conduct, behaviour, attitude and intention of the individual. A person only fulfilling the criteria of '*hijaab*' of the clothes is observing '*hijaab*' in a limited sense. '*Hijaab*' of the clothes should be accompanied by '*hijaab'* of the eyes, '*hijaab*' of the heart, '*hijaab*' of thought and '*hijaab*' of intention. It also includes the way a person walks, the way a person talks, the way he behaves, etc.

5.

<u>*Hijaab* prevents molestation</u>

The reason why *Hijaab* is prescribed for women is mentioned in the Qur'an in the following verses of Surah Al-Ahzab:

"O Prophet! Tell thy wives and daughters, and the believing women that they should cast their outer garments over their persons (when abroad); that is most convenient, that they should be known (as such) and not molested. And Allah is Oft-Forgiving, Most Merciful."
[Al-Qur'an 33:59]

The Qur'an says that *Hijaab* has been prescribed for the women so that they are recognized as modest women and this will also prevent them from being molested.

6.

<u>Example of twin sisters</u>

Suppose two sisters who are twins, and who are equally beautiful, walk down the street. One of them is attired in the Islamic *hijaab* i.e. the complete body is covered, except for the face and the hands up to the wrists. The other sister is wearing western clothes, a mini skirt or shorts. Just around the corner there is a hooligan or ruffian who is waiting for a catch, to tease a girl. Whom will he tease? The girl wearing the Islamic *Hijaab* or the girl wearing the skirt or the mini? Naturally he will tease the girl wearing the skirt or the mini. Such dresses are an indirect invitation

to the opposite sex for teasing and molestation. The Qur'an rightly says that *hijaab* prevents women from being molested.

7.

Capital punishment for the rapists

Under the Islamic *shariah*, a man convicted of having raped a woman, is given capital punishment. Many are astonished at this 'harsh' sentence. Some even say that Islam is a ruthless, barbaric religion! I have asked a simple question to hundreds of non-Muslim men. Suppose, God forbid, someone rapes your wife, your mother or your sister. You are made the judge and the rapist is brought in front of you. What punishment would you give him? All of them said they would put him to death. Some went to the extent of saying they would torture him to death. To them I ask, if someone rapes your wife or your mother you want to put him to death. But if the same crime is committed on somebody else's wife or daughter you say capital punishment is barbaric. Why should there be double standards?

8.

Western society falsely claims to have uplifted women

Western talk of women's liberalization is nothing but a disguised form of exploitation of her body, degradation of her soul, and deprivation of her honour. Western society claims to have 'uplifted' women. On the contrary it has actually degraded them to the status of concubines, mistresses and society butterflies who are mere tools in the hands of pleasure seekers and sex marketeers, hidden behind the colourful screen of 'art' and 'culture'.

9.

USA has one of the highest rates of rape

United States of America is supposed to be one of the most advanced countries of the world. It also has one of the highest rates of rape in any country in the world. According to a FBI report, in the year 1990, every day on an average 1756 cases of rape were committed in U.S.A alone. Later another report said that on an average everyday 1900 cases of rapes are committed in USA. The year was not mentioned. May be it was 1992 or 1993. May be the Americans got 'bolder' in the following years.

Consider a scenario where the Islamic *hijaab* is followed in America. Whenever a man looks at a woman and any brazen or unashamed thought comes to his mind, he lowers his gaze. Every woman wears the Islamic *hijaab*, that is the complete body is covered except the face and the hands upto the wrist. After this if any man commits rape he is given capital punishment. I ask you, in such a scenario, will the rate of rape in America increase, will it remain the same, or will it decrease?

10.

Implementation of Islamic *Shariah* will reduce the rate of rapesNaturally as soon as Islamic *Shariah* is implemented positive results will be inevitable. If Islamic *Shariah* is implemented in any part of the world, whether it is America or Europe, society will breathe easier. *Hijaab* does not degrade a woman but uplifts a woman and protects her modesty and chastity.

4.

WAS ISLAM SPREAD BY THE SWORD?

Question:

How can Islam be called the religion of peace when it was spread by the sword?

Answer:

It is a common complaint among some non-Muslims that Islam would not have millions of adherents all over the world, if it had not been spread by the use of force. The following points will make it clear, that far from being spread by the sword, it was the inherent force of truth, reason and logic that was responsible for the rapid spread of Islam.

1.

Islam means peace.

Islam comes from the root word '*salaam*', which means peace. It also means submitting one's will to Allah (swt). Thus Islam is a religion of peace, which is acquired by submitting one's will to the will of the Supreme Creator, Allah (swt).

2.

Sometimes force has to be used to maintain peace. Each and every human being in this world is not in favour of maintaining peace and harmony. There are many, who would disrupt it for their own vested interests. Sometimes force has to be used to maintain peace. It is precisely for this reason that we have the police who use force against criminals and anti-social elements to maintain peace in the country. Islam promotes peace. At the same time, Islam exhorts it followers to fight where there is oppression. The fight against oppression may, at times, require the use of force. In Islam force can only be used to promote peace and justice.

3.

Opinion of historian De Lacy O'Leary.

The best reply to the misconception that Islam was spread by the sword is given by the noted historian De Lacy O'Leary in the book "Islam at the cross road" (Page 8):

"History makes it clear however, that the legend of fanatical Muslims sweeping through the world and forcing Islam at the point of the sword upon conquered races is one of the most fantastically absurd myth that historians have ever repeated."

4.

Muslims ruled Spain for 800 years. Muslims ruled Spain for about 800 years. The Muslims in Spain never used the sword to force the people to convert. Later the Christian Crusaders came to Spain and wiped out the Muslims. There was not a single Muslim in Spain who could openly give the adhan, that is the call for prayers.

5.

14 million Arabs are Coptic Christians. Muslims were the lords of Arabia for 1400 years. For a few years the British ruled, and for a few years the French ruled. Overall, the Muslims ruled Arabia for 1400 years. Yet today, there are 14 million Arabs who are Coptic Christians i.e.

Christians since generations. If the Muslims had used the sword there would not have been a single Arab who would have remained a Christian.

6.

More than 80% non-Muslims in India. The Muslims ruled India for about a thousand years. If they wanted, they had the power of converting each and every non-Muslim of India to Islam. Today more than 80% of the population of India are non-Muslims. All these non-Muslim Indians are bearing witness today that Islam was not spread by the sword.

7.

Indonesia and Malaysia. Indonesia is a country that has the maximum number of Muslims in the world. The majority of people in Malaysia are Muslims. May one ask, "Which Muslim army went to Indonesia and Malaysia?"

8.

East Coast of Africa. Similarly, Islam has spread rapidly on the East Coast of Africa. One may again ask, if Islam was spread by the sword, "Which Muslim army went to the East Coast of Africa?"

9.

Thomas Carlyle. The famous historian, Thomas Carlyle, in his book "Heroes and Hero worship", refers to this misconception about the spread of Islam: "The sword indeed, but where will you get your sword? Every new opinion, at its starting is precisely in a minority of one. In one man's head alone. There it dwells as yet. One man alone of the whole world believes it, there is one man against all men. That he takes a sword and try to propagate with that, will do little for him. You must get your sword! On the whole, a thing will propagate itself as it can."

10.

No compulsion in religion.

With which sword was Islam spread? Even if Muslims had it they could not use it to spread Islam because the Qur'an says in the following verse:

"Let there be no compulsion in religion:
Truth stands out clear from error"
[Al-Qur'an 2:256]

11.

Sword of the Intellect.

It is the sword of intellect. The sword that conquers the hearts and minds of people. The Qur'an says in Surah Nahl, chapter 16 verse 125:

"Invite (all) to the way of thy Lord
with wisdom and beautiful preaching;
and argue with them in ways that are
best and most gracious."
[Al-Qur'an 16:125]

12.

Increase in the world religions from 1934 to 1984. An article in Reader's Digest 'Almanac', year book 1986, gave the statistics of the increase of percentage of the major religions of the world in half a century from 1934 to 1984. This article also appeared in 'The Plain Truth' magazine. At the top was Islam, which increased by 235%, and Christianity had increased only by 47%. May one ask, which war took place in this century which converted millions of people to Islam?

13.

Islam is the fastest growing religion in America and Europe. Today the fastest growing religion in America is Islam. The fastest growing religion in Europe in Islam. Which sword is

forcing people in the West to accept Islam in such large numbers?
14.
Dr. Joseph Adam Pearson. Dr. Joseph Adam Pearson rightly says, "People who worry that nuclear weaponry will one day fall in the hands of the Arabs, fail to realize that the Islamic bomb has been dropped already, it fell the day MUHAMMED (pbuh) was born".

5.

MUSLIMS ARE FUNDAMENTALISTS AND TERRORISTS

Question:

Why are most of the Muslims fundamentalists and terrorists?

Answer:

This question is often hurled at Muslims, either directly or indirectly, during any discussion on religion or world affairs. Muslim stereotypes are perpetuated in every form of the media accompanied by gross misinformation about Islam and Muslims. In fact, such misinformation and false propaganda often leads to discrimination and acts of violence against Muslims. A case in point is the anti-Muslim campaign in the American media following the Oklahoma bomb blast, where the press was quick to declare a 'Middle Eastern conspiracy' behind the attack. The culprit was later identified as a soldier from the American Armed Forces.

Let us analyze this allegation of 'fundamentalism' and 'terrorism':

1.

Definition of the word 'fundamentalist'

A fundamentalist is a person who follows and adheres to the fundamentals of the doctrine or theory he is following. For a person to be a good doctor, he should know, follow, and practise the fundamentals of medicine. In other words, he should be a fundamentalist in the field of medicine. For a person to be a good mathematician, he should know, follow and practise the fundamentals of mathematics. He should be a fundamentalist in the field of mathematics. For a person to be a good scientist, he should know, follow and practise the fundamentals of science. He should be a fundamentalist in the field of science.
2.

Not all 'fundamentalists' are the same

One cannot paint all fundamentalists with the same brush. One cannot categorize all fundamentalists as either good or bad. Such a categorization of any fund amentalist will depend upon the field or activity in which he is a fundamentalist. A fundamentalist robber or thief causes harm to society and is therefore undesirable. A fundamentalist doctor, on the other hand, benefits

society and earns much respect.

3.

I am proud to be a Muslim fundamentalist

I am a fundamentalist Muslim who, by the grace of Allah, knows, follows and strives to practise the fundamentals of Islam. A true Muslim does not shy away from being a fundamentalist. I am proud to be a fundamentalist Muslim because, I know that the fundamentals of Islam are beneficial to humanity and the whole world. There is not a single fundamental of Islam that causes harm or is against the interests of the human race as a whole. Many people harbour misconceptions about Islam and consider several teachings of Islam to be unfair or improper. This is due to insufficient and incorrect knowledge of Islam. If one critically analyzes the teachings of Islam with an open mind, one cannot escape the fact that Islam is full of benefits both at the individual and collective levels.

4.

Dictionary meaning of the word 'fundamentalist'

According to Webster's dictionary 'fundamentalism' was a movement in American Protestanism that arose in the earlier part of the 20th century. It was a reaction to modernism, and stressed the infallibility of the Bible, not only in matters of faith and morals but also as a literal historical record. It stressed on belief in the Bible as the literal word of God. Thus fundamentalism was a word initially used for a group of Christians who believed that the Bible was the verbatim word of God without any errors and mistakes.

According to the Oxford dictionary 'fundamentalism' means 'strict maintenance of ancient or fundamental doctrines of any religion, especially Islam'.

Today the moment a person uses the word fundamentalist he thinks of a Muslim who is a terrorist.

5.

Every Muslim should be a terrorist

Every Muslim should be a terrorist. A terrorist is a person who causes terror. The moment a robber sees a policeman he is terrified. A policeman is a terrorist for the robber. Similarly every Muslim should be a terrorist for the antisocial elements of society, such as thieves, dacoits and rapists. Whenever such an anti-social element sees a Muslim, he should be terrified. It is true that the word 'terrorist' is generally used for a person who causes terror among the common people. But a true Muslim should only be a terrorist to selective people i.e. anti-social elements, and not to the common innocent people. In fact a Muslim should be a source of peace for innocent people.

6.

Different labels given to the same individual for the same action, i.e. 'terrorist' and 'patriot'

Before India achieved independence from British rule, some freedom fighters of India who did not subscribe to non-violence were labeled as terrorists by the British government. The same individuals have been lauded by Indians for the same activities and hailed as 'patriots'. Thus two different labels have been given to the same people for the same set of actions. One is calling him a terrorist while the other is calling him a patriot. Those who believed that Britain had a right to rule over India called these people terrorists, while those who were of the view that Britain had no right to rule India called them patriots and freedom fighters.

It is therefore important that before a person is judged, he is given a fair hearing. Both sides of the argument should be heard, the situation should be analyzed, and the reason and the intention of the person should be taken into account, and then the person can be judged accordingly.

7.
Islam means peace

Islam is derived from the word '*salaam*' which means peace. It is a religion of peace whose fundamentals teach its followers to maintain and promote peace throughout the world.

Thus every Muslim should be a fundamentalist i.e. he should follow the fundamentals of the Religion of Peace: Islam. He should be a terrorist only towards the antisocial elements in order to promote peace and justice in the society.

6.

EATING NON-VEGETARIAN FOOD

Question:

Killing an animal is a ruthless act. Why then do Muslims consume non-vegetarian food?

Answer:

'Vegetarianism' is now a movement the world over. Many even associate it with animal rights. Indeed, a large number of people consider the consumption of meat and other non-vegetarian products to be a violation of animal rights.

Islam enjoins mercy and compassion for all living creatures. At the same time Islam maintains that Allah has created the earth and its wondrous flora and fauna for the benefit of mankind. It is upto mankind to use every resource in this world judiciously, as a*niyamat* (Divine blessing) and *amanat* (trust) from Allah.

Let us look at various other aspects of this argument.

1.

A Muslim can be a pure vegetarian

A Muslim can be a very good Muslim despite being a pure vegetarian. It is not compulsory for a Muslim to have non-vegetarian food.

2.

Qur'an permits Muslims to have non-vegetarian food

The Qur'an, however permits a Muslim to have non-vegetarian food. The following Qur'anic verses are proof of this fact:

"O ye who believe! Fulfil (all) obligations. Lawful unto you (for food) are all four-footed animals with the exceptions named."
[Al-Qur'an 5:1]

"And cattle He has created for you (men): from them Ye derive warmth, and numerous benefits, And of their (meat) ye eat."
[Al-Qur'an 16:5]

"And in cattle (too) ye have an instructive example: From within their bodies We produce (milk) for you to drink; there are, in them, (besides), numerous (other) benefits for you; and of their (meat) ye eat."
[Al-Qur'an 23:21]

3.

Meat is nutritious and rich in complete protein Non-vegetarian food is a good source of excellent protein. It contains biologically complete protein i.e. all the 8 essential amino acid that are not synthesized by the body and should be supplied in the diet. Meat also contains iron, vitamin B1 and niacin.

4.

Humans have Omnivorous set of teeth

If you observe the teeth of herbivorous animals like the cow, goat and sheep, you will find something strikingly similar in all of them. All these animals have a set of flat teeth i.e. suited for herbivorous diet. If you observe the set of teeth of the carnivorous animals like the lion, tiger, or leopard, they all have a set of pointed teeth i.e. suited for a carnivorous diet. If you analyze the set of teeth of humans, you find that they have flat teeth as well as pointed teeth. Thus they have teeth suited for both herbivorous as well as carnivorous food i.e. they are omnivorous. One may ask, if Almighty God wanted humans to have only vegetables, why did He provide us also with pointed teeth? It is logical that He expected us to need and to have both vegetarian as well as non-vegetarian food.

5.

Human beings can digest both vegetarian and non-vegetarian food

The digestive system of herbivorous animals can digest only vegetables. The digestive system of carnivorous animals can digest only meat. But the digestive system of humans can digest both vegetarian and non-vegetarian food. If Almighty God wanted us to have only vegetables then why did He give us a digestive system that can digest both vegetarian as well as non-vegetarian food?

6.

Hindu scriptures give permission to have non-vegetarian food

a. There are many Hindus who are strictly vegetarian. They think it is against their religion to consume non-vegetarian food. But the true fact is that the Hindu scriptures permit a person to have meat. The scriptures mention Hindu sages and saints consuming non-vegetarian food.

b. It is mentioned in Manu Smruti, the law book of Hindus, in chapter 5 verse 30

"The eater who eats the flesh of those to be eaten does nothing bad, even if he does it day after day, for God himself created some to be eaten and some to be eater."

c. Again next verse of Manu Smruti, that is, chapter 5 verse 31 says

"Eating meat is right for the sacrifice, this is traditionally known as a rule of the gods."

d. Further in Manu Smruti chapter 5 verse 39 and 40 says

"God himself created sacrificial animals for sacrifice, ..., therefore killing in a sacrifice is not killing."

e. Mahabharata Anushashan Parva chapter 88 narrates the discussion between Dharmaraj Yudhishthira and Pitamah Bhishma about what food one should offer to*Pitris* (ancestors) during the *Shraddha* (ceremony of dead) to keep them satisfied. Paragraph reads as follows:

"Yudhishthira said, "O thou of great puissance, tell me what that object is which, if dedicated to the *Pitiris* (dead ancestors), become inexhaustible! What *Havi*, again, (if offered) lasts for all time? What, indeed, is that which (if presented) becomes eternal?"

"Bhishma said, "Listen to me, O Yudhishthira, what those *Havis* are which persons conversant with the rituals of the *Shraddha* (the ceremony of dead) regard as suitable in view of *Shraddha* and what the fruits are that attach to each. With sesame seeds and rice and barely and *Masha* and water and roots and fruits, if given at *Shraddhas*, the *pitris*, O king, remain gratified for the period of a month. With fishes offered at *Shraddhas*, the *pitris* remain gratified for a period of two months. With the mutton they remain gratified for three months and with the hare for four months, with the flesh of the goat for five months, with the bacon (meat of pig) for six months, and with the flesh of birds for seven. With venison obtained from those deer that are called *Prishata*, they remain gratified for eight months, and with that obtained from the *Ruru* for nine months, and with the meat of *Gavaya*for ten months, With the meat of the bufffalo their gratification lasts for eleven months. With beef presented at the *Shraddha*, their gratification, it is said , lasts for a full year. *Payasa* mixed with *ghee* is as much acceptable to the *pitris* as beef. With the meat of Vadhrinasa (a large bull) the gratification of *pitris* lasts for twelve years. The flesh of rhinoceros, offered to the *pitris* on anniversaries of the lunar days on which they died, becomes inexhaustible. The potherb called*Kalaska*, the petals of *kanchana* flower, and meat of (red) goat also, thus offered, prove inexhaustible.

So but natural if you want to keep your ancestors satisfied forever, you should serve them the meat of red goat.

7.

Hinduism was influenced by other religions

Though Hindu Scriptures permit its followers to have non-vegetarian food, many Hindus adopted the vegetarian system because they were influenced by other religions like Jainism.

8.

Even plants have life

Certain religions have adopted pure vegetarianism as a dietary law because they are totally against the killing of living creatures. If a person can survive without killing any living creature, I would be the first person to adopt such a way of life. In the past people thought plants were lifeless. Today it is a universal fact that even plants have life. Thus their logic of not killing living creatures is not fulfilled even by being a pure vegetarian.

9.

Even plants can feel pain

They further argue that plants cannot feel pain, therefore killing a plant is a lesser crime as compared to killing an animal. Today science tells us that even plants can feel pain. But the cry of the plant cannot be heard by the human being. This is due to the inability of the human ear to hear sounds that are not in the audible range i.e. 20 Hertz to 20,000 Hertz. Anything below and above this range cannot be heard by a human being. A dog can hear up to 40,000 Hertz. Thus there are silent dog whistles that have a frequency of more than 20,000 Hertz and less than 40,000 Hertz. These whistles are only heard by dogs and not by human beings. The dog recognizes the masters whistle and comes to the master. There was research done by a farmer in U.S.A. who invented an instrument which converted the cry of the plant so that it could be heard by human beings. He was able to realize immediately when the plant itself cried for water. Latest researches show that the plants can even feel happy and sad. It can also cry.

10.

Killing a living creature with two senses less is not a lesser crime

Once a vegetarian argued his case by saying that plants only have two or three senses while the animals have five senses.

Therefore killing a plant is a lesser crime than killing an animal. Suppose your brother is born deaf and dumb and has two senses less as compared to other human beings. He becomes mature and someone murders him. Would you ask the judge to give the murderer a lesser punishment because your brother has two senses less? In fact you would say that he has killed a *masoom*, an innocent person, and the judge should give the murderer a greater punishment.

In fact the Qur’an says:

"O ye people! Eat of what is on earth, lawful and good"
[Al-Qur’an 2:168]

11.

Over population of cattle

If every human being was a vegetarian, it would lead to overpopulation of cattle in the world, since their reproduction and multiplication is very swift. Allah (swt) in His Divine Wisdom knows how to maintain the balance of His creation appropriately. No wonder He has permitted us to have the meat of the cattle.

12.

Cost of meat is reasonable since all aren’t non-vegetarians

I do not mind if some people are pure vegetarians. However they should not condemn non-vegetarians as ruthless. In fact if all Indians become non-vegetarians then the present non-vegetarians would be losers since the prices of meat would rise.

7.

ISLAMIC METHOD OF SLAUGHTERING ANIMALS APPEARS RUTHLESS

Question:

Why do Muslims slaughter the animal in a ruthless manner by torturing it and slowly and painfully killing it?

Answer:

The Islamic method of slaughtering animals, known as *Zabiha* has been the object of much criticism from a large number of people.

Before I reply to the question, let me relate an incidence about a discussion between a Sikh and a Muslim regarding animal slaughter.

Once a Sikh asked a Muslim, "Why do you slaughter the animal painfully by cutting the throat instead of the way we do with one stroke i.e. *jhatka*?" The Muslim replied "We are brave and courageous and attack from the front. We are *marad ka baccha* (macho men), you are cowards and attack from behind".

Jokes apart, one may consider the following points, which prove that the *Zabiha* method is not only humane but also scientifically the best:

1.

Islamic method of slaughtering animal

Zakkaytum is a verb derived from the root word *Zakah* (to purify). Its infinitive is *Tazkiyah*which means purification. The Islamic mode of slaughtering an animal requires the following conditions to be met:

a.

Animal should be slaughtered with sharp object (knife)

The animal has to be slaughtered with a sharp object (knife) and in a fast way so that the pain of slaughter is minimised.

b.

Cut wind pipe, throat and vessels of neck

Zabiha is an Arabic word which means 'slaughtered'. The 'slaughtering' is to be done by cutting the throat, windpipe and the blood vessels in the neck causing the animal's death without cutting the spinal cord.

c.

Blood should be drained

The blood has to be drained completely before the head is removed. The purpose is to drain out most of the blood which would serve as a good culture medium for micro organisms. The spinal cord must not be cut because the nerve fibres to the heart could be damaged during the process causing cardiac arrest, stagnating the blood in the blood vessels.

2.

Blood is a good medium for germs and bacteria Blood is a good media of germs, bacteria, toxins, etc. Therefore the Muslim way of slaughtering is more hygienic as most of the blood containing germs, bacteria, toxins, etc. that are the cause of several diseases are eliminated.

3.

Meat remains fresh for a longer time Meat slaughtered by Islamic way remains fresh for a longer time due to deficiency of blood in the meat as compared to other methods of slaughtering.

4.

Animal does not feel pain

The swift cutting of vessels of the neck disconnects the flow of blood to the nerve of the brain responsible for pain. Thus the animal does not feel pain. While dying, the animal struggles, writhers, shakes and kicks, not due to pain, but due to the contraction and relaxation of the muscles defecient in blood and due to the flow of blood out of the body.

8.

NON-VEGETARIAN FOOD MAKES MUSLIMS VIOLENT

Question:

Science tell us that whatever one eats, it has an effect on one's behaviour. Why then, does Islam allow Muslims to eat non-vegetarian food, since eating of animals could make a person violent and ferocious?

Answer:

1.

Only eating of herbivorous animals allowed

I agree that, what a person eats has an effect on his behaviour. This is one of the reasons why Islam prohibits the eating of carnivorous animals like lion, tiger, leopard, etc. who are violent and ferocious. The consumption of the meat of such animals would probably make a person violent and ferocious. Islam only allows the eating of herbivorous animals like cow, goat, sheep, etc. that are peaceful and docile. We Muslims eat peaceful and docile animals because we are peace loving and non-violent people.

2.

The Qur'an says Prophet prohibits what is bad

The Qur'an says:

"The Prophet commands them what is just and prohibits what is evil". "He allows them as lawful what is good (and pure) and prohibits them what is bad (and impure),"
[Al-Qur'an 7: 157]

"So take what the Messenger assigns to you and deny yourselves that which he withholds from you."
[Al-Qur'an 59: 7]

For a Muslim, the Prophet's statement is sufficient to convince him that Allah does not wish humans to eat some kinds of meat while allowing some other kinds.

3.

Hadith of Mohammad (pbuh) prohibiting eating of carnivorous animals

According to various authentic Ahadith narrated in Sahih Bukhari and Sahih Muslim including hadith narrated by Ibn Abbas in Sahih Muslim, Book of hunting and slaughter, Hadith No. 4752 and Sunan Ibn-I-Majah chapter 13 Hadith no. 3232 to 3234, the Holy Prophet (pbuh) prohibited the eating of:

i. Wild animals with canine teeth, i.e. meat eating carnivorous animals. These are animals belonging to the cat families such as lion, tiger, cats, dogs, wolfs, hyenas, etc.
ii. Certain rodents like mice, rats, rabbits with claws, etc.
iii. Certain reptiles like snakes, alligators, etc.
iv. Birds of prey with talons or claws, like vultures, eagle, crows, owl, etc.

9.

MUSLIMS WORSHIP THE*KAABA*

Question:

When Islam is against idol worship why do the Muslims worship, and bow down to the*Kaaba* in their prayer?

Answer:

Kaaba is the *Qibla* i.e. the direction Muslims face during their prayers. It is important to note that though Muslims face the *Kaaba* during prayers, they do not worship the *Kaaba*. Muslims worship and bow to none but Allah.

It is mentioned in Surah Baqarah:

"We see the turning of thy face (for guidance) to the heavens: now shall We turn thee to a*Qiblah* that shall please thee. Turn then thy face in the direction of the Sacred Mosque: wherever ye are, turn your faces in that direction."
[Al-Qur'an 2:144]

1.
Islam believes in fostering unity

For instance, if Muslims want to offer *Salaah* (Prayer), it is possible that some may wish to face north, while some may wish to face south. In order to unite Muslims in their worship of the One True God, Muslims, wherever they may be, are asked to face in only one direction i.e. towards the *Kaaba*. If some Muslims live towards the west of the *Kaaba*they face the east. Similarly if they live towards the east of the *Kaaba* they face the west.

2.
***Kaaba* is at the Centre of the World Map**The Muslims were the first people to draw the map of the world. They drew the map with the south facing upwards and north downwards.
The *Kaaba* was at the centre. Later, western cartographers drew the map upside down with the north facing upwards and south downwards. Yet, *Alhamdullilah* the *Kaaba* is at the centre of the world map.

3.

***Tawaaf* around *Kaaba* for indicating one God**When the Muslims go to *Masjid-e-Haram* in Makkah, they perform *tawaaf* or circumambulation round the *Kaaba*. This act symbolizes the belief and worship of One God, since, just as every circle has one centre, so also there is only one Allah (swt) worthy of worship.

4.

Hadith of Umar (may Allah be pleased with him)

Regarding the black stone, *hajr-e-aswad*, there is a hadith (tradition), attributed to the illustrious companion of the Prophet Muhammed (pbuh), Umar (may Allah be pleased with him).

According to Sahih Bukhari, Volume 2, book of Hajj, chapter 56, H.No. 675. Umar (may Allah be pleased with him) said, "I know that you are a stone and can neither benefit nor harm. Had I not seen the Prophet (pbuh) touching (and kissing) you, I would never have touched (and kissed) you".

5.

People stood on *Kaaba* and gave the *adhaan*

At the time of the Prophet, people even stood on the Kaaba and gave the 'adhaan' or the call to prayer. One may ask those who allege that Muslims worship the Kaaba; which idol worshipper stands on the idol he worships?

10.

NON-MUSLIMS NOT ALLOWED IN MAKKAH

Question:

Why are non-Muslims not allowed in the holy cities of Makkah and Madinah?

Answer:

It is true that non-Muslims are not allowed in the holy cities of Makkah and Madinah, by law. The following points will serve to elucidate the possible reasoning behind such a restriction.

1.

All citizens are not permitted in the cantonment area

I am a citizen of India. Yet, I am not permitted to enter certain restricted areas like the cantonment. In every country there are certain areas where a common citizen of that country cannot enter. Only a citizen who is enrolled in the military or those who are connected with the defence of the country are allowed in the cantonment area. Similarly Islam is a Universal Religion for the entire world and for all human beings. The cantonment areas of Islam are the two holy cites of Makkah and Madinah. Here only those who believe in Islam and are involved in the defence of Islam i.e. the Muslims are allowed.

It would be illogical for a common citizen to object against the restriction on entering a cantonment area. Similarly it is not appropriate for non-Muslims to object against the restriction on non-Muslims against entering Makkah and Madinah.

2.

<u>Visa to enter Makkah and Madinah</u>

a. Whenever a person travels to a foreign country he has to first apply for a visa i.e. the permission to enter that country. Every country has its own rules, regulations and requirements for issuing a visa. Unless their critera are satisfied they will not issue a visa.
b. One of the countries which is very strict in issuing a visa is the United States of America, especially when issuing visas to citizens of the third world. They have several conditions and requirements to be fulfilled before they issue a visa.
c. When I visited Singapore, it was mentioned on their immigration form - death to drug traffickers. If I want to visit Singapore I have to abide by the rules. I cannot say that death penalty is a barbaric punishment. Only if I agree with their requirements and conditions will I be permitted to enter the country.
d. The Visa – The primary condition required for any human being to enter Makkah or Madina is to say with his lips, *La ila ha illallah Muhammed ur Rasulullah* meaning that 'there is no God but Allah and Muhammed (pbuh) is His Messenger.'

11. PORK FORBIDDEN

Question:

Why is the eating of pork forbidden in Islam?

Answer:

The fact that consumption of pork is prohibited in Islam is well known. The following points explain various aspects of this prohibition:

1.

<u>Pork prohibited in Qur'an</u>

The Qur'an prohibits the consumption of pork in no less than 4 different places. It is prohibited in 2:173, 5:3, 6:145 and 16:115.

"Forbidden to you (for food) are: dead meat, blood, the flesh of swine, and that on which hath been invoked the name of other than Allah." [Al-Qur'an 5:3]

The above verses of the Holy Qur'an are sufficient to satisfy a Muslim as to why pork is forbidden.

2.

Pork prohibited in the Bible

The Christian is likely to be convinced by his religious scriptures. The Bible prohibits the consumption of pork, in the book of Leviticus

"And the swine, though he divide the hoof, and be cloven footed, yet he cheweth not the cud; he is unclean to you".

"Of their flesh shall ye not eat, and their carcass shall ye not touch, they are unclean to you." [Leviticus 11:7-8]

Pork is also prohibited in the Bible in the book of Deuteronomy

"And the swine, because it divideth the hoof, yet cheweth not the cud, it is unclean unto you. Ye shall not eat of their flesh, nor touch their dead carcass."
[Deuteronomy 14:8]

A similar prohibition is repeated in the Bible in the book of Isaiah chapter 65 verse 2-5.

3.

Consumption of pork causes several diseases

The other non-Muslims and atheists will agree only if convinced through reason, logic and science. Eating of pork can cause no less than seventy different types of diseases. A person can have various helminthes like roundworm, pinworm, hookworm, etc. One of the most dangerous is Taenia Solium, which is in lay man's terminology called tapeworm. It harbours in the intestine and is very long. Its ova i.e. eggs, enter the blood stream and can reach almost all the organs of the body. If it enters the brain it can cause memory loss. If it enters the heart it can cause heart attack, if it enters the eye it can cause blindness, if it enters the liver it can cause liver damage. It can damage almost all the organs of the body.

Another dangerous helminthes is Trichura Tichurasis. A common misconception about pork is that if it is cooked well, these ova die. In a research project undertaken in America, it was found that out of twenty-four people suffering from Trichura Tichurasis, twenty two had cooked the pork very well. This indicates that the ova present in the pork do not die under normal cooking temperature.

4.

Pork has fat building material

Pork has very little muscle building material and contains excess of fat. This fat gets deposited in the vessels and can cause hypertension and heart attack. It is not surprising that over 50% of Americans suffer from hypertension.

5.
Pig is one of the filthiest animals on earth

The pig is one of the filthiest animals on earth. It lives and thrives on muck, faeces and dirt. It is the best scavenger that I know that God has produced. In the villages they don't have modern toilets and the villagers excrete in the open air. Very often excreta is cleared by pigs.

Some may argue that in advanced countries like Australia, pigs are bred in very clean and hygienic conditions. Even in these hygienic conditions the pigs are kept together in sties. No matter how hard you try to keep them clean they are filthy by nature. They eat and enjoy their own as well as their neighbour's excreta.

6.
Pig is the most shameless animal The pig is the most shameless animal on the face of the earth. It is the only animal that invites its friends to have sex with its mate. In America, most people consume pork. Many times after dance parties, they have swapping of wives; i.e. many say "you sleep with my wife and I will sleep with your wife." If you eat pigs then you behave like pigs. We Indians look upon America to be very advanced and sophisticated. Whatever they do, we follow after a few years. According to an article in Island magazine, this practice of swapping wives has become common in the affluent circles of Bombay.

12.

PROHIBITION OF ALCOHOL

Question:

Why is the consumption of alcohol prohibited in Islam?

Answer:

Alcohol has been the scourge of human society since time immemorial. It continues to cost countless human lives, and causes terrible misery to millions throughout the world. Alcohol is the root cause of several problems facing society. The statistics of soaring crime rates, increasing instances of mental illnesses and millions of broken homes throughout the world bear mute testimony to the destructive power of alcohol.

1.

Prohibition of alcohol in the Qur'an

The Glorious Qur'an prohibits the consumption of alcohol in the following verse:

"O ye who believe!
Intoxicants and Gambling,

(Dedication of) stones,
And (divination by) arrows,
Are an Abomination –
Of Satan's handiwork;
Eschew such (abomination),
That ye may prosper."
[Al-Qur'an 5:90]

2.

Prohibition of alcohol in the Bible

The Bible prohibits the consumption of alcohol in the following verses:

a. "Wine is a mocker, strong drink is raging; and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise."
[Proverbs 20:1]
b. "And be not drunk with wine."
[Ephesians 5:18]

3.

Alcohol inhibits the inhibitory centre

The human beings possess an inhibitory centre in their brains. This inhibitory centre prevents the person from doing things that he considers wrong. For instance a person does not normally use abusive language while addressing his parents or elders. If he has to answer the call of nature, his inhibitory centre will prevent him from doing so in public. Therefore he uses the toilet.

When a person consumes alcohol, the inhibitory centre itself is inhibited. That is precisely the reason that an inebriated person is often found to be indulging in behaviour that is completely uncharacteristic of him. For instance the intoxicated person is found to use abusive and foul language and does not realize his mistake even if he is addressing his parents. Many even urinate in their clothes. Neither do they talk nor walk properly. They even misbehave.

4.

Cases of adultery, rape, incest and AIDS are found more among alcoholics

According to National Crime Victimization Survey Bureau of Justice (U.S. Department of Justice) in the year 1996 alone everyday on an average 2,713 rapes took place. The statistics tell us that the majority of the rapists, were intoxicated while committing the crime. The same is true in cases of molestation.

According to statistics, 8% of Americans commit incest i.e. one in every twelve to thirteen persons in America is involved in incest. Almost all the cases of incest are due to intoxication of one or both the persons involved.

One of the major factors associated with the spread of AIDS, the most dreaded disease, is alcoholism.

5.

Every alcoholic was initially a social drinker

Many may argue in favour of liquor by calling themselves 'social drinkers'. They claim that they only have one or two pegs and they have self-control and so never get intoxicated. Investigations reveal that every alcoholic started as a social drinker. Not a single alcoholic or drunkard initially starts drinking with the intention of becoming an alcoholic or a drunkard. No social drinker can say that I have been having alcohol for several years and that I have so much self-control that I have never been intoxicated even a single time.

6.

If a person is intoxicated just once and commits something shameful, it will remain with him for a lifetime.

Suppose a 'social drinker' loses his self-control just once. In a state of intoxication he commits rape or incest. Even if the act is later regretted, a normal human being is likely to carry the guilt throughout his life. Both the perpetrator and the victim are irreparably and irreversibly damaged.

7.

Alcohol is prohibited in the Hadith

The Prophet of Islam Muhammad (peace be upon him) said:

a. In Sunan Ibn-I-Majah Volume 3, Book of Intoxicants, Chapter 30 Hadith No. 3371.

   "Alcohol is the mother of all evils and it is the most shameful of evils."

b. In Sunan Ibn-I-Majah Volume 3, Book of Intoxicants, Chapter 30 Hadith No. 3392

   "Anything which intoxicates in a large quantity, is prohibited even in a small quantity."

   Thus there is no excuse for a nip or a tot.

c. Not only those who drink alcohol are cursed but also those who deal with them directly or indirectly are cursed by Allah.

   According to Sunan Ibn-I-Majah Volume 3, Book of Intoxicants, Chapter 30 Hadith No. 3380.

   It was reported by Anas (may Allah be pleased with him), that Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) said:

   "God's curse falls on ten groups of people who deal with alcohol. The one who distills it, the one for whom it has been distilled, the one who drinks it, the one who transports it, the one to who it has been brought, the one whom serves it, the one who sells it, the one

who utilizes money from it, the one who buys it and the one who buys it for someone else."

8.

Diseases associated with alcoholism

There are several scientific reasons for the prohibition of consumption of intoxicants i.e. alcohol. The maximum number of deaths in the world related to any one particular cause is due to the consumption of alcohol. Millions of people die every year only because of intake of alcohol. I need not go into the details of all the ill-effects of alcohol since most of them are commonly known. Below is a simple list of few of the alcohol related illnesses:

1. Cirrhosis of Liver is the most well known alcohol associated disease.
2. Others are Cancer of Oesophagus, Cancer of Head and Neck, Cancer of Liver (Hepatoma), Cancer of Bowel, etc.
3. Oesophagitis, Gastritis, Pancreatitis and Hepatitis are linked with alcohol consumption.
4. Cardiomyopathy, Hypertension, Coronary Artherosclerosis, Angina and Heart Attacks are linked with heavy alcohol intakes.
5. Strokes, Apoplexy, Fits and different types of Paralysis are linked with alcohol intake.
6. Peripheral Neuropathy, Cortical Atrophy, Cerebellar Atrophy are well-known syndromes caused by alcohol consumption.
7. Wernicke – Korsakoff syndrome with amnesia of recent events, confabulations and retainment of memory to old events with different types of paralysis are mainly due to thiamine deficiency due to excessive alcohol intake.
8. Beriberi and other deficiencies are not uncommon among alcoholics. Even Pellagra occurs in alcoholics.
9. Delerium Tremens is a serious complication that may occur during recurrent infection of alcoholics or post operatively. It also occurs during abstention as a sign of withdrawal effect. It is quite serious and may cause death even if treated in well equipped centres.
10. Numerous Endocrine Disorders have been associated with alcoholism ranging from Myxodema to Hyperthyroidism and Florid Cushing Syndrome.
11. Hematological ill effects are long and variable. Folic acid deficiency, however, is the most common manifestation of alcoholic abuse resulting in Macrocytic Anemia. Zeive's syndrome is a triad of Hemolytic Anemia, Jaundice and Hyperlipaedemia that follows alcoholic binges.
12. Thrombocytopenia and other platelet abnormalities are not rare in alcoholics.
13. The commonly used tablet metronidazole (flagyl) interacts badly with alcohol.
14. Recurrent infection is very common among chronic alcoholics. The resistance to disease and the immunological defense system are compromised by alcohol intake.
15. Chest infections are notorious in alcoholics. Pneumonia, Lung Abcess, Emphysema and Pulmonary Tuberculosis are all common in alcoholics.
16. During acute alcoholic intoxication, the drunk person usually vomits, the cough reflexes which are protective are paralysed. The vomitus thus easily pass to the lung causing Pneumonia or Lung Abscess. Occasionally it may even cause suffocation and death.
17. The ill effects of alcohol consumption on women deserves special mention. Females are more vulnerable to alcohol-related Cirrhosis than men. During pregnancy alcohol consumption has a severe detrimental effect on the foetus. Foetal Alcohol Syndrome is being recognised more and more in the medical profession.
18. Skin diseases are also related to alcohol indulgence.
19. Eczema, Alopecia, Nail Dystrophy, Paronychia (infection around the nails) and Angular Stomatitis (inflammation of the angle of the mouth) are common diseases among alcoholics.

9.

<u>Alcoholism is a ‘disease’</u>
Medical doctors have now turned liberal towards alcoholics and call alcoholism a disease rather than an addiction.

The Islamic Research Foundation has published a pamphlet that says:

If alcohol is a disease, it is the only disease that:

- Is sold in bottles

- Is advertised in newspapers, magazines, on radio and television

- Has licensed outlets to spread it

- Produces revenue for the government

- Brings violent deaths on the highways

- Destroys family life and increases crime

- Has no germs or viral cause

ALCOHOLISM IS NOT A DISEASE – IT IS SATAN’S HANDIWORK

Allah (swt) in His Infinite Wisdom has warned us against this snare of Satan. Islam is called the "*Deen-ul-Fitrah*" or the natural religion of Man. All its injunctions are aimed at preserving the natural state of man. Alcohol is a deviation from this natural state, for the individual as well as for society. It degrades man to a level below that of the beasts he claims to be superior to. Hence the consumption of alcohol is prohibited in Islam.

13.

EQUALITY OF WITNESSES

Question:

Why are two witnesses who are women, equivalent to only one witness who is a man ?

Answer:

It is not true that two female witnesses are always considered as equal to only one male witness. It is true only in certain cases. There are about five verses in the Qur’an that mention witnesses, without specifying male or female. There is only one verse in the Qur’an, that says two female witnesses are equal to one male witness. This verse is Surah Baqarah, chapter 2 verse 282. This is the longest verse in the Qur’an and deals with financial transactions. It says:

"Oh! ye who believe!
When ye deal with each other,
in transactions involving future obligation
in a fixed period of time
reduce them to writing and get two witnesses
out of your own men and if there are not two men,
then a man and two women, such as ye choose,
for witnesses so that if one of them errs
the other can remind her."
[Al-Qur'an 2:282]

This verse of the Qur'an deals only with financial transactions. In such cases, it is advised to make an agreement in writing between the parties and take two witnesses, preferably both of which should be men only. In case you cannot find two men, then one man and two women would suffice.

For instance, suppose a person wants to undergo an operation for a particular ailment. To confirm the treatment, he would prefer taking references from two qualified surgeons. In case he is unable to find two surgeons, his second option would be one surgeon and two general practitioners who are plain MBBS doctors.

Similarly in financial transactions, two men are preferred. Islam expects men to be the breadwinners of their families. Since financial responsibility is shouldered by men, they are expected to be well versed in financial transactions as compared to women. As a second option, the witness can be one man and two women, so that if one of the women errs the other can remind her. The Arabic word used in the Qur'an is '*Tazil*' which means 'confused' or 'to err'. Many have wrongly translated this word as 'to forget'. Thus financial transactions constitute the only case in which two female witnesses are equal to one male witness.

However, some scholars are of the opinion that the feminine attitude can also have an effect on the witness in a murder case. In such circumstances a woman is more terrified as compared to a man. Due to her emotional condition she can get confused. Therefore, according to some jurists, even in cases of murder, two female witnesses are equivalent to one male witness. In all other cases, one female witness is equivalent to one male witness. There are about five verses in the Qur'an which speak about witnesses without specifying man or woman.

While making a will of inheritance, two just persons are required as witnesses. In Surah Maidah chapter 5 verse 106, the Glorious Qur'an says:

"Oh you who believe!
When death approaches any of you,
(take) witnesses among yourself when making bequests."
[Al-Qur'an 5:106]

two just persons of your own (brotherhood)
or other from outside if you are journeying
through the earth and the chance of death befalls you."
[Al-Qur'an 65:2]

Two persons endued with justice in case of talaq.

"Four witnesses are required
in case of charge against chaste women,
[Al-Qur'an 24:4]

There are some scholars who are of the opinion that the rule of two female witnesses equal to one male witness should be applied to all the cases. This cannot be agreed upon because one particular verse of the Qur'an from Surah Noor chapter 24, verse 6 clearly equates one female witness and one male witness:

"And those who launch a charge
against their spouses, and have (in support)
no evidence but their own -
their solitary evidence can be received."
[Al-Qur'an 24:6]

Hazrat Ayesha (RA) hadith narrated of one witness

Many jurists agree that even one witness of a woman is sufficient for the sighting of the crescent of the moon. Imagine one woman witness is sufficient for one of the pillars of Islam, i.e. fasting and the whole Muslim community of men and women agree and accept her witness! Some jurists say that one witness is required at the beginning of *Ramadaan*and two witnesses at the end of *Ramadaan*. It makes no difference whether the witnesses are men or women.

Some incidents require only female witness and that of a male cannot be accepted. For instance, in dealing with the problems of women, while giving the burial bath i.e. '*ghusl*' to a woman, the witness has to be a woman.

The seeming inequality of male and female witnesses in financial transactions is not due to any inequality of the sexes in Islam. It is only due to the different natures and roles of men and women in society as envisaged by Islam.

14.

INHERITANCE

Question:

Under Islamic law, why is a woman's share of the inherited wealth only half that of a man?

Answer:

The Glorious Qur'an contains specific and detailed guidance regarding the division of the inherited wealth, among the rightful beneficiaries.

The Qur'anic verses that contain guidance regarding inheritance are:

* Surah Baqarah, chapter 2 verse 180

* Surah Baqarah, chapter 2 verse 240

* Surah Nisa, chapter 4 verse 7-9

* Surah Nisa, chapter 4 verse 19

* Surah Nisa, chapter 4 verse 33 and

* Surah Maidah, chapter 5 verse 106-108

There are three verses in the Qur'an that broadly describe the share of close relatives i.e. Surah Nisah chapter 4 verses 11, 12 and 176. The translation of these verses are as follows:

"Allah (swt) (thus) directs you as regards your children's (inheritance): to the male, a portion equal to that of two females, if only daughters, two or more, their share is two-thirds of the inheritance; If only one, her share is a half.

For parents, a sixth share of the inheritance to each, if the deceased left children; If no children, and the parents are the (only) heirs, the mother has a third; if the deceased left brothers (or sisters) the mother has a sixth. (The distribution in all cases is) after the payment of legacies and debts. Ye know not whether your parents or your children are nearest to you in benefit. These are settled portions ordained by Allah; and Allah is All-Knowing, All-Wise.

In what your wives leave, your share is half. If they leave no child; but if they leave a child, ye get a fourth; after payment of legacies and debts. In what ye leave, their share is a fourth, if ye leave no child; but if ye leave a child, they get an eight; after payment of legacies and debts. If the man or woman whose inheritance is in question, has left neither ascendants nor descendants, but has left a brother or a sister, each one of the two gets a sixth; but if more than two, they share in a third; after payment of legacies and debts; so that no loss is caused (to anyone). Thus it is ordained by Allah; and Allah is All-Knowing Most Forbearing"
[Al-Qur'an 4:11-12]

"They ask thee for a legal decision. Say: Allah directs (them) about those who leave no descendants or ascendants as heirs. If it is a man that dies, leaving a sister but no child, she shall have half the inheritance. If (such a deceased was) a woman who left no child, Her brother takes her inheritance. If there are two sisters, they shall have two thirds of the inheritance (between them). If there are brothers and sisters, (they share), the male having twice the share of the female. Thus doth Allah (swt) makes clear to you (His knowledge of all things).
[Al-Qur'an 4:176]

In most of the cases, a woman inherits half of what her male counterpart inherits. However, this is not always the case. In case the deceased has left no ascendant or descendent but has left the uterine brother and sister, each of the two inherit one sixth. If the deceased has left children, both the parents that is mother and father get an equal share and inherit one sixth each. In certain cases, a woman can also inherit a share that is double that of the male. If the deceased is a woman who has left no children, brothers or sisters and is survived only by her husband, mother and father, the husband inherits half the property while the mother inherits one third and the father the remaining one sixth. In this particular case, the mother inherits a share that is double that of the father. It is true that as a general rule, in most cases, the female inherits a share that is half that of the male. For instance in the following cases:

1. daughter inherits half of what the son inherits,

2. wife inherits 1/8th and husband 1/4th if the deceased has no children.

3. Wife inherits 1/4th and husband 1/2 if the deceased has children

4. If the deceased has no ascendant or descendent, the sister inherits a share that is half that of the brother.

In Islam a woman has no financial obligation and the economical responsibility lies on the shoulders of the man. Before a woman is married it is the duty of the father or brother to look after the lodging, boarding, clothing and other financial requirements of the woman. After she is married it is the duty of the husband or the son. Islam holds the man financially responsible for fulfilling the needs of his family. In order to do be able to fulfill the responsibility the men get double the share of the inheritance. For example, if a man dies leaving about Rs. One Hundred and Fifty Thousand, for the children (i.e one son and one daughter) the son inherits One Hundred Thousand rupees and the daughter only Fifty Thousand rupees. Out of the one hundred thousand which the son inherits, as his duty towards his family, he may have to spend on them almost the entire amount or say about eighty thousand and thus he has a small percentage of inheritance, say about twenty thousand, left for himself. On the other hand, the daughter, who inherits fifty thousand is not bound to spend a single penny on anybody. She can keep the entire amount for herself. Would you prefer inheriting one hundred thousand rupees and spending eighty thousand from it, or inheriting fifty thousand rupees and having the entire amount to yourself?

16.

HEREAFTER - LIFE AFTER DEATH

Question

How can you prove the existence of hereafter, i.e. life after death?

Answer

1.

Belief in the hereafter is not based on blind faith?

Many people wonder as to how a person with a scientific and logical temperament, can lend any credence to the belief of life after death. People assume that anyone believing in the hereafter is doing so on the basis of blind belief.

My belief in the hereafter is based on a logical argument.

2.

Hereafter a logical belief

There are more than a thousand verses in the Glorious Qur'an, containing scientific facts (refer my book "Qur'an and Modern Science-Compatible or Incompatible?"). Many facts mentioned in the Qur'an have been discovered in the last few centuries. But science has not advanced to a level where it can confirm every statement of the Qur'an.

Suppose 80% of all that is mentioned in the Qur'an has been proved 100% correct. About the remaining 20%, science makes no categorical statement, since it has not advanced to a level, where it can either prove or disprove these statements. With the limited knowledge that we have, we cannot say for sure whether even a single percentage or a single verse of the Qur'an from this 20% portion is wrong. Thus when 80% of the Qur'an is 100% correct and the remaining 20% is

not disproved, logic says that even the 20% portion is correct. The existence of the hereafter, which is mentioned in the Qur'an, falls in the 20% ambiguous portion which my logic says is correct.

3.

Concept of peace and human values is useless without the concept of hereafter

Is robbing a good or an evil act? A normal balanced person would say it is evil. How would a person who does not believe in the hereafter convince a powerful and influential criminal that robbing is evil?

Suppose I am the most powerful and influential criminal in the world. At the same time I am an Intelligent and a logical person. I say that robbing is good because it helps me lead a luxurious life. Thus robbing is good for me.

If anybody can put forward a single logical argument as to why it is evil for me, I will stop immediately. People usually put forward the following arguments:

a. The person who is robbed will face difficulties

Some may say that the person who is robbed will face difficulties. I certainly agree that it is bad for the person who is robbed. But it is good for me. If I rob a thousand dollars, I can enjoy a good meal at a 5 star restaurant.

b. Someone may rob you

Some people argue that someday I may be robbed. No one can rob me because I am a very powerful criminal and I have hundreds of bodyguards. I can rob anybody but nobody can rob me. Robbing may be a risky profession for a common man but not for an influential person like me.

c. The police may arrest you

Some may say, if you rob, you can be arrested by the police. The police cannot arrest me because I have the police on my payroll. I have the ministers on my payroll. I agree that if a common man robs, he will be arrested and it will be bad for him, but I am an extraordinarily influential and powerful criminal.

Give me one logical reason why it is bad for me and I will stop robbing.

d. Its easy money

Some may say its easy money and not hard-earned money. I agree completely that it is easy money, and that is one of the main reasons why I rob. If a person has the option of earning money the easy as well as the hard way, any logical person would choose the easy way.

e. It is against humanity

Some may say it is against humanity and that a person should care for other human beings. I counter argue by asking as to who wrote this law called 'humanity' and why should I follow it?

This law may be good for the emotional and sentimental people but I am a logical person and I see no benefit in caring for other human beings.

f. It is a selfish act

Some may say that robbing is being selfish. It is true that robbing is a selfish act; but then why should I not be selfish? It helps me enjoy life.

1. No logical reason for robbing being an evil act

Hence all arguments that attempt to prove that robbing is an evil act are futile. These arguments may satisfy a common man but not a powerful and influential criminal like me. None of the arguments can be defended on the strength of reason and logic. It is no surprise that there are so many criminals in this world.

Similarly raping, cheating etc. can be justified as good for a person like me and there is no logical argument that can convince me that these things are bad.

2. A Muslim can convince a powerful and influential criminal

Now let us switch sides. Suppose you are the most powerful and influential criminal in the world, who has the police and the ministers on his payroll. You have army of thugs to protect you. I am a Muslim who will convince you that robbing, raping, cheating, etc. are evil acts.

Even if I put forth the same arguments to prove that robbing is evil the criminal will respond the same way as he did earlier.

I agree that the criminal is being logical and all his arguments are true only when he is the most powerful and influential criminal.

3. Every human being wants justice

Each and every human being desires justice. Even if he does not want justice for others he wants justice for himself. Some people are intoxicated by power and influence and inflict pain and suffering on others. The same people, however, would surely object if some injustice was done to them. The reason such people become insensitive to the suffering of others is that they worship power and influence. Power and influence, they feel, not only allows them to inflict injustice on others but also prevents others from doing likewise to them.

4. God is Most Powerful and Just

As a Muslim I would convince the criminal about the existence of Almighty God (refer to answer proving the existence of God). This God is more powerful than you and at the same time is also just. The Glorious Qur’an says:

"Allah is never unjust
In the least degree"

[Al-Qur’an 4:40]

5. Why does God not punish me?

The criminal, being a logical and scientific person, agrees that God exists, after being presented with scientific facts from the Qur'an. He may argue as to why God, if He is Powerful and Just, does not punish him.

6. **The people who do injustice should be punished**

Every person who has suffered injustice, irrespective of financial or social status, almost certainly wants the perpetrator of injustice to be punished. Every normal person would like the robber or the rapist to be taught a lesson. Though a large number of criminals are punished, many even go scot-free. They lead a pleasant, luxurious life, and even enjoy a peaceful existence. If injustice is done to a powerful and influential person, by someone more powerful and more influential than he, even such a person would want that person perpetrators of injustice to be punished.

7. **This life is a test for the hereafter**

This life is a test for the hereafter. The Glorious Qur'an says:

"He who created Death
And life that He
May try which of you
Is best in deed;
And He is the Exalted
In Might, Oft-Forgiving"
[Al-Qur'an 67:2]

8. **Final justice on day of judgement**

The Glorious Qur'an says:

"Every soul shall have
A taste of death:
And only on the Day
Of Judgement shall you
Be paid your full recompense.
Only he who is saved
Far from the Fire
And admitted to the Garden
Will have attained
The object (of life):
For the life of this world
Is but goods and chattels
Of deception."
[Al-Qur'an 3:185]

Final justice will be meted out on the Day of Judgement. After a person dies, he will be resurrected on the Day of Judgement along with the rest of mankind. It is possible that a person receives part of his punishment in this world. The final reward and punishment will only be in the hereafter. God Almighty may not punish a robber or a rapist in this world but he will surely be held accountable on the Day of Judgement and will be punished in the hereafter i.e. life after death.

9. **What punishment can the human law give Hitler?**

Hitler incinerated six million Jews during his reign of terror. Even if the police had arrested him, what punishment can the human law give Hitler for justice to prevail? The most they can do is to send Hitler to the gas chamber. But that will only be punishment for the killing of one Jew. What about the remaining five million, nine hundred and ninety nine thousand, nine hundred and ninety-nine Jews?

10. <u>Allah can burn Hitler more than six million times in hellfire</u>

Allah say in the Glorious Qur'an:

"Those who reject
Our signs, We shall soon
Cast into the Fire;
As often as their skins
Are roasted through,
We shall change them
For fresh skins,
That they may taste
The penalty: for Allah
Is Exalted in Power, Wise"
[Al-Qur'an 4:56]

If Allah wishes he can incinerate Hitler six million times in the hereafter in the hellfire.

11. <u>No concept of human values or good and bad without concept of hereafter</u>

It is clear that without convincing a person about the hereafter, i.e. life after death, the concept of human values and the good or evil nature of acts is impossible to prove to any person who is doing injustice especially when he is influential and powerful.

17.

WHY ARE MUSLIMS DIVIDED INTO SECTS / DIFFERENT SCHOOLS OF THOUGHT?

Question:

When all the Muslim follow one and the same Qur'an then why are there so many sects and different schools of thoughts among Muslims?

Answer:

1.

Muslims Should be United

It is a fact that Muslims today, are divided amongst themselves. The tragedy is that such divisions are not endorsed by Islam at all. Islam believes in fostering unity amongst its followers.

The Glorious Qur'an says:

"And hold fast,
All together, by the rope
Which Allah (stretches out for you),
and be not divided among yourselves;"
[Al-Qur'an 3:103]

Which is the rope of Allah that is being referred to in this verse? It is the Glorious Qur'an. The Glorious Qur'an is the rope of Allah which all Muslims should hold fast together. There is double emphasis in this verse. Besides saying 'hold fast all together' it also says, 'be not divided'.

Qur'an further says,

"Obey Allah, and obey the Messenger"
[Al-Qur'an 4:59]

All the Muslim should follow the Qur'an and authentic Ahadith and be not divided among themselves.

2.

It is Prohibited to make sects and divisions in Islam

The Glorious Qur'an says:

"As for those who divide
Their religion and break up
Into sects, thou hast
No part in them in the least:
Their affair is with Allah:
He will in the end
Tell them the truth
Of all that they did."
[Al-Qur'an 6:159]

In this verse Allah (swt) says that one should disassociate oneself from those who divide their religion and break it up into sects.

But when one asks a Muslim, "who are you?", the common answer is either 'I am a*Sunni*, or 'I am a *Shia'*. Some call themselves *Hanafi*, or *Shafi* or *Maliki* or *Humbali*. Some say 'I am a *Deobandi'*, while some others say 'I am a *Barelvi'*.

3.

Our Prophet was a Muslim

One may ask such Muslims, "Who was our beloved prophet (pbuh)? Was he a *Hanafi* or a *Shafi*, or a *Humbali* or a *Maliki*?" No! He was a Muslim, like all the other prophets and messengers of Allah before him.

It is mentioned in chapter 3 verse 52 of Al-Qur'an that Jesus (pbuh) was a Muslim.

Further, in chapter 3 verse 67, Al-Qur'an says that Ibrahim (pbuh) was not a Jew or a Christian but was a Muslim.

4.

Qur'an says call yourselves Muslim

a. If anyone poses a Muslim the question who are you, he should say "I am a MUSLIM, not a *Hanafi* or a *Shafi*". Surah Fussilat chapter 41 verse 33 says
   "Who is better in speech
   Than one who calls (men)
   To Allah, works righteousness,
   And says, 'I am of those
   Who bow in Islam (Muslim)?' "
   [Al-Qur'an 41:33]

   The Qur'an says "Say I am of those who bow in Islam". In other words, say, "I am a Muslim".
b. The Prophet (pbuh) dictated letters to non-Muslim kings and rulers inviting them to accept Islam. In these letters he mentioned the verse of the Qur'an from Surah Ali Imran chapter 3 verse 64:
   Say ye: "Bear witness
   That we (at least)
   Are Muslims (bowing
   To Allah's Will)."
   [Al-Qur'an 3:64]

5.
Respect all the Great Scholars of Islam We must respect all the great scholars of Islam, including the four Imaams, Imam Abu Hanifa, Imam Shafi, Imam Humbal and Imam Malik (may Allah be pleased with them all). They were great scholars and may Allah reward them for their research and hardwork. One can have no objection if someone agrees with the views and research of Imam Abu Hanifa or Imam Shafi, etc. But when posed a question, 'who are you?', the reply should only be 'I am a Muslim'.

Some may argue by quoting the hadith of our beloved Prophet from Sunan Abu Dawood Hadith No. 4579. In this hadith the prophet (pbuh) is reported to have said, "My community will be split up into seventy-three sects."

This hadith reports that the prophet predicted the emergence of seventy-three sects. He did not say that Muslims should be active in dividing themselves into sects. The Glorious Qur'an

commands us not to create sects. Those who follow the teachings of the Qur'an and Sahih Hadith, and do not create sects are the people who are on the true path.

According to Tirmidhi Hadith No. 171, the prophet (pbuh) is reported to have said, "My*Ummah* will be fragmented into seventy-three sects, and all of them will be in Hell fire except one sect." The companions asked Allah's messenger which group that would be. Where upon he replied, "It is the one to which I and my companions belong."

The Glorious Qur'an mentions in several verses, "Obey Allah and obey His Messenger". A true Muslim should only follow the Glorious Qur'an and the Sahih Hadith. He can agree with the views of any scholar as long as they conform to the teachings of the Qur'an and Sahih Hadith. If such views go against the Word of Allah, or the Sunnah of His Prophet, then they carry no weight, regardless of how learned the scholar might be.

If only all Muslims read the Qur'an with understanding and adhere to Sahih Hadith,*Inshallah* most of these differences would be solved and we could be one united Muslim*Ummah*

18.

ALL RELIGIONS TEACH MEN TO BE RIGHTEOUS, THEN WHY FOLLOW ONLY ISLAM?

Question

All religions basically teach followers to do good deeds. Why should a person only follow Islam? Can he not follow any of the religions?

Answer

1.

Major difference between Islam and most other religions

All religions basically exhort mankind to be righteous and eschew evil. But Islam goes beyond that. It guides us towards practical ways of achieving righteousness and eliminating evil from our individual and collective lives. Islam takes into account human nature and the complexities of human society. Islam is guidance from the Creator Himself. Therefore, Islam is also called the *Deen-ul-Fitrah* (the natural religion of Man).

2.

Example - Islam commands us to shun robbery and also prescribes method of eleminating robbery

a. **Islam prescribes method of eliminating robbery**
   All major religions teach that theft is an evil act. Islam teaches the same. So what is the difference between Islam and the other religions? The difference lies in the fact that Islam, besides teaching that robbing is evil, shows a practical way of creating a social structure in which people will not rob.

b. **Islam prescribes *Zakaat***
Islam prescribes a system of *Zakaat* (obligatory annual charity). Islamic law prescribes that every person who has a saving that exceeds the *nisaab* level i.e. more than 85 grams of gold, should give 2.5% of that saving every lunar year in charity. If every rich person in the world gave *Zakaat* sincerely, poverty will be eradicated from this world. Not a single human being would die of hunger.

c. **Chopping off the hands as punishment for robbery**
Islam prescribes chopping off the hands of the convicted robber. The Glorious Qur'an says in Surah Maidah:
"As to the thief, male or female, cut off his or her hands:a punishment by way of example, from Allah, for their crime: and Allah is Exalted in power, full of wisdom."
[Al-Qur'an 5:38]
The non-Muslim may say, "Chopping off the hands in this 20th century. Islam is a barbaric and ruthless religion!"

d. **Results achieved when Islamic *Shariah* Implemented**
America is supposed to be one of the most advanced countries in the world. Unfortunately it also has one of the highest rates of crime, theft, and robbery. Suppose the Islamic *shariah* is implemented in America i.e. every rich person gives *Zakaat* (2.5% of his savings in charity above 85 grams of gold every lunar year), and every convicted robber has his or her hands chopped off as a punishment. Will the rate of theft and robbery in America increase, remain same or decrease? Naturally it will decrease. Moreover the existence of such a stringent law would discourage many a potential robber.

I agree that the amount of theft that takes place in the world today is so tremendous that if you chop off the hands of all the thieves, there will be tens of thousands of people whose hands will be chopped off. The point here is that the moment you implement this law the rate of theft will decline immediately. The potential robber would give it a serious thought before jeopardizing his limbs. The mere thought of the punishment itself will discourage majority of the robbers. There will barely be a few who would rob. Hence only a few person's hands would be chopped off but millions would live peacefully without fear of being robbed.

Islamic *Shariah* is therefore practical, and achieves results.

3.
Example: Islam prohibits the molestation and rape of women. It enjoins *hijaab*and prescribes capital punishment for a convicted rapist.

a. **Islam prescribes method of eliminating molestation and rape**
All the major religions declare the molestation and rape of women as grave sins. Islam teaches the same. What then is the difference between Islam and the other religions? The difference lies in the fact that Islam does not merely preach respect for women, or abhor molestation and rape as serious crimes, but also gives clear guidance as to how society can eliminate such crimes.

b. ***Hijaab* for men**
Islam has a system of *hijaab*. The Glorious Qur'an first mentions *hijaab* for the men and then for the women. *Hijaab* for the men is mentioned in the following verse:

"Say to the believing men that they should lower their gaze and guard their modesty: that will make for greater purity for them: and Allah is well acquainted with all that they do."
[Al-Qur'an 24:30]

The moment a man looks at a woman and if any brazen or unashamed thought comes to his mind, he should lower his gaze.

c. ***Hijaab* for women**
Hijaab for women is mentioned in the following verse:

"And say to the believing women that they should lower their gaze and guard their modesty; that they should not display their beauty and ornaments except what (must ordinarily) appear thereof; that they should draw their veils over their bosoms and not display their beauty except to their husbands, their fathers, their husbands' fathers, their sons...."

[Al-Qur'an 24:31]

The extent of *hijaab* for a woman is that her complete body should be covered. The only part that can be seen, are the face and the hands up to the wrists. If they wish to cover, they can even cover these parts of the body. However some Islamic scholars insist that even the face should be covered.

d. ***Hijaab* prevents molestation**
The reason why Allah has prescribed *Hijaab* for the women is given in the Qur'an in the folowing verse of Surah Al-Ahzab:

"O Prophet! Tell thy wives and daughters, and the believing women,that they should cast their outer garments over their persons (when abroad): that is most convenient, that they should be known (as such) and not molested. And Allah is Oft-Forgiving, most Merciful."

[Al-Qur'an 33:59]

The Qur'an says that *Hijaab* has been prescribed for the women so that they are recognized as modest women this would prevent them from being molested.

e. **Example of twin sisters**
Suppose two sisters who are twins and who are equally beautiful, walk down a street. One of them is wearing the Islamic *Hijaab* i.e. the complete body is covered except for the face and the hands up to the wrists, and the other twin is wearing a mini skirt or shorts. Around the corner there is a hooligan who is waiting for an opportunity to tease a girl. Who will he tease? The girl wearing the Islamic *Hijaab*or the girl wearing the mini skirt or shorts? Dresses that expose more than they conceal, are an indirect temptation to the opposite sex for teasing, molestation and rape. The Qur'an rightly says that the *hijaab* prevents women from being molested.

f. **Capital punishment for rapist**
The Islamic *shariah* prescribes capital punishment for a convicted rapist. The non-Muslim may be horrified at such a stringent punishment in this age. Many accuse Islam of being ruthless and barbaric. I have asked a common question to hundreds of non-Muslim men. Suppose God-forbid, some one rapes your wife, your mother or your sister and you are made the judge. The rapist is brought in front of you. What punishment would you give him? All of them said, "we would put him to death." Some went to the extent of saying, "we would torture him to death", If your wife or your mother is raped you want the rapist to be put to death. But if someone else's wife or mother is raped, capital punishment is a barbaric law. Why the double standards?

g. **U.S.A. has one of the highest rate of Rape**
The United States of America is supposed to be one of the most advanced countries of the world. An F.B.I report in the year 1990 says that 1,02,555 cases of rape were

reported. It further says that only 16% of the cases of rapes are reported. Thus, in order to know the actual number of rapes that took place in 1990, the reported figure should be multiplied by 6.25. We get a total of 6,40,968 rape cases that took place in the year 1990. If the total is divided by 365 the number of days in a year, we get an average of 1,756 rape incidents everyday.

Later another report said that an average of 1900 cases of rape are committed in U.S.A every day. According to National Crime Victimization Survey Bureau of Justice Statistics (U. S. Dept. of Justice) in 1996 alone 3,07,000 cases of rape were reported. Only 31% of the actual cases of rape were reported. Thus, 3,07,000 X 3.226 = 9,90,322 rapes took place in 1996. That is, an average of 2,713 cases of rape took place everyday in America in 1996. Every 32 seconds one rape is taking place in America. Maybe American rapists got bolder. The FBI report of 1990 continues and says that out of the rape cases that were reported only 10% of the rapist were arrested, that is only 1.6% of the actual rapes committed. Out of those arrested, 50% were let free before the trial. This would mean that only 0.8% of the rapists faced a trial. In other words if a person commits 125 rapes the chances that he will get a punishment for rape is only once. Many would consider this a good gamble. And the report says that of those people who faced trial 50% received sentences of less than a year's imprisonment though the American law says rape carries a seven year sentence of imprisonment. For a rapist, the judge is lenient to first time offenders. Imagine a person commits 125 rapes and the chances of being convicted is only once, and 50% of the time the judge will grant leniency and give a sentence of less than a year!

h. **Results achieved when Islamic *Shariah* Implemented**
Suppose the Islamic *shariah* is implemented in America. Whenever a man looks at a woman and if any brazen or unashamed thought comes to his mind, he lowers his gaze. Every woman wears the Islamic *Hijaab*, that is the complete body is covered except the face and the hands upto the wrists. After this if any man commits rape, he gets capital punishment. The question is, will the rate of rape in America increase, will it remain the same or will it decrease? Naturally it will decrease. Islamic *Shariah* gets results.

4.
Islam has Practical Solutions for the Problems of Mankind Islam is the best way of life because its teachings are not doctrinaire rhetoric but practical solutions for the problems of mankind. Islam achieves results both at the individual and collective levels. Islam is the best way of life because it is a practical, universal religion not confined to any ethnic group or nationality.

19.

VAST DIFFERENCE BETWEEN ISLAM AND THE ACTUAL PRACTICE OF MUSLIMS

Question:

If Islam is the best religion, why are many of the Muslims dishonest, unreliable, and involved in activities such as cheating, bribing, dealing in drugs, etc.?

Answer:

1.

Media maligns Islam

a. Islam is without doubt the best religion but the media is in the hands of the westerners who are afraid of Islam. The media is continuously broadcasting and printing information against Islam. They either provide misinformation about Islam, misquote Islam or project a point out of proportion, if any.
b. When any bomb blasts take place anywhere, the first people to be accused without proof are invariably the Muslims. This appears as headlines in the news. Later, when they find that non-Muslims were responsible, it appears as an insignificant news' item.
c. If a 50 year old Muslim marries a 15 year old girl after taking her permission, it appears on the front page but when a 50 year old non-Muslim rapes a 6 year old girl, it may appear in the news in the inside pages as 'Newsbriefs'. Everyday in America on an average 2,713 cases of rape take place but it doesn't appear in the news, since it has become a way of life for the Americans.

2.

Black sheep in every community:

I am aware that there are some Muslims who are dishonest, unreliable, who cheat, etc. but the media projects this as though only Muslims are involved in such activities. There are black sheep in every community. I know Muslims who are alcoholics and who can drink most of the non-Muslims under the table.

3.

Muslims best as a whole:

Inspite of all the black sheep in the Muslim community, Muslims taken on the whole, yet form the best community in the world. We are the biggest community of tee-totallers as a whole, i.e. those who don't imbibe alcohol. Collectively, we are a community which gives the maximum charity in the world. There is not a single person in the world who can even show a candle to the Muslims where modesty is concerned; where sobriety is concerned; where human values and ethics are concerned.

4.

<u>Don't judge a car by its driver:</u>

If you want to judge how good is the latest model of the "Mercedes" car and a person who does not know how to drive sits at the steering wheel and bangs up the car, who will you blame? The car or the driver? But naturally, the driver. To analyze how good the car is, a person should not look at the driver but see the ability and features of the car. How fast is it, what is its average fuel consumption, what are the safety measures, etc. Even if I agree for the sake of argument that the Muslims are bad, we can't judge Islam by its followers? If you want to judge how good Islam is then judge it according to its authentic sources, i.e. the Glorious Qur'an and the Sahih Hadith.

5.

Judge Islam by its best follower i.e. Prophet Mohammed (pbuh): If you practically want to check how good a car is put an expert driver behind the steering wheel. Similarly the best and the most exemplary follower of Islam by whom you can check how good Islam is, is the last and final messenger of God, Prophet Muhammad (pbuh). Besides Muslims, there are several honest and unbiased non-Muslim historians who have acclaimed that prophet Muhammad was the best human being. According to Michael H. Hart who wrote the book, 'The Hundred Most Influential Men in History', the topmost position, i.e. the number one position goes to the beloved prophet of Islam, Muhammad (pbuh). There are several such examples of non-Muslims paying great tributes to the prophet, like Thomas Carlyle, La-Martine, etc.

20.

NON-MUSLIMS REFERRED AS '*KAFIRS*'

Question:

Why do Muslims abuse non-Muslims by calling them '*Kafirs*'?

Answer:

1.

'*Kafir'* means one who rejects.

'*Kafir*' is derived from the word '*kufr*', which means to conceal or to reject. In Islamic terminology, '*Kafir*' means one who conceals or rejects the truth of Islam and a person who rejects Islam is in English called a 'non-Muslim'.

2.

If non-Muslims are hurt - they should accept Islam.

If any non-Muslim considers the word '*Kafir*' i.e. 'non-Muslim' as an abuse, he may choose to accept Islam and then we will stop referring to him as or call him a *kafir* i.e. a non-Muslim.

MOST COMMON QUESTIONS

ASKED BY NON MUSLIMS

ABOUT ISLAM

1. WHY DID PROPHET MUHAMMAD (pbuh) HAVE ELEVEN WIVES?

Question:

When a Muslim is allowed to marry a maximum of four wives, how is it that Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) had eleven wives?

Answer:

The Qur'an, in Surah Nisa, chapter 4 verse 3, states that a Muslim is allowed to marry a maximum of only four wives. Another verse in the Qur'an makes Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) an exception to this rule.

In Surah Ahzab chapter 33 verse 52:

"It is not lawful for thee (to marry more) women after this, nor to change them for (other) wives, even though their beauty attract thee, except any thy right hand should possess (as hand maidens) and Allah doth watch over all things ".

[Al-Qur'an 33:52]

This verse clearly gives Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) the permission to keep all his previous wives but prohibits him to marry any more women except those which his right hand possessed i.e. slave girls

The Prophet (pbuh) was allowed to keep all his previous wives because no one was allowed to marry the Prophet's wives (ra) after they were divorced or widowed as they were *ummul-momineen* (mother of the believers)

People falsely accuse the Prophet (pbuh) of being hypersexual, because he had eleven wives. If you read the life history of the Prophet (pbuh), only two of his marriages, one with Khadija (ra), and the other, with Ayesha (ra) were marriages in the normal course. All his other marriages were contracted as a necessity and were based on various considerations.

The first marriage of the Prophet (pbuh) took place when he was 25 years of age and he married Khadija (ra) who was twice widowed, and was 40 years old. If the Prophet (pbuh) was hypersexual, why would he marry a woman who was 15 years older than him and already twice widowed?

Until his first wife, Khadija (ra) was alive, he never took a second wife. Khadija (ra) expired when the Prophet (pbuh) was 50 years age and only after this, did he marry the others. If he married eleven wives for sexual reasons, he should have had multiple wives during his youth. Contrary to this, history tells us that all his marriages with his remaining ten wives took place when he was between the age of 53 and 59 years.

All his wives (ra) were between the age of 36 to 50 years, except for two wives (ra). His reputation had spread far and wide, not only in Arabia, but also in the neighbouring countries. Could he not have easily got younger and lovelier girls to marry? Most of his marriages were for political gain and for the spread of Islam.

In Arabia, no one could carry on the work of reform and upliftment unless he belonged to, or was related to some specific and respectable tribe. Thus, in the interest of his mission, the Prophet (pbuh) needed inter-tribal relationships. He wanted to weld the quarreling tribal and clannish factions into one Muslim *ummah,* as brethren in faith (Ikhwan fi'd-din).

For instance, his wife Juwayriyya (ra) belonged to the Banu Mustaliq clan, which was very powerful. The entire clan was a bitter enemy of Islam from the start, and they were finally suppressed by military action. When the Prophet (pbuh) married Juwayriyya (ra), the Muslims released all their prisoners, saying that they could not keep the prophet's relatives in bondage. It was due to this marriage that the whole clan of Banu Mustaliq accepted Islam and became peaceful and obedient to the laws of the new Islamic state.

Maymunah (ra) also came from a very powerful and recalcitrant clan from Najd and was the sister of the wife of the chief of the clan in those days. It was this clan which had brutally murdered seventy members of an Islamic missionary deputation. The Prophet's (pbuh) marriage with Maymunah (ra) changed the whole atmosphere and Najd accepted Madinah's authority under the leadership of the Prophet (pbuh).

Umm Habibah (ra) was the daughter of the Quraysh chief, Abu Sufyan. It was after the Prophet's (pbuh) marriage to Umm Habibah, that Abu Sufyan never fought against the Prophet (pbuh). This marriage was largely responsible for the conquest of Makkah. Furthermore, Umm Habibah was first married to a certain Ubaydullah and emigrated with him to Abyssinia, where Ubaydullah became a Christian and a drunkard. Excessive consumption of wine killed him since it was a double shock to her that her husband had become a Christian and later died, she was badly in need of solace.

Safiyyah (ra) was the daughter of a very prominent Jewish chief, Huyyah ibn Aktab. In consideration of her family status, she could not be merged into an ordinary household. So the Prophet (pbuh) himself married her. After this

marriage, the Jews did not dare to revive their opposition to the Prophet (pbuh) and his mission.

In the case of Hafsah (ra), it was the Prophet's (pbuh) desire to bind in relationship with those of his great companions (sahabah) who were his advisers and who were trained for future leadership. He had married Abu Bakr's (ra) daughter, married two of his own daughters to Uthman (ra) and one to 'Ali (ra). 'Umar (ra) could not be kept outside this wide circle of relationship. By marrying Umar's daughter Hafsah (ra), the Prophet (pbuh) forged a strong bond of relationship within the Islamic movement thus strengthening the pillars of the *ummah*.

The Prophet (pbuh) had married his first cousin, Zaynab (ra), to his freed slave, Zayd ibn Haritha (ra), whom he had adopted as his son. This marriage of Zaynab (ra) with Zayd (ra) was intended to break the family and social barriers, but the marriage did not prove to be successful and ended in divorce. When the Prophet (pbuh) saw that Zaynab (ra) was left alone, he felt his responsibility in the matter. He also had to break another convention, according to which an adopted son became a real son. This difficult problem was solved by the Prophet's (pbuh) marriage to Zaynab (ra) (as mentioned in the Qur'an, in Surah Ahzab, chapter no 33 verse 37) to annul that pre-Islamic conception and promulgate an Islamic law instead.

Another lady Zaynab (ra), *Umm al Masakin* (mother of the poor and helpless), daughter of Khuzayma ibn Al-Haith, belonged to the Hawazin clan. Her husband was killed in the battle of Uhud. To rescue her from widowhood, the Prophet (pbuh) took her as his wife.

After the revelation of the verse in Surah Ahzab, chapter 33 verse 52, the Prophet (pbuh) only married Mary the Copt who was a slave girl sent as a present by the Christian Muqauqas of Egypt. Since the Christian Chieftain of Egypt sent Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) a slave girl as a present, he could not refuse this gift as a refusal would have disturbed the political alliance. He could not keep her as a slave girl, since Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) preached that slaves should be freed. The only option left with him was to marry her, since the Qur'an gave him the permission to do so. Later on she became the mother of Ibrahim (ra) who died in his infancy.

2. WOMEN CAN GIVE DIVORCE

Question:

Does Islam permit women to give divorce? What are the different types of divorce in Islam?

Answer:

'Talaq' is an arabic word used for 'divorce' when given by a husband to his wife. A woman can very well divorce the husband in Islam, but this is not called *'talaq'*.

According to Sunan Abu Dawood, Hadith No. 2172 and 2173 which is also mentioned in Sunan Ibn-i-Majah, Hadith No. 2018, the Prophet (pbuh) said that among the permissible things, the most hateful in the sight of Allah, is divorce. However the following conditions need to be fulfilled.

a. The person should not be in a state of intoxication while giving divorce.

b. The person should be in a sound state of mind and not mentally unstable.

c. Before deciding on giving a divorce there should be a mutual talk regarding the situation between the husband and the wife.

d. According to Surah Nisa, chapter 4 verse 35, if the talks fail, two arbiters should be appointed, one from the husband's family and the other from the wife's family. In short, have a family meeting to avoid divorce.

e. Only if all these measures fails, can a person go ahead to give divorce.

f. According to Surah Al-Talaq, chapter 65 verse 2, while pronouncing *Talaq*, two persons endued with justice should be taken as witnesses.

There are five different types of divorce in Islam:-

1. With the mutual consent of both the husband and the wife. Here both may agree that they are not compatible with each other.

2. With the unilateral will of the husband. Here, the husband has to forego the *'meher'*, that is, the dower he has given to the wife. In case any amount of meher has remained unpaid, he should give it to the wife.

3. With the unilateral will of the wife. This is only permissible if she specifies it in her marital contract that she too will have the right of unilateral divorce. This is called as *Ismah* or *talaq-e-taufid.*

4. If the husband ill-treats or neglects his wife or does not maintain her properly, she has a right to go to a judge and nullify the marriage. This is called as *Nikah-e-fask*. Here, the judge decides whether the husband has to give the complete amount of *meher* or part of it to the wife.

5. The last type is called *'Khula'*. Here the husband may be very good, but due to personal reasons, the wife may wish to separate. Here, with the permission of the husband she can separate but she has to forgo her marital gift, that is, her *meher*.

Some jurists give different names for the above described divorces, while many club the different types of divorce and broadly divide the different types into two or three categories.

3. "ALLAH" IS MORE APROPRIATE THAN GOD

Question:

Why do Muslims call God, 'Allah'?

Answer:

1. A person can play around with the English word 'God':

Muslims prefer calling Allah (swt) as Allah, instead of the English word 'God'. The Arabic word 'Allah' is pure and unique, unlike the English word 'God' which can be played around with.

2. God + s = Gods:

If you add the alphabet 'S' to 'God', it becomes 'Gods', that is plural of God. Allah is One and Singular. There is no plural of Allah.

3. God + dess = Goddess:

If you add 'dess' to 'God' it becomes 'Goddess', that is a female God. There is nothing like male 'Allah' or female 'Allah'. Allah has no gender.

4. God + Father = Godfather:

If you add the word 'father' to 'God', it becomes 'Godfather'. "He is my Godfather" i.e. he is my guardian. There is nothing like 'Allah Abba' or 'Allah father' in Islam.

5. God + Mother = Godmother:

If you add the word 'mother' to 'God' it becomes 'Godmother'. There is nothing like 'Allah Ammi' or 'Allah mother' in Islam.

6. Tin + God = Tingod:

If you put 'tin' before 'God' it becomes 'Tin-God' i.e. a fake God. There is nothing like 'tin Allah' or 'fake Allah' in Islam.

7. Allah is an Unique Word:

'Allah' is an unique word, with which can neither conjure up a mental picture, nor can it be played around with. 'Allah' is the name mentioned for the One Unique and True God, in the Qur'an. Therefore, Muslims prefer calling God, 'Allah'. But sometimes while speaking to non-Muslims we may have to use the inappropriate word 'God', for Allah.

4. WISHING SALAAM TO A NON-MUSLIM

Question:

Why can't a Muslim wish Assalamu Alaykum (Peace be on you) to a Non-Muslim?

Answer:

1. Greet back more courteously:

It is mentioned in the Qur'an in Surah Nisa Chapter 4 verse 86

"When a (courteous) greeting is offered you, meet it with a greeting still more Courteous, or (at least) of equal courtesy. Allah takes careful account of all things."

[Al-Qur'an 4:86]

If someone wishes you 'Assalamu Alaykum' (meaning Peace be on you) you have to wish back more courteously 'Wa Alaykum Salam Wa Rahmatullah' (Peace and mercy of Allah be upon you). If someone wishes you 'Assalamu Alaykum Wa Rahmatullah' then you have to wish back 'Wa Alaykum Assalam Wa Rahamatullahi Wa Barkatuhu' (May peace, mercy and blessings of Allah be on you).

If someone says 'Assalamu Alaykum', you can say loudly, with expression of enthusiasm 'Walaykum Assalam'. Though the words are the same they emerge from the depth of one's heart with more feelings.This is also more courteous.

If someone wishes you (with expression) 'Assalamu Alaykum Wa Rahamatullahi Wa Barkatuhu' and if you cannot greet back more courteously then atleast greet back with equal courtesy (with expression) 'Wa Alaykum Assalam Wa Rahmatullah Wa Barkatuhu'.

2. Many Muslims think that we cannot wish Salaams to a Non-Muslim:

There is a misconception among many Muslims who think that a Muslim cannot wish 'Assalamu Alaykum' to a Non-Muslim nor can he reply to the salutation. In Sahih Muslim in the "Kitab us Salaam" chapter 904 Hadith no. 5382 Allah's Messenger (Pbuh) is reported to have said, "when the Jews offer you salutations, some of them say 'Assam-Alaykum' (death be on you). You should say (in response to it) 'let it be upon you' i.e. 'Alaykum'.

3. Qur'an gives permission to wish 'Assalamu Alaykum' to Non-Muslims:

a. The Qur'an mentions in Surah Mariam chapter 19 verse 41 - 46 that the father of Prophet Ibrahim was a mushrik (polytheist) and associated partners with God. When Prophet Ibrahim (Pbuh) asked his father not to serve the satan, his father replied, 'I will stone you' and removed Ibrahim out of the house. Prophet Ibrahim (Pbuh) replies in Surah Mariam chapter 19 verse 47

"Abraham said: 'peace be on thee (Assalaamu Alaikum): I will pray to my Lord for thy forgiveness: for He is to me Most Gracious.'"

[Al-Qur'an 19:47]

b. Allah instructs Moses and Aaron in Surah Taha chapter 20 verse 47

that when they go to Pharoah they should say:

"And Peace (Salaams) to all who follow guidance".

[Al-Qur'an 20:47]

This was the same greeting also used by Prophet Muhammad (Pbuh) to greet Non-Muslim rulers.

c. Surah Al Furqan chapter 25 verse 63

"And the servants of (Allah) Most Gracious are those who walk on the earth in humility, and when the ignorant address them, they say, 'Peace!' (salaam)."

[Al-Qur'an 25:63]

d. Surah Al Qasas chapter 28 verse 55 (28:55)

"And when they hear vain talk, they turn away there from and say: 'to us our deeds, and to you yours; peace (Salaams) be to you: we

Seek not the ignorant.' "

[Al-Qur'an 28:55]

5. WOMEN IN THE MOSQUE

Question:

Why are women not allowed in the mosque?

Answer:

1. There is not a single verse in the Qur'an which prohibits women from entering the mosque and there is no single authentic Hadith which I know of which states that the Prophet (pbuh) prevented or forbade women from going to the mosque.

There is only one Hadith which could be misunderstood to mean that women should not go to the mosque. That Hadith is as follows: 'The prayer of women is better in their house than in the mosque and the prayer of women is better in their rooms than in their house.'

If you base your conclusion only on this single Hadith, then you may wrongly conclude that it is not advisable or preferable for women to go to the mosque. As I mentioned earlier, your conclusion cannot be based only on one Hadith neglecting or ignoring all the other Ahadith. The context of the Hadith is also very important.

The Prophet (pbuh) said that if a person prays in the mosque he gets 27 times more blessings (Sawab). Some women argued that they had infants at home and other household work and therefore could not go to the mosque. Thus the men have a greater advantage than women for receiving such blessings. It is then that the Prophet said the above Hadith that 'The prayer of women is better in their house than in the mosque and the prayer of women is better in their rooms than in their house'.

Hence, the conclusion is that in situations where women have infants and household work, which too is an important duty that cannot be neglected, women would not be deprived of the sawab (blessings) if they pray in their own house.

2. There are several Ahadith which prove that both men and women went to the mosque during the life of the prophet:

(i) The Prophet said, 'Do not prevent the female servants of Allah from going to the mosque of Allah.'

(ii) And husbands were specifically told by him, “ When your women folk ask you for permission to attend the mosque, do not prevent them.”

(Sahih Bukhari Volume 1, Book of Salaah, Chapter 80, Hadith No. 832)

(iii) From the time the Prophet (pbuh) entered Madinah, after Hijra, till his demise, he never prevented women from entering the mosque.

(iv) During the time of the Prophet (pbuh), women not only went to the mosque for prayer but also for religious education and literary discussions as the mosque was the centre of community. Several Ahadith tell us that the Prophet (pbuh) addressed people in the mosque, and the audience consisted of both Muslim men and women, and women many a times asked questions to the Prophet (pbuh) in the mosque.

(v) Even at the time of Hazrat Umar (R) women went to the mosque. The famous incident in which a lady from the back seat of the mosque objected to Hazrat Umar (R) considering an upper limit to meher, is very well known.

(vi) During the Prophet’s (pbuh) time, mosques had separate entrances for ladies. Women filled the mosques from behind while men had separate entrances and filled the mosques from the front. In between the two sections were children who acted as a buffer zone.

(vii) It is reported by Abu Husainah that the Prophet (Pbuh) said: “The best row for men is the first, and the worst for them is the last. The best row for women is the last, and the worst is the first.” (Muslim)

3. Islam permits women to pray in mosques. Ladies should have separate and equal facilities. Islam does not permit the intermingling of sexes. Otherwise there will be a similar scene in mosques like other places of worship where some people even come for ‘bird watching’ and eve teasing.

4. In recent times, women are not allowed in mosques in a very few countries especially in India and the neighbouring countries. Otherwise in most of the other countries, women are allowed in mosques. Women are allowed in mosques in Saudi Arabia, in U.A.E, in Egypt, in U.S.A, in England, etc. They are also allowed in the Haram Shareef in Makkah and in Masjid - e - Nabawi in Madinah.

Allahamdulillah, the trend is now changing in India . We have several mosques in India and a few in Mumbai which allow women to pray in mosques (masjid).

6. WHO CREATED ALLAH?

Question:

Who created Allah?

Answer:

This is a very tricky Question asked usually by atheists and rationalists.

Once a close friend of mine, while beginning a da'wah discussion with a rationalist in an atheist organisation in Bombay asked, "This is a pencil. How did it come into existence? It has to have a creator. This is a book. How did it come into existence? It has to have a creator." Thus by giving answers to his own questions, he proved that everything has a creator. He then posed the following questions: "If the pencil is created in a factory, who created the factory? The answer is an engineer or some similar person. Who created that engineer? There also has to be a Creator of this engineer. Similarly who created the sun, the moon, the stars, etc.? There has to be a creator for everything". Then he posed the question, "Do you agree that everything has a creator?" The atheist replied, "We will agree only on the condition that you should not back out in future from your own statement that everything has a creator." My friend was satisfied. He thought he had succeeded in convincing him about God and said, "Yes I will stick to my statement that everything has a creator, but you still have not replied my Question: that who created the human beings, the sun, the moon, the stars, etc." He further helps him with the answer by saying, "It is God Almighty". The atheist replied, "We will believe in God if you tell us who created God." My friend got the biggest shock of his life. He knew he was trapped. He was so disturbed that he did not sleep for the whole night.

Next day, he narrated this incident to me. I realised that he was using the methodology of proving the existence of God advocated by some scholars. In this methodology, a very important rule of logic, i.e. self analysis, is overlooked.

During my talks, while proving the existence of Allah (SWT), I never make any statement saying everything has a creator. I start by asking the atheist, "Who will be the first to know the mechanism of an unknown object?" It is the atheist who replies the creator, the manufacturer, not I. Using his answer that the creator is the first person who knows the mechanism of any object, I further prove to him using scientific knowledge that the creator of the Universe, i.e. Almighty God is the first to know the mechanism of the universe and has mentioned it in his book 'The Quran'. But if somebody was to pose me the same question that who will be the first to know the mechanism of an unknown object, I will not reply just by saying 'the creator' or 'the Manufacturer' but I will reply, that every object and all things which have a beginning, the mechanism of all these things will be first known by its creator, since they are all created things. Even after using this answer of mine, we can still scientifically prove that all the signs that we see i.e. the sun, the moon, the earth, etc. have a beginning.

Now if someone asks me the Question “Who created Allah?” I will reply that once my friend asked me a similar question that his brother Tom was admitted to the hospital and he conceived and gave birth to a baby: guess, is the baby a girl or a boy? It is an absurd statement. Only females can conceive and give birth to a baby. It is impossible for Tom, who is a male, to conceive and give a birth to a child. One of the qualities and characteristics of a male is that he cannot conceive and give birth to a child. Similarly one of the characteristics of Allah is that He is uncreated and does not have a beginning. Therefore asking a question, “Who created the uncreated?” is as absurd as asking, “My brother Tom conceived and gave birth to a child, is the child a girl or a boy?”

8. WHY IS BUILDING OF TEMPLES AND CHURCHES AND PROPAGATING OTHER RELIGIONS PROHIBITED IN SAUDI ARABIA?

Question:

Why is building of temples and churches and the propagation of any religion other than Islam not allowed in Islamic countries like Saudi Arabia?

Answer:

1. Example of selecting a Maths teacher:

Suppose you are a principal of a school and you have to select a Mathematics teacher. It is obvious that you will interview the candidates. If one teacher says that 2 + 2 = 3, the other says 2 + 2 = 4 and the third says 2 + 2 = 5 whom will you select? Since you know mathematics is logical, you will never select or allow a person to teach mathematics who doesn’t even know the basics of arithmetic that
2 + 2 = 4.

2. Where religion is concerned Muslims are experts:

Similarly in the field of religion, Muslims are the best and Qur’an clearly mentions in Surah Ale Imran, Chapter 3, verse 19 (3:19):

“The Religion before Allah is Islam (submission to His will)”.

[Al-Qur’an 3:19]

It is further mentioned In Surah Ale Imran Chapter 3, verse 85 (3:85)

“If anyone desires a religion other than Islam (submission to Allah), never will it be accepted of him; and in the Hereafter he will be in the ranks of those who have lost (All spiritual good).”

[Al-Qur'an 3:85]

3. No other religious scripture claims that its religion alone is true.

There is no other religious scripture on the face of the earth besides the Qur'an which says that only its religion is true, correct and acceptable to Almighty God, and that all the other religions are false and hence not acceptable to Almighty God.

If you are a principal who knows Maths, you will never allow a person to teach Maths in your school who does not know Maths. Similarly we Muslims who are experts in the field of religion and know that Islam is the only true religion, will not allow anyone to preach any other religion besides Islam. We Muslims also know that what the true concept of Almighty God i.e. Allah (SWT) is, and thus we will not permit anyone to build a place of worship where they worship anyone besides Allah (swt).

9. MUSLIMS PRAY FIVE TIMES A DAY

Question:

Why do Muslims have to pray five times every day. Isn't praying once a day sufficient?

Answer:

1. Salaah is not merely Prayer

Salaah does not merely mean to pray. According to the Oxford dictionary, 'pray' means to beseech or to ask earnestly e.g. "He prayed to be released in the court of law." It also means supplication. In other religions to pray means to beseech or to supplicate e.g. 'Our Lord! Give us this day our daily bread.' The Dua' we Muslims make after Salaah is actually our supplication.

2. Salaah is Programming

Salaah is much more than merely praying. In Salaah we not only ask from Allah but we also thank Him, praise Him, and at the same time receive guidance from Him. Salaah in the true sense is "programming" or conditioning.

3. Unlike computers humans have free will

Computers require programming because they do not have a free will of their own. Humans have their own free will and with the various kinds of evil that are present in society such as eve-teasing, cheating, bribing, robbing, alcoholism, drug addiction, obscenity, etc., there is every possibility of the human

being getting deprogrammed. Thus it is compulsory that we should regularly be programmed to remain on the Siraatal Mustaqim that is, the Straight Path.

4. Healthy body requires 3 meals a day, spiritual soul requires 5 times Salaah a day

For a healthy body three meals a day are required. Similarly for a spiritual soul , a minimum five times Salaah is required in a day. You cannot remain healthy by having only one meal a day.

5. According to the Qur'an Muslims should pray minimum five times a day:

It is mentioned in:

(i) Surah Hud Chapter 11 Verse 114:

"And establish regular prayers at the two ends of the day and at the approaches of the night: for those things that are good remove those that are evil: be that the word of remembrance to those who remember (their Lord)".

[Al-Qur'an 11:114]

(ii) Surah Al-Isra Chapter 17 Verse 78:

"Establish regular prayers – at the sun's decline till the darkness of the night, and the morning prayer and reading: for the prayer and reading in the morning carry their testimony".

[Al-Qur'an 17:78]

(iii) Surah Ta-Ha Chapter 20 Verse 130

"Therefore be patient with what they say, and celebrate (constantly) the praises of thy Lord before the rising of the sun, and before its setting; Yea, celebrate them for part of the hours of the night, and at the sides of the day: that thou mayest have (spiritual) joy".

[Al-Qur'an 20:130]

(iv) Surah Rum Chapter 30 Verses 17-18:

"So (give) glory to Allah, when ye reach eventide and when ye rise In the morning; Yea, to Him be praise, in the heavens and on earth; and in the late afternoon and when the day begins to decline".

(v) Timings of 5 times Salaah:

The 5 daily prescribed Salaah are:

Fajr Between the break of dawn and sunrise.

Zuhar After the sun reaches its highest point that is when the sun starts declining early in the afternoon till the shadow becomes twice the size of the object or till the point between noon and sunset.

Asr Late in the afternoon after Zuhur until sun begins to set.

Magrib After sunset until disappearance of twilight.

Isha Late in the evening or in the night after disappearance of twilight until the break of Fajr but preferably offered before midnight.

10. WHY DOES ALLAH REQUIRE PRAISES?

Question

Why does Allah require us to praise Him? What benefit does he get?

Answer

1. Allahu Akbar doesn't make Allah Great:

Allah (SWT) does not require our praises for His benefit. When we say 'Allahu Akbar' meaning Allah is the Greatest, He does not become greater. He is already the Greatest whether we say a million times Allahu Akbar or we don't say. It will make no difference in his greatness. He will yet remain the Greatest.

2. We Praise Allah for our benefit:

It is mentioned in the Qur'an in Surah Fatir chapter 35 verse 15

"O ye men! It is ye that have need of Allah: but Allah is the One Free of all wants,

worthy of all praise."

[Al-Qur'an 35:15]

Allah (SWT) is free of all wants. He does not require us to praise Him. It is we human beings who require Allah (SWT) and we praise Him for our own benefits.

3. We praise Allah to convince ourselves that He is worthy to be obeyed and served.

We normally follow the advice of a person who is great, famous and important. A person who is intelligent and wise. We will not follow the advice of a stranger who is unknown or a person who is not intelligent nor wise. That is the reason that we praise Allah (SWT) that He is the Greatest, The Most Wise, The All Knowing, etc., to first convince ourselves that He is worthy to be followed then we ask Him to guide us and help us.

4. In Surah Fatihah we first recite praises of Allah then we seek His help:

That is the reason why Surah Fatiha or the opening Chapter of the Holy Qur'an is always recited in every rakaat of the Salaah. In the first 4 or 5 verses of Surah Fatihah we initially praise Allah (SWT).

"In the name of Allah, Most Gracious, Most Merciful. Praise be to Allah the Cherisher and Sustainer of the Worlds: Most Gracious, Most Merciful; Master of the Day of Judgement. Thee do we worship, And Thine aid we seek."

[Al-Qur'an 1:1-5]

Then later we ask Him for help for our own benefit.

"Show us the straight way, the way of those on whom Thou hast bestowed Thy Grace, those whose (portion) is not wrath, and who go not astray."

[Al-Qur'an 1:6-7]

Thus we first praise Allah (SWT) in Surah Fatihah and agree that He is Most Gracious, Most Merciful, The Chrisher, The Sustainer, The Master, etc, and then we ask Him for guidance and help.

5. Prefer treatment and advice from the best doctor:

If you are sick and have a heart problem and the best available heart specialist gives you advice, you will follow His advice. But if a stranger who has no knowledge of medicine or a quack gives you advice, you will not follow it.

6. If all the oceans were ink, it would not suffice to praise Allah:

Thus we praise Allah (SWT) for our own benefit. However much we may praise Him it is insufficient because the Holy Qur'an says in

Surah Kahf chapter 18 verse 109:

“Say: ‘If the ocean were ink (wherewith to write out) the words of my Lord, sooner would the ocean be exhausted than would the words of my Lord, even if We added another ocean like it, for its aid.’”

[Al-Qur’an 18:109]

7. If trees were pens and oceans were ink they would not suffice to write words of Allah.

A similar message is repeated in Surah Luqman chapter 31 verse 27

“And if all the trees on earth were pens and the Ocean (were ink), with seven oceans behind it to add to its (supply), yet would not the words of Allah be exhausted (in the writing): for Allah is Exalted in power, full of Wisdom.”

[Al-Qur’an 31:27]

8. We praise Allah to follow His commandments:

Allah (SWT) does not require us to praise Him for His benefit but He requires us to praise Him for our benefit. In Salaah while reciting verses of the Qur’an, we agree that He is Supreme and Ultimate and commit that we will follow His advice and commandments so that we stay on the siratal mustaqeem (straight path).

11. GOD IS UNJUST AS SOME ARE BORN HEALTHY WHILE OTHERS ARE BORN WITH DEFECTS

Question:

If God is just then why are some people born healthy while some are born with defects and are deaf and dumb, some people are born in rich families while others in poor families?

Answer:

1. This life is a test for the hereafter

According to Surah Mulk chapter 67 verse 2

“He Who created Death and Life, that He may try which of you is best in deed;

And He is the Exalted in Might, oft-Forgiving.”

[Al-Qur’an 67:2]

2. Allah tests different human beings in different ways

Every year the question paper in an examination keeps on changing. It does not remain the same. Similarly Allah tests different human beings in different ways. He gives health to some people while others are born with defects or are handicapped. To some people He gives wealth, while others are poor.

3. Judgement will be based upon the difficulty of the test

Depending upon what facilities and qualities Allah has provided to each human being, Allah (S.W.T.) will judge him accordingly. If the test is difficult then Allah will be lenient while judging. If the test is simple then Allah will not be lenient while judging. A poor person does not have to give Zakaah. He gets full marks where zakaat is concerned. On the other hand a rich person is supposed to give zakaat. Many rich people give much less than what they actually are supposed to give, thus getting less marks (or negative marks) where zakaat is concerned.

4. Human beings with congenital defects are a test for their parents.

Many infants are born with congenital defects. Some are deaf and dumb, while others are handicapped. An infant is not responsible for his or her defect. In such cases perhaps Allah is testing the parents, whether they yet have faith in Him after this misfortune.

Allah says in the Qur'an in Surah Anfal Chapter 8 verse 28

“And know ye that your possession and your progeny are but a trial; and that it is Allah with whom lies your highest reward”.

[Al-Qur’an 8:28]

13. RELIGION OR WAY OF LIFE SHOULD NOT BE RIGID BUT BE FLEXIBLE.

Questions:

Religion or a way of life, should not be rigid but should be flexible. Islam is very rigid, has several rules, with do’s and don’ts. Why is it so?

Answer:

The brother has asked a very good question. He asks, “Why is Islam such a rigid religion with do’s and don’ts, although a religion as a way of life should be flexible and not rigid. I agree with the brother, that religion as a way of life should be flexible and not rigid, (every rule and regulation for anything to function properly then should at least be a few sets of fixed rules). Overall I agree with you that a way of life should be flexible, but a few set of rules are necessary for any system to function properly. For example, if the government of India has to function well there should be a few set of rules e.g. no one should rape, no one should rob, no one should cheat. If you do not have these rules, so as to be flexible, then someone could come and rape your sister or rape my sister. Would you like a life, where someone comes and robs you. Do you not agree that if the country has to run properly at least few rules have to be enacted / implemented, viz no one should rob, no one should rape, no one should cheat. Other things are necessary e.g. you become a doctor, you become an engineer, you stay in Bombay, you stay in Delhi are optional. Similarly in Islam, there are a few do’s and don’ts, while every thing else is optional. A few do’s and don’ts for example, you should believe in only One God; you should offer Salaah; you should give charity if you are rich; you should fast during the month of Ramzan; should be there. Remaining you can be a Muslim living in India, whether you are a Muslim living in America or in Saudi Arabia. Whether you are black or white, or yellow or brown or rich or poor, you are a Muslim. Is not Islam flexible? Yes, most of the things are flexible.

For any system to be successful, there has to be basic set of rules which are fixed. For example, if you want to learn English, you should know A,B,C,D. The styles of teaching may differ. St. Peter’s School may have a different style of teaching English language i.e. reading, writing and understanding. St. Mary’s School may have a different style from Rosary School. If you go to America, they have a different type of English from Britain, but the basic rule is same i.e. A,B,C,D. Whether you are in America or India or St. Peter’s School or St. Mary’s School, if you want to read and write and understand English, first you should know A,B,C,D. There is no other option. That rule is fixed. Other things like pronunciation etc. may differ. You may teach with pictures or teach with pencils or with paper - the style will differ. The Basic rules should be the same. If you want to know Maths, you should know 1,2,3, or else you cannot do maths. Thus, the basic set of rules should be there.

The same is in Islam. There are a few do’s and don’ts, whereas the remaining are optional. When it comes to wearing clothes, a few basic rules exist. A man should cover himself from navel to knees whereas a woman’s complete body except face, hands up to the wrists should be covered - clothes should not be tight or transparent, clothes should not be glamorous, clothes should not resemble that of the opposite sex, and should not resemble that of the unbeliever. You can wear cotton or terricotton, or georjetor the latest or old model shirt. You can imitate Amitabh Bachan or Raj Kapoor as long as it fulfills the Islamic criteria, the rest is optional. Whether you wear a blue shirt or green shirt, or a white shirt, or black shirt, so far as you fulfill the Islamic criteria. For every system to be successful, a little rigidity must be there. So I agree with you that life should

not be fully rigid. Islam is not fully rigid but it is the media which portrays Islam as very rigid. For the complete life to be successful, the basic fundamentals should be fixed, along with a few options. For example, few rules for eating of food – Pork is haram, alcohol is haram. On the other hand, you can have chicken, or mutton biryani, or veg. pulav or roti.

There are many options but the do's and don'ts are few. Therefore , for any manner of life to be successful, a few of the rules should be rigid and the remaining should be flexible, and Islam is the best example. *Alhamdulillah* it shows a complete way of life which caters to the body as well as to the soul. It is a complete way of life along with the Instruction Manual - The Qur'an just as every machine requires a manual, human beings also require a manual with do's and don'ts are very essential.

Hope that answers the question and hope that summarizes everyone's answer also.

15. WOMEN AS A HEAD OF STATE

Question:

Is a woman allowed to be a head of state?

Answer:

There is no direct reference in the Quran, which says that a woman should not be a head of state. However since Islam considers man to be the leader of the house, therefore the head of the state should also be a man.

There is a Hadith in which the Prophet said that people will not succeed if they have a woman as the head of state. Some Scholars say this refers only to a particular state at the time of the prophet i.e. Persia where a Queen was made the leader.

(**Sahih Al-Bukhari 9.219**)

But all the Scholars unanimously agree that a woman cannot be a Khalifa.

Let us analyze the pros and cons of a woman being the head of state in the present context:

1. The head of State has to lead congregational prayers. A woman cannot be an Imam because during prayers (Salaah) there are several postures to be adopted such as Qayam, Ruku, Sujud, that is standing, bowing and prostration, and if a woman leads prayers, with men standing behind, it is bound to create disturbance and distraction.

2. The head of state very often has to meet other heads of state who are usually men. Many a times they have to have private closed-door meetings. Islam does not permit a woman to be alone in a closed room with any Non-mahram (i.e. a male except her father, brother, husband, son, father-in-law, son-in-law). Islam does not permit Inter-mingling of sexes.

3. There is usually a lot of media exposure of the head of state. Photographs and Video recordings are regularly taken. There is normally some physical contact between the head of State and other dignitaries, including hand shakes.

4. The head of state has to normally meet women and men regularly to attend to them and to try help solve their problems.

5. During the menstrual cycle, there are certain mental, psychological and behavioral changes, which take place in women due to the release of the sex hormone oestrogen.

6. According to Medical Science, women in general perform better than men in vocal and verbal skills irrespective of the level of oestrogen. Men perform better in Spatial relationships which is the ability to see or imagine objects in space for e.g. think in advance how a building or a project will turn out.

The decision of a leader is related mainly to this spatial relationship skill.

Verbal, vocal and other skills of a woman are very important for her as a mother to raise a child. Here Allah (SWT) has given women an edge over men.

This study was done by two psychologists of Canada both of whom were women.

7. If a woman gets pregnant, she requires rest for at least a few months during which she will not be able to attend to the duties as a head of state.

8. If she has children, her responsibility as a mother is important than that as a head of state.

Therefore I am more inclined to the view of those scholars who say that a woman should not be made the head of state. However this does not mean that women cannot take active part in politics. They have a right to vote as well as take part in law making.

When the treaty of Hudaibiya was signed most of the people were disturbed. It was the wife of the Prophet, Umme - Salma, who gave him advice and supported him. Though the Prime minister is the most important person in our country, many a times the advisers and the personal assistants are the ones that shape the decisions and have more influence.

16. WHY MUSLIMS CANNOT MARRY NON-MUSLIMS ?

Question:

Why are Muslims not allowed to marry Non-Muslims?

Answer:

1. Qur'an Prohibits Muslims to marry unbelievers.

Qur'an mentions in Surah Baqarah chapter 2 verse 221

"Do not marry unbelieving women until they believe: a slave woman who believes is better than an unbelieving woman even though she allure you. Nor Marry (your girls) to unbelievers until they believe: a man slave who believes is better than an unbeliever even though he allure you. Unbelievers do (but) beckon you to the Fire. But Allah beckons by His Grace to the Garden (of Bliss) and forgiveness, and makes His signs clear to mankind: that they may receive admonition".

[Al-Qur'an 2:221]

2. This life is a test for Here-after:

According to the Qur'an in Surah Mulk chapter 67 verse 2

"He Who created Death and Life, that He may try which of you is best in deed,

and He is the Exalted in Might, Oft-Forgiving".

[Al-Qur'an 67:2]

3. Concept of Salvation cannot differ amongst Life-Partners:

The ultimate goal and salvation for every muslim is to attain paradise in the Hereafter. A true husband or a wife will also want his/her spouse to attain paradise in the here-after. How can two life-partners live together if their ultimate goal i.e. Salvation differs? Or if the ways that they have chosen to lead to this goal are different? Such a marriage would be like a vehicle whose one tyre is that of a cycle while the other tyre is that of a truck. How will the vehicle run smoothly? Similarly if the beliefs or concepts of salvation of the spouses differ then how can they live in congruence and achieve marital harmony?

18. FASTING

Question :

Why do Muslims starve the complete day during all the days of the month of Ramadhan?

Answer:

1. Fasting controls desire:

The Qur'an mentions in Surah Baqarah chapter 2 verse 183

"O ye who believe! Fasting is prescribed to you as it was prescribed to those before you, that ye may (learn) self-restraint".

[Al-Qur'an 2:183]

Psychologists say that if you can control your hunger, you can control almost all your desires. The Qur'an rightly mentions that fasting helps you to learn self-restraint i.e. in controlling your desires.

2. Helps to inculcate good habits:

Along with fasting during the holy month of Ramadhan many Muslims do good deeds like charity, helping the poor, etc. which later on become a part of their routine activity in their lives.

3. Helps to Overcome many Evils:

In the holy month of Ramadhan, besides fasting, the person tends to be more pious which helps to overcome many evils. If a person can abstain from smoking cigarettes from dawn to dusk in Ramadhaan, he can also abstain from smoking cigarettes from the cradle to the grave. Smoking is haraam forbidden in Islam. If a person can abstain from drinking alcohol from dawn to dusk, he can also abstain from drinking alcohol from the cradle to the grave. All intoxicants are forbidden in Islam.

4. Every Machine requires servicing:

Every Machine requires regular servicing. We service our car or motor-cycle once every 3 to 4 months. The more complicated a machine is, more is the requirement for servicing.

5. Fasting is Servicing of Human-Beings:

If you allow me to call human-being a machine, I would say it is the most complicated machine on the face of the earth. Don't you think it requires servicing? According to me, fasting during the month of Ramadhan is the annual servicing of the human body and spirit, i.e. once in a year during one complete month.

6. Fasting gives rest to Body:

During fasting Muslims abstain from food, drink, etc. from dawn to dusk. While fasting many organs of the body get rest which is important for their good health.

7. Medical Benefits of Fasting:

a. Increases the Intestinal absorption: Fasting increases intestinal absorption.

b. Lowers cholestrol: Fasting also lowers cholestrol level which prevents several Cardio-Vascular diseases.

19. PRAYERS NOT ANSWERED

Question

Why are all prayers and supplications not answered or fulfilled by Allah (SWT)?

Answer

1. You may dislike a thing which is good for you (2:216)

The reply to this question is given in the Holy Qur'an In Surah Baqarah chapter 2 verse 216

"But it is possible that ye dislike a thing which is good for you, and that ye love a thing which is bad for you. But Allah knoweth, and ye know not."

[Al-Qur'an 2:216]

2. Praying for a motor cycle

There may be a very pious person who prays to Allah (SWT) for a motor cycle but the prayer is not answered. Allah knows very well that if the person acquires a motor cycle he will have an accident and get crippled. The Qur'an rightly says you may love a thing which is bad for you but Allah knows and you know not.

3. Businessman misses flight due to traffic jam:

Once a rich businessman was supposed to catch a flight to London in order to click a deal which would fetch him billions of rupees. While going to the airport to catch the flight, there was an unusual traffic jam on the road which prevented him from reaching the airport on time. The businessman misses the very flight and sorrowfully says "This is the worst thing that has ever happened to me in my life."

While returning back home he hears on the radio that the flight he was supposed to catch to London has crashed and all the passengers have died. The businessman happily says :this is the best thing that has ever happened to me in my life.

The businessman who was cursing the traffic jam a few minutes ago due to which he lost billions of rupees later is thankful that because of the same traffic jam his life was saved. Allah knew best that the life of the businessman was much more precious than the billions of rupees that he had lost. You may dislike a thing which is good for you, but Allah knows and you know not.

4. Surah Shuara chapter 42 verse 27

The Qur'an mentions in Surah Shuara chapter 42 verse 27

"If Allah were to enlarge the provision for His Servants, they would indeed transgress beyond all bounds through the earth; but He sends (it) down in due measure as He pleases. For He is with His servants well-aquainted, watchful."

[Al-Qur'an 42:27]

5. Surah Baqarah chapter 2 verse 186

It is mentioned in the Qur'an in Surah Baqarah chapter 2 verse 186

"When My servants ask thee concerning Me, I am indeed close (to them): I listen to the prayer of every suppliant when he calleth on Me:"

[Al-Qur'an 2:186]

6. Surah Ghafir chapter 40 verse 60

It is mentioned in Surah Ghafir chapter 40 verse 60

"And your Lord says: "Call on Me; I will answer your (Prayer): but those who are too arrogant to serve Me will surely find themselves in Hell – in humiliation!"

[Al-Qur'an 40:60]

7. Allah answers your prayer by not answering

Allah (SWT) says in the Qur'an that you call on Me and I will answer the prayer. These verses of the Qur'an are not falsified when your prayers are not answered. In fact Allah (SWT) in His divine wisdom answers your prayers by not answering them.

8. Unbelievers and unpious people have luxury

Some people wonder how is it that several unbelievers and unpious people lead a luxurious life. They worship false gods and pray to them for wealth. Since these people worship falsegods yet, Allah (SWT) answers their prayers and gives them wealth which is actually a material that will lead them away from Allah (SWT) and in the long run it is nothing but loss.

9. Believer remembers Allah whether rich or poor

A true believer is a person who, irrespective of whether he is rich or poor, remembers Allah (SWT). Allah (SWT) has described such people in Surah Al Noor chapter 24 verse 37

"By men whom neither traffic nor merchandise can divert from the remembrance of Allah nor from regular prayer, nor from the practice of regular Charity: their (only) fear is for the Day when hearts and eyes will be transformed (in a world wholly new)-"

[Al-Qur'an 24:37]

10. A True believer always says Allahamdullillah:

A true believer is a person who irrespective of what ever happens says, 'Allahamdulillah'. Praise be to Allah. Even when he goes in loss he says Allahamdullillah, because he has faith in Allah that if Allah permitted the loss to be incurred it has to be beneficial in the long run. In short he has faith in Allah, that whatever happens, happens for the good.

20. WHY DO MUSLIMS FOLLOW THE LUNAR CALENDAR?

Question:

Why do Muslims follow the lunar calendar instead of the solar calendar?

Answer:

1. As per the Solar calendar, every year the months fall in the same respective seasons. For e.g. the months of March, April and May in India will always have

summer, while July, August, September will always have monsoons i.e. rains. November, December and January will always have winter.

2. In the lunar calendar in different years the months fall in a different season.

The lunar calendar has about 11 days less than the solar calendar, thus, every year, the month of the lunar calendar occurs 11 days prior to what it had occurred in the previous solar year. Thus, in a span of about 33 lunar years a human being will have a taste of all the different seasons for one particular month of the lunar calendar. This is very important because the yearly activities of a Muslim are based on the lunar calendar and certain months like Ramzan and Hajj are very important to the Muslims. During Ramzan a Muslim has to fast which includes abstaining from food and drink from sunrise to sunset. If the Islamic months were based on the solar calendar where the seasons were fixed, then people living in certain parts of the world would have Ramzan in summer while in other parts of the world it would be winter. Some Muslims would have to fast for a longer period of time where the days are long while other Muslims would have to fast for shorter period of time where the days are short. If the seasons did not change, then Muslims living in some parts of the world would be at a disadvantage throughout their lives.

By following the lunar calendar, every Muslim has a taste of fasting in different seasons and for a different time period, in a span of about 33 years of his life.

Most Common Questions asked by Non-Muslims who have some knowledge of Islam

1. QUR'AN IS THE HANDIWORK OF MUHAMMAD AND NOT THE WORD OF GOD ?

Question:

Is it not true that Qur'an is the handiwork of Muhammad and not the work of God ?

Answer:

Under Construction

2. PRESENT QUR'AN IS NOT THE ORIGINAL BUT THAT OF USMAN (r.a.)

Question:

There were many versions of the Qur'an all of which were burnt by Usman (r.a.) except for one. Therefore is it not true that the present Qur'an is the one compiled by Usman (r.a.) and not the original revelation of God?

Answer:

One of the most common myths about the Qur'an, is that Usman (r.a.), the third Caliph of Islam authenticated and compiled one Qur'an, from a large set of mutually contradicting copies. The Qur'an, revered as the Word of Allah (swt) by Muslims the world over, is the same Qur'an as the one revealed to Prophet Muhammad (pbuh). It was authenticated and written under his personal supervision. We will examine the roots of the myth which says that Usman (r.a.) had the Qur'an authenticated.

1. Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) himself supervised and authenticated the written texts of the Qur'an

Whenever the Prophet received a revelation, he would first memorize it himself and later declare the revelation and instruct his Companions (R.A. – Radhi Allahu Taala Anhu) – May Allah be pleased with him who would also memorize it. The Prophet would immediately ask the scribes to write down the revelation he had received, and he would reconfirm and recheck it himself. Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) was an *Ummi* who could not read and write. Therefore, after receiving each revelation, he would repeat it to his Companions. They would write down the revelation, and he would recheck by asking them to read what they had written. If there was any mistake, the Prophet would immediately point it out and have it corrected and rechecked. Similarly he would even recheck and authenticate the portions of the Qur'an memorized by the Companions. In this way, the complete Qur'an was written down under the personal supervision of the prophet (pbuh).

2. Order and sequence of Qur'an divinely inspired

The complete Qur'an was revealed over a period of 22½ years portion by portion, as and when it was required. The Qur'an was not compiled by the Prophet in the chronological order of revelation. The order and sequence of the Qur'an too was Divinely inspired and was instructed to the Prophet by Allah (swt) through archangel Jibraeel. Whenever a revelation was conveyed to his companions, the Prophet would also mention in which *surah* (chapter) and after which ayat (verse) this new revelation should fit.

Every *Ramadhaan* all the portions of the Qur'an that had been revealed, including the order of the verses, were revised and reconfirmed by the Prophet with archangel Jibraeel. During the last *Ramadhaan,* before the demise of the Prophet, the Qur'an was rechecked and reconfirmed twice.

It is therefore clearly evident that the Qur'an was compiled and authenticated by the Prophet himself during his lifetime, both in the written form as well as in the memory of several of his Companions.

3. Qur'an copied on one common material

The complete Qur'an, along with the correct sequence of the verses, was present during the time of the Prophet (pbuh). The verses however, were written on separate pieces, scrapes of leather, thin flat stones, leaflets, palm branches, shoulder blades, etc. After the demise of the prophet, Abu Bakr (r.a.), the first caliph of Islam ordered that the Qur'an be copied from the various different materials on to a common material and place, which was in the shape of sheets. These were tied with strings so that nothing of the compilation was lost.

4. Usman (r.a.) made copies of the Qur'an from the original manuscript

Many Companions of the Prophet used to write down the revelation of the Qur'an on their own whenever they heard it from the lips of the Prophet. However what they wrote was not personally verified by the Prophet and thus could contain mistakes. All the verses revealed to the Prophet may not have been heard personally by all the Companions. There were high possibilities of different portions of the Qur'an being missed by different Companions. This gave rise to disputes among Muslims regarding the different contents of the Qur'an during the period of the third Caliph Usman (r.a.).

Usman (r.a.) borrowed the original manuscript of the Qur'an, which was authorized by the beloved Prophet (pbuh), from Hafsha (may Allah be pleased with her), the Prophet's wife. Usman (r.a.) ordered four Companions who were among the scribes who wrote the Qur'an when the Prophet dictated it, led by Zaid bin Thabit (r.a.) to rewrite the script in several perfect copies. These were sent by Usman (r.a.) to the main centres of Muslims.

There were other personal collections of the portions of the Qur'an that people had with them. These might have been incomplete and with mistakes. Usman (r.a.) only appealed to the people to destroy all these copies which did not match the original manuscript of the Qur'an in order to preserve the original text of the Qur'an. Two such copies of the copied text of the original Qur'an authenticated by the Prophet are present to this day, one at the museum in Tashkent in erstwhile Soviet Union and the other at the Topkapi Museum in Istanbul, Turkey.

5. Diacritical marks were added for non-Arabs

The original manuscript of the Qur'an does not have the signs indicating the vowels in Arabic script. These vowels are known as *tashkil, zabar, zair, paish* in Urdu and as *fatah, damma*and *qasra* in Arabic. The Arabs did not require the vowel signs and diacritical marks for correct pronunciation of the Qur'an since it was their mother tongue. For Muslims of non-Arab origin, however, it was difficult to recite the Qur'an correctly without the vowels. These marks were introduced into the Quranic script during the time of the fifth 'Umayyad' Caliph, Malik-ar-Marwan (66-86 Hijri/685-705 C.E.) and during the governorship of Al-Hajaj in Iraq.

Some people argue that the present copy of the Qur'an that we have along with the vowels and the diacritical marks is not the same original Qur'an that was present at the Prophet's time. But they fail to realize that the word 'Qur'an' means a recitation. Therefore, the preservation of the recitation of the Qur'an is important, irrespective of whether the script is different or whether it contains vowels. If the pronunciation and the Arabic is the same, naturally, the meaning remains the same too.

6. Allah Himself has promised to guard the Qur'an

Allah has promised in the Qur'an :

"We have, without doubt, sent down the Message; and We will assuredly Guard it (from corruption)."
[Al-Qur'an 15:9]

3. DOES ISLAM PROMOTE VIOLENCE?

Question:

Doesn't Islam promote violence, bloodshed and brutality since the Qur'an says that Muslims should kill the *kuffar* where ever they find them?

Answer:

A few selected verses from the Qur'an are often misquoted to perpetuate the myth that Islam promotes violence, and exhorts its followers to kill those outside the pale of Islam.

1. Verse from Surah Taubah

The following verse from Surah Taubah is very often quoted by critics of Islam, to show that Islam promotes violence, bloodshed and brutality:

"Kill the *mushriqeen* (pagans, polytheists, *kuffar*) where ever you find them."
[Al-Qur'an 9:5]

2. Context of verse is during battlefield

Critics of Islam actually quote this verse out of context. In order to understand the context, we need to read from verse 1 of this surah. It says that there was a peace treaty between the Muslims and the *Mushriqs* (pagans) of Makkah. This treaty was violated by the *Mushriqs* of Makkah. A period of four months was given to the *Mushriqs* of Makkah to make amends. Otherwise war would be declared against them. Verse 5 of Surah Taubah says:

"But when the forbidden months are past, then fight and slay the Pagans wherever ye find them, and seize them, beleaguer them, and lie in wait for them in every stratagem (of war); but if they repent, and establish regular prayers and practise regular charity, then open the way for them: for Allah is oft-forgiving, Most merciful."
[Al-Qur'an 9:5]

This verse is quoted during a battle.

3. Example of war between America and Vietnam

We know that America was once at war with Vietnam. Suppose the President of America or the General of the American Army told the American soldiers during the war: "Wherever you find the Vietnamese, kill them". Today if I say that the American President said, "Wherever you find Vietnamese, kill them" without giving the context, I will make him sound like a butcher. But if I quote him in context, that he said it during a war, it will sound very logical, as he was trying to boost the morale of the American soldiers during the war.

4. Verse 9:5 quoted to boost morale of Muslims during battle

Similarly in Surah Taubah chapter 9 verse 5 the Qur'an says, "Kill the *Mushriqs* where ever you find them", during a battle to boost the morale of the Muslim soldiers. What the Qur'an is telling Muslim soldiers is, don't be afraid during battle; wherever you find the enemies kill them.

5. Shourie jumps from verse 5 to verse 7

Arun Shourie is one of the staunchest critics of Islam in India. He quotes the same verse, Surah Taubah chapter 9 verse 5 in his book 'The World of *Fatwahs'*, on page 572. After quoting verse 5 he jumps to verse 7 of Surah Taubah. Any sensible person will realise that he has skipped verse 6.

6. Surah Taubah chapter 9 verse 6 gives the answer

Surah Taubah chapter 9 verse 6 gives the answer to the allegation that Islam promotes violence, brutality and bloodshed. It says:

"If one amongst the pagans ask thee for asylum,grant it to him, so that he may hear the word of Allah; and then escort him to where he can be secure that is because they are men without knowledge."
[Al-Qur'an 9:6]

The Qur'an not only says that a *Mushriq* seeking asylum during the battle should be granted refuge, but also that he should be escorted to a secure place. In the present international scenario, even a kind, peace-loving army General, during a battle, may let the enemy soldiers go free, if they want peace. But which army General will ever tell his soldiers, that if the enemy soldiers want peace during a battle, don't just let them go free, but also escort them to a place of security?

This is exactly what Allah (swt) says in the Glorious Qur'an to promote peace in the world.

4. QUR'AN USES 'WE' FOR ALLAH

Question:

Does Islam believe in several gods because the Qur'an uses the word 'We' when God speaks in the Qur'an?

Answer:

Islam is a strictly monotheistic religion. It believes in and adheres to uncompromising monotheism. It believes that God is one, and unique in His attributes. In the Qur'an, God often refers to Himself using the word 'We'. But this does not mean that Islam believes in the existence of more than one God.

Two types of plural

In several languages, there are two types of plurals, one is a plural of numbers to refer to something that occurs in a quantity of more than one. The other plural is a plural of respect.

a. In the English language, the Queen of England refers to herself as 'We' instead of 'I'. This is known as the 'royal plural'.
b. Rajiv Gandhi, the ex-Prime Minister of India used to say in Hindi *"Hum dekhna chahte hain"*. "We want to see." *'Hum'* means 'We' which is again a royal plural in Hindi.
c. Similarly in Arabic, when Allah refers to Himself in the Qur'an, He often uses Arabic word*'Nahnu'* meaning 'We'. It does not indicate plural of number but plural of respect.

Tawheed or monotheism is one of the pillars of Islam. The existence and uniqueness of one and only one God is mentioned several times in the Qur'an. For instance in Surah Ikhlas, it says :

"Say He is Allah the One and Only."
[Al-Qur'an 112: 1]

6. THE THEORY OF ABROGATION

Question:

Muslims believe in the theory of abrogation, i.e. they believe that certain earlier verses of the Qur'an were abrogated by verses revealed later. Does this imply that God made a mistake and later on corrected it?

Answer:

1. Two different interpretations

The Glorious Qur'an says in the following verse:

"None of Our revelations do We abrogate or cause to be forgotten, but We substitute something better or similar: knowest thou not that Allah hath power over all things?"
[Al-Qur'an 2:106]

A reference to this is also made in chapter 16 verse 101 of Surah Nahl. The Arabic word mentioned is *ayat* which means 'signs' or 'verses' and which can also mean 'revelations'. This verse of the Qur'an can be interpreted in two different ways:

a. The revelations that are abrogated are those revelations that were revealed before the Qur'an, for example the *Torah*, the *Zaboor* and the *Injeel.*

Here Allah (swt) says that He does not cause the previous revelations to be forgotten but He substitutes them with something better or similar, indicating that the *Torah*, the *Zaboor* and the *Injeel* were substituted by the Qur'an.

b. If we consider that the Arabic word *ayat* in the above verse refers to the verses of the Qur'an, and not previous revelations, then it indicates that none of the verses of the Qur'an are abrogated by Allah but substituted with something better or similar. This means that certain verses of the Qur'an, that were revealed earlier were substituted by verses that were revealed later. I agree with both the interpretations.

Many Muslims and non-Muslims misunderstand the second interpretation to mean that some of the earlier verses of the Qur'an were abrogated and no longer hold true for us today, as they have been replaced by the later verses of the Qur'an or the abrogating verses. This group of people even wrongly believe that these verses contradict each other.

Let us analyze a few such examples.

2. Produce a recital like the Qur'an / 10 Surahs / 1 Surah:

Some pagan Arabs alleged that the Qur'an was forged by Prophet Muhammad (pbuh). Allah (swt) challenges these Arabs in the following verse of Surah Al-Isra:

"Say: If the whole of Mankind and Jinns were together to produce the like of this Qur'an they could not produce the like thereof, even if they backed up each other with help and support."
[Al-Qur'an 17:88]

Later the challenge was made easy in the following verse of Surah Al-Hud:

"Or they may say, "He forged it." Say, "Bring ye then ten Surahs forged, like unto it, and call (to your aid) whomsover ye can, other than Allah, if ye speak the truth!'."
[Al-Qur'an 11:13]

It was made easier in the following verse of Surah Yunus:

"Or do they say, "He forged it"? Say: "Bring then a Surah like unto it, and call (to your aid) anyone you can, besides Allah, if it be ye speak the truth!'."
[Al-Qur'an 10:38]

Finally in Surah Al-Baqarah, Allah (swt) further simplified the challenge:

And if ye are in doubt as to what We have revealed from time to time to Our servant, then produce a *Surah* like thereunto; and call your witnesses or helpers (if there are any) besides Allah if your (doubts) are true.

But if ye cannot – and of a surety ye cannot – then fear the Fire whose fuel is Men and Stones – which is prepared for those who reject faith".
[Al-Qur'an 2:23-24]

Thus Allah (swt) made the challenges progressively easier. The progressively revealed verses of the Qur'an first challenged the pagans to produce a book like the Qur'an, then challenged them to

produce ten *Surahs* (chapters) like those in the Qur'an, then one *Surah* and finally it challenges them to produce one Surah somewhat similar *(mim mislihi)* to the Qur'anic*Surahs*. This does not mean that the later verses that were revealed i.e. of Surah Baqarah chapter 2 verses 23 and 24 contradict the earlier three verses. Contradiction implies mentioning two things that cannot be possible simultaneously, or cannot take place simultaneously.

The earlier verses of the Qur'an i.e. the abrogated verses are still the word of God and the information contained in it is true to this day. For instance the challenge to produce a recital like the Qur'an stands to this day. Similarly the challenge to produce ten *Surahs* and one*Surah* exactly like the Qur'an also holds true and the last challenge of producing one surah somewhat similar to the Qur'an also holds true. It does not contradict the earlier challenges, but this is the easiest of all the challenges posed by the Qur'an. If the last challenge cannot be fulfilled, the question of anyone fulfilling the other three more difficult challenges does not arise.

Suppose I speak about a person that he is so dumb, that he would not be able to pass the 10th standard in school. Later I say that he would not be able to pass the 5th standard, and further say that he would not be able to pass even the 1st standard. Finally I say that he is so dull that he would not even be able to pass K.G. i.e. kindergarten. One has to pass kindergarten before one can be admitted to school. What I am stating is that the person is so dull as to be unable to pass even kindergarten. My four statements do not contradict each other, but my last statement i.e. the person would not be able to pass the kindergarten is sufficient to indicate the intelligence of that person. If a person cannot even pass kindergarten, the question of him passing the first standard or 5th or 10th, does not arise.

3. <u>Gradual prohibition of intoxicants</u>

Another example of such verses is that related to gradual prohibition of intoxicants. The first revelation of the Qur'an to deal with intoxicants was the following verse from Surah Baqarah:

"They ask thee concerning wine and gambling say: 'In them is great sin, and some profit, for men; but the sin is greater than the profit'."
[Al-Qur'an 2:219]

The next verse to be revealed regarding intoxicants is the following verse from Surah Nisa:

"O ye who believe! approach not prayers with a mind befogged, until ye can understand all that ye say" [Al-Qur'an 4:43]

The last verse to be revealed regarding intoxicants was the following verse from Surah Al-Maidah:

"O ye who believe! intoxicants and gambling, (dedication of) stones, and (divination by) arrows, are an abomination of Satan's handiwork; eschew such (abomination), that ye may prosper."
[Al-Qur'an 5:90]

The Qur'an was revealed over a period of 22½ years. Many reforms that were brought about in the society were gradual. This was to facilitate the adoption of new laws by the people. An abrupt change in society always leads to rebellion and anarchy.

The prohibition of intoxicants was revealed in three stages. The first revelation only mentioned that in the intoxicants there is great sin and some profit but the sin is greater than the profit. The next revelation prohibited praying in an intoxicated state, indicating that one should not consume intoxicants during the day, since a Muslim has to pray five times a day. This verse does state that

when one is not praying at night one is allowed to consume intoxicants. It means one may have or one may not have. The Qur'an does not comment on it. If this verse had mentioned that one is allowed to have intoxicants while not praying then there would have been a contradiction. Allah (swt) chose words appropriately. Finally the total prohibition of intoxicants at all times was revealed in Surah Maidah chapter 5 verse 90.

This clearly indicates that the three verses do not contradict each other. Had they been contradicting, it would not have been possible to follow all the three verses simultaneously. Since a Muslim is expected to follow each and every verse of the Qur'an, only by following the last verse i.e. of Surah Maidah (5:90), he simultaneously agrees and follows the previous two verses.

Suppose I say that I do not live in Los Angeles. Later I say that I do not live in California. Finally I say, I do not live in the United States of America. This does not imply that these three statements contradict each other. Each statement gives more information than the previous statement. The third statement includes the information contained in the first two statements. Thus, only by saying that I do not live in the United States of America, it is obvious, that I also do not live in California nor New York. Similarly since consuming alcohol is totally prohibited, it is obvious that praying in an intoxicated state is also prohibited and the information that in intoxicants is "great sin and some profit for men; but the sin is greater than profit" also holds true.

4. <u>Qur'an does not contain any contradictions</u>

The theory of abrogation does not imply that there is a contradiction in the Qur'an, since it is possible to follow all the verses of the Qur'an at the same time.

If there is a contradiction in the Qur'an, then it cannot be the word of Allah (swt).

"Do they not consider the Qur'an (with care)? Had it been from other than Allah, they would surely have found therein much discrepancy (contradictions)."

[Al-Qur'an 4:82]

7. MEANING OF *ALIF LAAM MEEM*

Question:

Why do certain *Surahs* in the Qur'an begin with *Alif Laam Meem, Haa Meem, Yaa Seen*. What is the significance of such terms or phrases?

Answer:

1. <u>Abbreviated Letters</u>

Alif Laam Meem, Ya Seen, Ha Meem', etc. are known as *Al-Muqattaat* i.e. the abbreviated letters. There are 29 letters in the Arabic Alphabet (if *hamza* and *alif* are considered as two letters) and there are 29 *surahs* i.e. chapters in the Glorious Qur'an that have the abbreviated letters prefixed to them. These abbreviated letters some times occur alone, sometimes in a combination of two letters and sometimes in a combination of three, four or five letters.

a. Three surahs are pre-fixed with only one letter:

(i) Surah Sad chapter 38 with *Sad*
(ii) Surah Qaf chapter 50 with *Qaf*
(iii) Surah Nun or Qalam chapter 68 with *Nun*

b. The combination of two letters occurs in 10 surahs:

Three of them occur only once each:

(i) Surah Ta Ha chapter 20 has *Ta Ha*
(ii) Surah Al Naml starting with chapter 27 has *Ta Seen*
(iii) Surah Ya Seen chapter 36 has *Ya Seen*

Ha Meem occurs in seven consecutive *Surahs* from Surah 40 to Surah 46:

(i) Surah Ghafir or Al-Mu'min chapter 40
(ii) Surah Fussilat or Ha Meem chapter 41
(iii) Surah Al Shura chapter 42
(iv) Surah Al Zukhruf chapter 43
(v) Surah Al Dukhan chapter 44
(vi) Surah Al Jathiyah chapter 45
(vii) Surah Al Ahqaf chapter 46

c. There are three combinations of three letters each occurring in 14 surahs.

Alif Laam Meem occurs in six *surahs*
(i) Surah Al Baqarah chapter 2

(ii) Surah Ali 'Imran chapter 3

(iii) Surah Al 'Ankabut chapter 29

(iv) Surah Al Rum chapter 30

(v) Surah Luqman chapter 31

(vi) Surah Al Sajdah chapter 32

Alif Laam Ra occurs in six consecutive surahs: Surah 10 to Surah 15:

(i) Surah Yunus chapter 10
(ii) Surah Hud chapter 11
(iii) Surah Yusuf chapter 12
(iv) Surah Al Rad chapter 13
(v) Surah Ibrahim chapter 14
(vi) Surah Al Hijr chapter 15

Ta Seen Meem occurs in two *Surahs*:

(i) Surah Al-Shura chapter 26
(ii) Surah Al-Qasas chapter 28

d. Combination of four letters occurs twice:

(i) Surah Aaraf chapter 7: *Alif Laam Meem Sad*
(ii) Surah Anfal chapter 8: *Alif Laam Meem Ra*

e. Combination of five letters occurs twice:

(i) Surah Maryam chapter 19 begins with *Kaf Ha Ya Ayn Sad*
(ii) Surah Al-Shura chapter 42 begins with *Ha Meem Ayn Seen Qaf*

Surah Al-Shura chapter 42 has a double combination of abbreviated letters one set of two letters followed by one set of three letters.

2. Meanings of these abbreviated letters

The meaning and purpose of these letters is uncertain. There have been a variety of explanations offered by Muslim scholars through the ages. A few among them are:

i. These letters might be abbreviations for certain sentences and words for instance, *Alif Laam Meem* means *Ana-Alahu -a'Laam* or *Nun* meaning *Noor* (light), etc.
ii. These letters are not abbreviations but symbols and names of Allah or something else.
iii. These letters were used for rhyming.
iv. These letters have some numerical significance as the semitic letters also have numerical values.
v. These letters were used to attract the attention of the Prophet (and later his audience).

Several volumes have been written on the significance of these abbreviations.

3. Best explanation of abbreviated letters:

Of all the explanations given by various scholars, the one which is authentic and also supported by *Tafsir* of Ibne-Kathir, Zamakshari and Ibne-Taiymiyah is the following:

The human body is composed of various fundamental elements that are found in nature. Clay and dust are composed of the same fundamental elements. Yet it would be absurd to say that a human being is exactly the same as the dust.

We can all have access to the elements that are found in the human body, and add a few gallons of water, which is the constitution of the human body. We know the elements in the human body and yet we are at a loss when asked the secret of life.

Similarly the Qur'an addresses those people who reject its Divine authority. It tells them that this Qur'an, is in your own language, and over which the Arabs took pride. It is composed of the same letters that the Arabs used to express themselves most eloquently.

The Arabs were very proud of their language and Arabic was at its peak when the Qur'an was revealed. With the letters *Alif Laam Meem, Yaa Seen, Ha-Meem*, etc., (in Engllish we would say A, B, C, D) the Qur'an challenges mankind to produce a *Surah* at least somewhat similar to the Qur'an in beauty and elegance, if they doubt its authenticity.

Initially, the Qur'an challenges all the men and jinn to produce a recital like the Qur'an and adds that they would not be able to do it even if they backed each other. This challenge is mentioned in Surah Isra chapter 17 verse 88 and in Surah Tur chapter 52 verse 34.

Later the Qur'an repeats the challenge in Surah Hud chapter 11 verse 13 by saying produce ten *surahs* like it and later in Surah Yunus chapter 10 verse 38 produce one surah like it and finally the easiest challenge is given in Surah Al-Baqarah chapter 2 verses 23 and 24.

"And if ye are in doubt as to what We have revealed from time to time to Our servant, then produce a *Surah* like thereunto; and call your witnesses or helpers (if there are any) besides Allah if your doubts are true.

But if ye cannot – and of a surety ye cannot – then fear the fire whose fuel is men and stones – which is prepared for those who reject faith."
[Al-Qur'an 2:23-24]

To compare the skill of two artisans, they must be given samples of the same raw material and their performance evaluated in performing the same task. If they are tailors they must be provided with the same fabrics. The raw materials of the Arabic language are these letters *Alif Laam Meem, Ya Seen* (in English it is A, B, C, D, etc.) The miraculous nature of the language of the Qur'an does not lie only in the fact that it is the Word of Allah, but also in the fact that although made up of the same letters in which the pagan Arabs took pride, it has not been rivalled.

The Arabs are noted for their rhetoric ability, eloquence and meaningful expression. Just as the constituents of the human body are known to us and can be obtained by us, the letters comprising the Qur'an, such as Alif Laam Meem are known to us, and used frequently to formulate words. Life cannot be created by us, even if we possess knowledge of the constituents of the human body. Similarly we cannot capture the same eloquence and beauty of expression that we find in the Qur'an, despite knowing the letters that constitute the Qu'ran. The Qur'an thus proves its Divine origin.

4. Miraculous quality of Qur'an mentioned immediately after these broken letters

Therefore immediately after these broken letters are mentioned in the Qur'an, the following verses speak about the miracle of the Qur'an, and its authority e.g. in Surah Baqarah Chapter 2 verse 1-2:

"*Alif Laam Meem.*
This is the Book; in it is guidance sure, without doubt, to those who fear Allah."
[Al-Qur'an 2:1-2]

8. DOES THE QUR'AN SAY THAT THE EARTH IS FLAT?

Question

Qur'an says that Allah has made the earth for you as a carpet. This gives an indication that the earth is flat. Does this not contradict established modern science?

Answer

1. Earth made as a carpet

The question refers to a verse from the Qur'an in Surah Nuh:

"And Allah has made the earth for you as a carpet (spread out)."
[Al-Qur'an 71:19]

But the sentence in the above verse is not complete. It continues in the next verse, explaining the previous verse. It says:

"That ye may go about therein, in spacious roads."
[Al-Qur'an 71:20]

A similar message is repeated in Surah TaHa:

"He Who has made for you the earth like a carpet spread out; has enabled you to go about therein by roads (and channels)...."
[Al-Qur'an 20:53]

The surface of the earth i.e. earth's crust is less than 30 miles in thickness and is very thin as compared to the radius of the earth which is about 3750 miles. The deeper layers of the earth are very hot, fluid and hostile to any form of life. The earth's crust is a solidified shell on which we can live. The Qur'an rightly refers to it like a carpet spread out, so that we can travel along its roads and paths.

2. <u>Carpet can also be spread on other than an absolute flat surface</u>

Not a single verse of the Qur'an says that the earth is flat. The Qur'an only compares the earth's crust with a carpet. Some people seem to think that carpet can only be put on an absolute flat surface. It is possible to spread a carpet on a large sphere such as the earth. It can easily be demonstrated by taking a huge model of the earth's globe covering it with a carpet.

Carpet is generally put on a surface, which is not very comfortable to walk on. The Qur'an describes the earth crust as a carpet, without which human beings would not be able to survive because of the hot, fluid and hostile environment beneath it. The Qur'an is thus not only logical, it is mentioning a scientific fact that was discovered by geologists centuries later.

3. <u>Earth has been spread out</u>

Similarly, the Qur'an says in several verses that the earth has been spread out.

"And We have spread out the (spacious) earth: how excellently We do spread out!"
[Al-Qur'an 51:48]

Similarly the Qur'an also mentions in several other verses that the earth is an expanse:

"Have We not made the earth as a wide expanse"
"And the mountains as pegs?"
[Al-Qur'an 78:6-7]

None of these verses of the Qur'an contain even the slightest implication that the earth is flat. It only indicates that the earth is spacious and the reason for this spaciousness of the earth is mentioned. The Glorious Qur'an says:

"O My servants who believe! truly. spacious is My Earth: therefore serve ye Me –(And Me alone)!"
[Al-Qur'an 29:56]

Therefore none can give the excuse, that he could not do good and was forced to do evil because of the surroundings and circumstances.

4. Earth is geospherical in shape

The Qur’an mentions the actual shape of the earth in the following verse:

"And we have made the earth egg shaped".
[Al-Qur’an 79:30]

The Arabic word *Dahaha* means egg shaped. It also means an expanse. *Dahaha* is derived from *Duhiya* which specifically refers to the egg of an ostrich which is geospherical in shape, exactly like the shape of the earth.

Thus the Qur’an and modern established science are in perfect harmony.

9. DOES ONLY ALLAH KNOW THE SEX OF THE CHILD IN THE MOTHER’S WOMB?

Question:

The Qur’an says that only Allah knows the sex of the child in the womb of the mother but now science has advanced and we can easily determine the sex of the child in the womb by ultrasonography. Isn’t this verse of the Qur’an conflicting with medical science?

Answer:

Allah is Omnipotent and Omniscient. Allah has granted knowledge of certain things to humankind. But Allah has knowledge of the seen as well as the unseen.

1. Allah has knowledge of all things

Many people believe that the Qur’an claims that Allah alone knows the sex of the child in the mother’s womb. The Glorious Qur’an says:

"Verily the knowledge of the Hour is with Allah (alone). It is He who sends down Rain, and He who knows what is in the wombs…."
[Al-Qur’an 31:34]

A similar message is given in the following verse:

"Allah doth know what every female (womb) doth bear,
By how much the wombs fall short (of their time or number) or do exceed. Every single thing is before His sight, in (due) proportion."
[Al-Qur’an 13:8]

2. Sex can be determined by Ultrasonography

Today science has advanced and we can easily determine the sex of the child in the womb of a pregnant mother, using ultrasonography.

3. The word ‘sex’ is not mentioned in the verse of the Qur’an

It is true that many translations and commentaries of this verse of the Glorious Qur’an say that only Allah knows the sex of the child in the mother’s womb. If you read the Arabic text of this verse, there is no Arabic word corresponding to the English word ‘sex’. In fact the Qur’an says the

knowledge of what is in the womb is with Allah alone. Many commentators have misunderstood it to mean only Allah knows the sex of the child in the womb, which is a mistake.

4. No one besides Allah can determine the nature of the child

This verse does not refer to the sex of the child in the womb but it refers to, how the child in the mother's womb will be. How will his nature be? Will he be a blessing or a curse to his parents? Will he be a boon or a bane to the society? Will he be good or evil? Will he go to heaven or hell? The complete knowledge of all things is with Allah alone. No scientist in the world, no matter how advanced his equipment, will ever be able to accurately determine the knowledge of these things about the child in the mother's womb.

10. *HOOR*:

Question:

According to the Qur'an when a man enters paradise, he will get *hoor,* i.e. beautiful maidens. What will a woman have when she enters paradise?

Answer:

1. *Hoor* mentioned in the Qur'an

The word *hoor* occurs in the Qur'an in no less than four different places:

(1) In Surah Dukhan chapter 44, verse 54

"Moreover, We shall join them to companions
With beautiful, big and lustrous eyes."
[Al-Qur'an 44:54]

(2) In Surah Al-Tur chapter 52 verse 20

"...And We shall join them to companions, with beautiful,
big and lustrous eyes."
[Al-Qur'an 52:20]

(3) In Surah Rahman chapter 55 verse 72

"Companions restrained (as to their glances), in goodly pavilions."
[Al-Qur'an 55:72]

(4) In Surah Al-Waqiah chapter 56 verse 22

"And (there will be) companions with beautiful, big and lustrous eyes."
[Al-Qur'an 56:22]

2. *Hoor* Translated as Beautiful Maidens

Many translators of the Qur'an have translated the word *hoor* as 'beautiful maidens' especially in the Urdu translations. If *hoor* means 'beautiful maidens' or girls, then they are meant only for the men. Hence, what will the women get if they enter Paradise?

3. <u>Meaning of *Hoor*</u>

The word *hoor* is actually the plural of *ahwar* (applicable to man) and of *haura* (applicable to woman) and signifies a person having eyes characterized by *hauar* a special quality bestowed upon a good soul, male or female in paradise and it denotes the intense whiteness of the white part of the spiritual eye.

The Qur'an describes in several other verses that in paradise you will have *azwaj* which mean a pair or spouse or companion which means you will have spouses or companions pure and holy (*mutaharratun* means pure, holy).

"But give glad tidings to those who believe and work righteousness, that their portion is gardens, beneath which rivers flow. Every time they are fed with fruits therefrom, they say: "Why, this is what we were fed with before", for they are given things in similitude; and they have therein companions pure (and holy); and they abide therein (forever)".
[Al-Qur'an 2:25]

"But those who believe and do deeds of righteousness, We shall soon admit to Gardens, with rivers flowing beneath – their eternal home; therein shall they have companions pure and holy: we shall admit them to shades, cool and ever deepening". [Al-Qur'an 4:57]

Therefore the word *hoor* has no specific gender. Mohammad Asad has translated the word*hoor* as spouse and Abdullah Yusuf Ali as companion. Therefore according to some scholars a man in paradise will have a *hoor* that is a beautiful maiden with beautiful big and lustrous eyes and a woman in paradise will get a man with beautiful big and lustrous eyes.

4. <u>Women will get something exceptional in Paradise</u>

Many scholars say that in context, the word *hoor* used in the Qur'an refers only to ladies since gents are addressed. A reply that would be accepted by all types of people would rather be the answer given in the Hadith when a similar question was posed that if a man gets a*hoor*, a beautiful Maiden in Paradise, then what will the women get? The reply was that the women will get that which the heart has not desired for, the ear hasn't heard off and the eye hasn't seen, indicating that even the women will get something exceptional in Paradise.

11. IS THE HEART RESPONSIBLE FOR UNDERSTANDING?

Question:

The Qur'an says that Allah has put a seal on the hearts of the *Kuffar* and they will not believe. Science tells us today that the brain is responsible for understanding and believing and not the heart. Isn't the Qur'an contradicting Science?

Answer:

1. <u>Allah has set a seal on the heart of the *Kuffar*</u>

The Glorious Qur'an says:

"As to those who reject Faith it is the same to them
Whether thou warn them or do not warn them;
They will not believe.
"Allah hath set a seal on their hearts and on their hearing and on their eyes is a veil
Great is the penalty they incur."
[Al-Qur'an 2:6-7]

2. The word *qalb* in Arabic means heart as well as intelligence

The Arabic word *qalb* used in these verses means the heart. It also means intelligence. Thus the above verses also mean that Allah has put a seal on the intelligence of the *kuffaars*(unbelievers) and they will not understand and believe.

3. In the Arabic language heart is also used as a centre of understanding

In the Arabic language the word 'heart' is also used to connote one's centre of understanding.

4. Several words used in English language whose literal meaning is different

Even in English language there are several words which are used to explain something, though the literal meaning of these words are different. Consider the following examples

a. Lunatic - Struck by the moon:

The word 'lunatic' literally means struck by the moon. Today people use the word lunatic for a person who is insane or mentally unstable. People very well know that a mad or a mentally unstable person is not struck by the moon. Yet even a medical doctor uses this word. This is normal in the evolution of a language.

b. Disaster – An evil star

The word 'disaster' literally means an evil star. Today the word disaster is used for a great or sudden misfortune or calamity. We know very well that a misfortune has nothing to do with an evil star.

c. Trivial – Three roads meet

The word 'trivial' literally means where three roads meet. Today the word 'trivial' is used for something of small nature or little importance. We know very well that if something is of small value it has nothing to do with where three roads meet.

d. Sunrise and Sunset

'Sunrise' literally means rising of the sun. Today when the word 'sunrise' is used most of the people know that the earth is rotating and is moving in relation to the sun. Most of us know that the sun does not rise during sunrise. However even an astronomer uses the word 'sunrise'. Similarly we know that during sunset, the sun does not actually set.

5. In the English language heart is the centre of love and emotion

In the English language heart means an organ in the body which pumps blood. The same word heart is also used for the centre of thought, love and emotion. Today we know that brain is the

centre of thought, love and emotion. Yet while expressing emotions a person is likely to say "I love you from the bottom of my heart". Imagine a scientist telling his wife, "I love you from the bottom of my heart" and the wife replies, "Don't you even know the basics of science, that the brain is responsible for the emotions and not the heart? In fact you should say I love you from the bottom of my brain."

6. Arabs know that the word heart in Arabic is also used for centre of thought and understanding

No Arab will ever ask the question as to why Allah has sealed the hearts of the *kafir* because he knows that in this context it refers to the centre of thought, understanding and emotions.

12. GOD IS RESPONSIBLE FOR OUR DESTINY

Question:

If God is responsible for our destiny then why we should be held responsible for the evil acts and sins we commit?

Answer:

Under Construction

13. ALLAH HAS SEALED THE HEART OF *KUFFAR*

Question:

If Allah has sealed the hearts of the Kuffar i.e. non-Muslims, then why are they to be blamed for not accepting Islam?

Answer:

1. Allah has sealed the hearts of those who are continuously bent on rejecting the truth

Allah (swt) mentions in Surah Al Baqarah chapter 2 verses 6 and 7

"As to those who reject Faith, it is the same to them Whether thou warn them or do not warn them; they will not believe.

Allah hath set a seal on their hearts and on their hearing, and on their eyes is a veil; great is the penalty they (incur)."
[Al-Qur'an 2:6-7]

These verses do not refer to common *Kuffar* who reject faith. The Arabic words used are *al-lazina kafaroo*, those who are bent on rejecting the truth. It will not make any difference to such people whether you warn them or not, they will not believe. Allah has set a seal on their hearts and on their hearing and on their eyes is a veil. It is not because Allah has set a seal on their hearts that these *kuffar* do not understand and believe, but it is the vice-versa. It is because these *kuffar* are bent on rejecting the truth and whether you warn them or not they will not believe, that Allah has set a seal on their hearts. Therefore Allah is not to blame, but these *kuffaar* who are bent on rejecting the faith are responsible.

2. Example of teacher predicting a student will fail

Suppose an experienced teacher, before the final examinations, predicts that a particular student will fail in the exams, since the student is very mischievous, not attentive in class and does not do his homework. If after the student appears for the examination, he fails, who is to be blamed for the student failing: the teacher or the student? Just because the teacher predicted, it does not mean that the teacher is to be blamed but the student himself is responsible for his failure.

Similarly Allah (swt) knows in advance that there are some people who are bent on rejecting the faith and Allah has put a seal on their hearts. Thus these non-Muslims themselves are responsible for rejecting the faith and not Allah (swt).

14. HEAVENS AND EARTH CREATED IN SIX DAYS AND NOT EIGHT DAYS

Question:

The Qur'an mentions in several places that the heavens and the earth were created in 6 days but in Surah Fussilat it says that the heavens and the earth were created in 8 days. Isn't this a contradiction? The same verse also says that the earth was created in 6 days and then later on the heavens were created in 2 days. This is against the Big-Bang theory that the heavens and the earth were created simultaneously.

Answer:

1. Heavens and the Earth created in Six days

I do agree that the Qur'an says that the heavens and the earth were created in 6 days i.e. 6 epochs and it is mentioned in

Surah Al A'raf chapter 7 verse 54
Surah Yunus chapter 10 verse 3
Surah Hud chapter 11 verse 7
Surah Al Furqan chapter 25 verse 59
Surah Al Sajdah chapter 32 verse 4
Surah Qaf chapter 50 verse 38
Surah Al Hadid chapter 57 verse 4

The verses of the Qur'an which according to you say that the heavens and the earth were created in 8 days are Surah Fussilat chapter 41 verses 9 to 12

"Say: Is it that ye deny Him Who created the earth in two days? And do ye join equals With him? He is the Lord of (all) the Worlds;

He set on the (earth) mountains standing firm, High above it, and bestowed blessings on the earth, and measured therein all things to give them nourishment in due proportion, In four days, in accordance with (the needs of) Those who seek (sustenance)."

Moreover, He Comprehended in His design the sky, and it had been (as) smoke. He said to it and to the earth. "Come ye together, willingly or unwillingly. They said: "We do come (Together), in willing obedience."

So He completed them as seven firmaments in two days and He assigned to each heaven its duty and command and We adorned the lower heaven with lights, and (provided it) with guard.

Such is the decree of (Him) the exalted in might, full of knowledge."
[Al-Qur’an 41:9-12]

On the face of it, it seems that these verses of the Qur’an give the initial impression that the heavens and the earth were created in 8 days.

Allah says in the beginning of this verse that those who exploit this information contained in this passage to raise doubts about its authenticity are equally interested in promulgating blasphemy and denying His unity. Allah is telling us that in course of time, there will emerge unbelievers who will make use of this apparent contradiction.

2. Summa means moreover

If you analyse these verses carefully, it speaks about 2 different creations: the earth and the heaven. The earth excluding the mountains was created in 2 days and the mountains were set on the earth standing firm and blessed and measured its sustenance in 4 days. Therefore the earth along with the mountains was created in 6 days according to verse 9 and 10. Verse 11 and 12 says, moreover the heavens were created in 2 days. The Arabic word used in the beginning of verse 11 of Surah Fussilat is *summa* which means; ‘then’ or ‘moreover’. There are certain Qur’anic translations, which have, used ‘then’ for the word *summa* which, indicates ‘afterwards’. If ‘then’ is wrongly used for *summa* then the total of the creation of heaven and earth will be 8 days which will conflict with other verses of the Qur’an which says heavens and earth were created in 6 days and will also conflict with the Big Bang Theory as well as the verse of the Qur’an Surah Al Ambiya chapter 21 verse 30 which says that heavens and the earth were created simultaneously.

Therefore the correct translation of the word *summa* in this verse would be ‘moreover’. Abdullah Yusuf Ali has rightly translated the word *summa* or moreover which clearly gives an indication that while the earth along with the mountains, etc. was created in 6 days simultaneously the heavens were created in 2 days. Therefore the total does not come to 8 days but 6 days.

If a builder says that he will construct a 10 storey building and surrounding compound wall in 6 months and after completion of his project he gives a more detailed account saying that the basement of the building was built in 2 months and the 10 storeys took 4 months and simultaneously, while the basement and the building was being constructed, he also constructed the surrounding of the building along with the compound wall which took 2 months. Therefore both his first and second descriptions are not contradicting but the second statement gives a more detailed account for the construction.

3. Heavens and the Earth created simultaneously

The Qur’an describe the creation of the universe in several places, sometimes it says the heavens and the earth (7:54, 10:3, 11:7, 25:59, 32:4, 50:38, 57:4) while in other places it says earth and the heaven (49:9-12, 2:29, 20:4) thus further supplementing the verse of Surah Al Ambiya chapter 21 verse 30 which speaks about the Big-Bang and that the heavens and the earth were created simultaneously.

Similarly in Surah Al-Baqara chapter 2 verse 29

"It is He Who hath created for you all things that are on earth; Then He turned to the heaven and made them into seven firmaments. And of all things He hath perfect knowledge."
[Al-Qur’an 2:29]

"It is who has created for you all things on the earth *summa* simultaneously made the heaven into seven firmaments".

Here also if you wrongly translate *summa* as 'then' only then would this verse contradict the Big-bang theory and other verses of the Qur'an. Therefore the correct translation of the word*summa* is 'moreover' or 'simultaneously'.

15. IS MAN CREATED FROM SPERM OR DUST?

Question:

At one place the Qur'an mentions that man is created from sperm and in another place it mentions that man is created from dust. Are these two verses not contradicting? How can you scientifically prove that man is created from dust?

Answer:

1. Man created from sperm and dust

The Qur'an refers to the lowly beginnings of a human being from a drop of sperm, in several verses including the following verse from Surah Al-Qiyamah:

"Was he not a drop of sperm emitted (in lowly form)"?
[Al-Qur'an 75:37]

The Qur'an also mentions in several places that human beings were created from dust. The following verse makes a reference to the origin of human beings:

"(Consider) that We created you out of dust".
[Al-Qur'an 22:5]

We now know that all the elements present in the human body (i.e. the constituent elements of the human body), are all present in the earth in small or great quantities. This is the scientific explanation for the Qur'anic verse that says that man was created from dust.

In certain verses, the Qur'an says that man was created from sperm, while in certain other verses it says that man was created from dust. However this is not a contradiction. Contradiction means statements, which are opposite or conflicting and both cannot be true simultaneously.

2. Man created from water

In certain places the Qur'an also says that man was created from water. For instance in Surah Al-Furqan it says:

"It is He Who has created man from water".
[Al-Qur'an 25:54]

Science has proved all the three statements to be correct. Man has been created from sperm, dust as well as water.

3. It is not a Contradiction but a Contradistinction

Suppose I say that in order to make a cup of tea one needs water. One also needs tea-leaves or tea powder. The two statements are not contradictory since both water and tea leaves are required in order to make a cup of tea. Furthermore if I want sweet tea I can even add sugar.

Thus there is no contradiction in the Qur'an when it says that man is created from sperm, dust and water. It is not a contradiction but a contradistinction. Contradistinction means speaking about two different concepts on the same subject without conflict. For instance if I say that the man is always truthful and a habitual liar, it is a contradiction, but if I say that a man is always honest, kind and loving, then it is a contradistinction.

16. ALLAH IS THE LORD OF TWO EASTS AND TWO WESTS

Question:

It is mentioned in one verse of the Qur'an that Allah is the Lord of two Easts and two Wests. How can you explain this verse of the Qur'an scientifically?

Answer:

1. Qur'an mentions Allah is the Lord of two Easts and two Wests

The verse of the Qur'an which refers to Allah being the Lord of two easts and two wests is the following verse from Surah Ar-Rahman:

"(He is) Lord of the two Easts and Lord of the two Wests:"
[Al-Qur'an 55:17]

In the original Arabic script, the words east and west have been used in the dual form. It implies that Allah is the Lord of two easts and two wests.

2. Allah is the Lord of both the extremes of East and West

The science of geography tells us that the sun rises from the east, but the point of sunrise keeps shifting throughout the year. Only on two days of the year known as 'equinox', does the sun rise exactly from due east. On the remaining days, it rises either from a little north or a little south of due east. During summer solstice the sun rises from one extreme of the east and during winter solstice it rises from the other extreme. Similarly, the sun sets in one extreme of the west in summer solstice. It sets in the other extreme of the west in winter solstice. This phenomenon can be easily seen in Bombay or any other city, by people living in certain areas, or in tall skyscraper buildings, from where the rising or setting of sun can be seen. They are able to notice that during the summer solstice the sun rises from one extreme of east and during winter solstice it rises from the other extreme of east. In short, through out the year, the sun keeps rising from different points of the east and sets on different points of the west. Thus when the Qur'an refers to Allah as the Lord of two easts and two wests, it means that Allah is the Lord of both the extremes of east and both the extremes of west.

3. Allah is the Lord of all the points of the East and West

Arabic language has two types of plurals. One is the dual plural i.e. the plural that implies the existence of two. The other is the plural for more than two, i.e. three and above. In Surah Rahman verse 17 the Arabic words used are *mashriqaini* and *magribaini* which are in dual plural and therefore imply two easts and two wests.

Consider the following verse of the Qur'an:
"Now I do call to witness the Lord of all points in the East and the West."
[Al-Qur'an 70:40]

The Arabic words for east and west used in this verse are *mashaariqi* and *magharibi'* which are plurals that imply the existence of more than two.

We can thus conclude that the Qur'an refers to Allah being the Lord of all the points in the east and all the points of the west, as well as the Lord of both the extreme points of east and both the extreme points of west.

17. ONE DAY IN THE SIGHT OF ALLAH IS 1,000 OR 50,000 YEARS

Question:

A particular verse of the Qur'an says that one day in the sight of Allah is equal to 1000 years. In another verse of the Qur'an it says that one day is equal to 50,000 years. Isn't the Qur'an contradicting itself?

Answer:

1. Time of Allah is incomparable to earthly time

The Qur'an says in two verses, (22:47 and 32:5), that the measure of one day in the sight of Allah is equal to 1,000 years of our reckoning. In another verse (70:4) it says that the measure of one day in the sight of Allah is equal to 50,000 years of our reckoning.

These verses generally mean that the time of Allah (swt) is incomparable to the earthly time. The examples given are of one thousand years and fifty thousand years of the earthly time. In other words thousands of years or a very, very long time of the earth a day in the sight of Allah is equal to:

2. *Yaum* also means Period

The Arabic word used in all these three verses is *yaum*, which, besides meaning a day also means a long period, or an epoch. If you translate the word *yaum* correctly as 'period' there will be no confusion.

a) The verse from Surah Hajj reads as:

"Yet they ask thee to hasten on the Punishment! but Allah will not fail in His promise. Verily a Day in the sight of thy Lord is like a thousand years of your reckoning".

[Al-Qur'an 22:47]

When the unbelievers asked to hasten the punishment the Qur'an says Allah will not fail in His promise. Verily a period in the sight of Allah is like a thousand years of your reckoning.

b) The verse from Surah Al-Sajdah says:

"He rules (all) affairs from the heavens to the earth: in the end will (all affairs) go up? To Him, on a Day, the space whereof will be (as) a thousand years of your reckoning".

[Al-Qur'an 32:5]

This verse indicates that a period required for all the affairs to go up to Allah (swt), is a thousand years of our reckoning.

c) A verse from Surah Al-Maarij says:

"The angels and the spirit ascend unto Him in a Day the measure whereof is (as) fifty thousand years".
[Al-Qur'an 70:4]

This verse means that the period required for angels and the spirits to ascend unto Allah (swt) is fifty thousand years.

d) The period for two different acts need not be the same. For example the period required for me to travel to destination 'A' say Vashi is one hour and the period required for me to travel to destination 'B' i.e. Kashmir is 50 hours. This does not indicate that I am making two contradictory statements.

Thus the verses of the Qur'an not only do not contradict each other, they are also in perfect harmony with established modern scientific facts.

18. IBLIS - ANGEL OR JINN?

Question:

The Qur'an in several places says that *Iblis* was an angel, but in Surah Kahf it says that *Iblis* was a *Jinn*. Isn't this a contradiction in the Qur'an?

Answer:

1. Incidence of *Iblis* and Angels mentioned in the Qur'an

The story of Adam and *Iblis* is mentioned in the Qur'an in various places in which Allah (swt) says, "We said to the angels bow down to Adam: and they bowed down: not so *Iblis*".

This is mentioned in:

Surah Al Baqarah chapter 2 verse 43
Surah Al 'Araf chapter 7 verse 17
Surah Al Hijr chapter 15 verses 28-31
Surah Al Isra chapter 17 verse 61
Surah Ta Ha chapter 20 verse 116
Surah Sad chapter 38 verses 71-74

But in Surah Al Kahf chapter 18 verse 50 the Qur'an says:

"Behold! We said to the angels, "Bow down to Adam." they bowed down except *Iblis* He was one of the *Jinns*."
[Al-Qur'an 18:50]

2. Arabic Rule Of *Tagleeb*

The English translation of the first part of the verse 'We said to the angels bow down to Adam: they bowed down except *Iblis'*, gives us the impression that *Iblis* was an angel. The Qur'an was revealed in Arabic. In Arabic grammar there is a rule known as Tagleeb, according to which, if the majority is addressed, even the minority is included. If for example, I address a class containing 100 students of whom 99 are boys and one is a girl, and if I say in Arabic that the boys should stand up, it includes the girl as well. I need not mention her seperately.

Similarly in the Qur'an, when Allah addressed the angels, even *Iblis* was present, but it is not required that he be mentioned separately. Therefore according to that sentence *Iblis* may be an angel or may not be an angel, but we come to know from Surah Al Kahf chapter 18 verse 50 that *Iblis* was a *Jinn*. No where does the Qur'an say *Iblis* was an angel. Therefore there is no contradiction in the Qur'an.

3. Jinns have free will and can disobey Allah

Secondly, *Jinns* have a free will and may or may not obey Allah, but angels have no free will and always obey Allah. Therefore the question of an angel disobeying Allah does not arise. This further supplements that *Iblis* was a *Jinn* and not an angel.

19. AUTHOR OF THE QUR'AN DOES NOT KNOW MATHEMATICS

Question:

According to Arun Shourie there is a mathematical error in the Qur'an. In chapter 4 verses 11 and 12 when you add up the different parts of inheritance given to the heirs, it is more than one. Therefore the author of the Qur'an does not know mathematics.

Answer:

The Qur'an mentions about inheritance in many places, in

Surah Al Baqarah chapter 2 verse 180
Surah Al Baqarah chapter 2 verse 240
Surah Al Nisa chapter 4 verses 7 to 9
Surah Al Nisa chapter 4 verses19 and 33
Surah Al Ma'idah chapter 5 verses 105 and 108

Regarding the share of inheritance it is clearly given in Surah Nisa chapter 4 verse 11, 12 and 176.

Let us examine the verses quoted by Arun Shourie, i.e. Surah Nisa chapter 4 verses 11 and 12:

"Allah (swt) (thus) directs you as regards your children's(inheritance): to the male, a portion equal to that of two females: if only daughters, two or more, their share is two-thirds of the inheritance; if only one, her share is a half.

For parents, a sixth share of the inheritance to each, if the deceased left children; if no children, and the parents are the (only) heirs, the mother has a third; if the deceased left brothers (or sisters) the mother has a sixth. (The distribution in all cases is) after the payment of legacies and debts. Ye know not whether your parents or your children are nearest to you in benefit. These are settled portions ordained by Allah; and Allah is All-Knowing, All-Wise."

"In what your wives leave, your share is a half, if they leave no child; but if they leave child, ye get a fourth; after payment of legacies and debts. In what ye leave, their share is a fourth, if ye leave no child; but if ye leave a child, they get an eighth; after payment of legacies and debts." [Al-Qur'an 4:11-12]

Islam explains the law of inheritance in great detail. The broad and basic outline is given in the Qur'an and the minute details are given in the *Ahadith* i.e. the tradition and sayings of the Prophet (pbuh).

A person can spend his full life only on the research of the Islamic law of inheritance with its various permutations and combinations. Arun Shourie expects to know the law only by superficially reading two verses of the Qur'an without knowing the criteria.

It is similar to a person who wants to solve a mathematical equation but does not know the basic rule of mathematics, i.e. BODMAS which says that in a mathematical equation, irrespective of which mathematical sign appears first, you will first solve BODMAS: 1st Brackets Off, 2nd Division, 3rd Multiplication, 4th Addition and 5th Subtraction. If Arun Shourie does not know mathematics and first does multiplication then subtraction, then brackets off, then division and finally addition, the answer that he will obtain is bound to be wrong.

Similarly, when the Qur'an mentions the law of inheritance in Surah Nisa chapter 4 verses 11 and 12, even though the children's share is mentioned first and then that of the parents and spouses, according to the law of inheritance in Islam after paying off the debts and liabilities first, the share is given to the spouses and the parents depending on whether the deceased has left children or not, and whatever portion of wealth is remaining is divided between the sons and the daughters according to their respective shares.

So where does the question arise of the total coming to more than one? So it is not Allah who does not know mathematics but it is Arun Shourie himself who is ignorant about mathematics.

20. IS ALLAH FORGIVING OR REVENGEFUL?

Question:

The Qur'an says several times that Allah is most Merciful and Forgiving but also says many times that He gives severe punishment. Is He Forgiving or Revengeful?

Answer:

1. Allah is most Merciful

The Qur'an says several times that Allah is the most Merciful. In fact all the 114 Surahs i.e. chapters of the Glorious Qur'an except for Surah Taubah chapter 9, begin with the beautiful formula, *Bismillah-hir-Rahman-nir-Rahim*, which means, "In the name of Allah, Most Gracious, Most Merciful".

2. Allah is Forgiving

The Glorious Qur'an mentions in several verses including Surah Nisa, chapter 4 verse 25 and Surah Maidah, chapter 5 verse 74:

"And Allah is Oft-Forgiving, Most Merciful."

3. Allah gives severe punishment to the deserving

Allah besides being Merciful and Forgiving is also strict in giving punishment to the deserving. The Qur'an mentions in several verses that Allah will give severe punishment to the unbelievers and rejecters of faith. He will give punishment to all those who disobey Him. Several verses of the Qur'an describe the various types of severe punishment that Allah will give in hell to all those who disobey.

"Those who reject our Signs, we shall soon cast into the Fire; as often as their skins

Are roasted through, we shall change them for fresh skins, that they may taste the penalty: for Allah is Exalted in Power, Wise".
[Al-Qur'an 4:56]

4. Allah is Just

The question is, whether Allah is forgiving or revengeful? An important point to be noted is that Allah besides being Merciful and Forgiving, He also has to give severe punishment to the deserving wicked or evil people, because He is also Just. The Qur'an mentions in Surah Nisa: "Allah is never unjust in the least degree".
[Al-Qur'an 4:40]

It is further mentioned in Surah Al-Ambiya:

"We shall set up scales of justice for the day of Judgement, so that not a soul will be dealt with unjustly in the least. And if there be (no more than) the weight of a mustard seed, we will bring it (to account): and enough are we to take account".
[Al-Qur'an 21:47]

5. Example: Teacher forgives a student who copies in the examination

If during an examination, a student copies and the teacher who supervises in the examination catches the student red-handed, the teacher says that he is very merciful and kind and forgives him and allows him to continue copying. Those students who have worked hard for the examination will not call the teacher merciful and kind but will call him unjust. This merciful act of the teacher will encourage the other students to also copy. If all the teachers are merciful and kind and allow the students to copy then no student will ever study for examinations and all will pass with flying colours by copying. The theoretical results of the examinations will be excellent in which all the students will pass with first class and distinction but practically these students will be a failure in life. The whole purpose of the examination would be defeated.

6. This Life is a Test for the Hereafter

The life in this world is a test for the Hereafter. The Qur'an says in Surah Al Mulk: "He who created Death and Life, that He may try which of you is best in deed; and He is the Exalted in Might, Oft-Forgiving".
[Al-Qur'an 67:2]

7. If Allah forgives all and punishes none, who will obey him?

If Allah (swt) forgives each and every human being and punishes no one, then why should the human beings obey the command of Allah (swt)? I do agree that no one will go to hell, but this world would become hell to live in. If all human beings are going to go to heaven then what is the purpose and use of the human beings to come to this world, this life cannot be called a test for the hereafter.

8. Allah only forgives if a person repents

Allah (swt) only forgives if a person repents. The Qur'an says in Surah Al-Zumar, chapter 39 verse 53-55:

"Say: 'O my servants who have transgressed against their souls! Despair not of the Mercy of Allah: for Allah forgives all sins for He is Oft-Forgiving, Most Merciful."

"Turn ye to your Lord (in repentance) and bow to His (will), before the penalty comes on you - after that ye shall not be helped."

"And follow the best of (the courses) revealed to you from your Lord, before the penalty comes on you - of a sudden, while ye perceive not!"
[Al-Qur'an 39:53-55]

There are four criteria for repentance: First, agree that the act is wrong. Secondly, stop it immediately. Thirdly, never do it again in future. And lastly, compensate for the loss if caused to anyone.

INTRODUCTION TO CHRISTIANITY

Christianity is a Semitic religion, which claims to have nearly 1.2 billion adherents all over the world. Christianity owes its name to Jesus Christ (peace be on him). The Holy Bible is the sacred scripture of the Christians:

a) The Bible is divided into two parts, the Old Testament and the New Testament. The Old Testament is the Holy Scripture of the Jews and contains records of all the prophets of the Jews (all of whom came before Jesus (pbuh)).

The New Testament contains records of the life of Jesus (pbuh).

b) The complete Bible, i.e. the Old Testament and the New Testament put together, contains 73 books. However, the Protestant Bible i.e. the King James Version, contains only 66 books as they consider 7 books of the Old Testament to be 'apocrypha', i.e. of doubtful authority.

Therefore the Old Testament of the Catholics contains 46 books and that of the Protestants 39 books. However the New Testament of both these sects contains 27 books.

Material to be used for Da'wah to Christians

SR.NO : 1

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : Nelson's Electronic Bible Reference Library - Basic Edition

FORMAT : Two CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : It includes 21 unlocked titles and over 55 additional unlockable Bible Study tools, comprehensive selection of resources for home, school or church use, easy to add additional titles, most powerful Bible Study software available, over 75 titles on 2 CD-Rom, It also includes different types of Bible like the American Standard Version, The Darby Bible, The KJV, The Living Bible, The New Century Version, The revised Standard Version etc. and also contains Commentary / Study Bibles, Maps and Chart, Spirit-Filled Life Library, the Josh McDowell 'Answers' collection, theology / Church history etc.

PRODUCER : Nelson Electronic Publishing

SR.NO : 2

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : The Bible Library

VERSION : 3.0

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : It contains over 60 works in one CD-Rom, 12 Bibles plus over 50 commentaries, dictionaries, references, word studies, Hymn stories, Sermon outlines and illustrations, maps and many more.

PRODUCER: Ellis Enterprises Inc. 4205 McAuley Blvd. #385, Oklahoma City, OK 73120 Tel: (405) 7490273 www.BibleLibrary.com

---

SR.NO : 3

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : The Sage Digital Library

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : Features: 1997 recipient of the Christian Computing Magazine Reader's Choice Award, a library of over 75 Bibles, commentaries, word studies, theologies, dictionaries, histories, biographies, quotations, maps and so much more, including Mathew Henry's Concise Whole Bible commentary, search capabilities including multi-volume searching and "Touch and Go Librarian", copy, paste and prints text for your own learning needs, contains works from famous church pioneers including John Bunyan, John Calvin, Martin Luther, John Wesley, C.H. Spurgeon, D.L. Moody and many more.

SR.NO : 4

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : Thompson Bible Study Library

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : It provides all the basic tools needed for complete interactive study of the Bible and personal exploration of classic Christian reference works, word search facility, choose what and how you want to study, it gives you the tools and data to study topics, places or characters; to do word studies, parallel text studies, scriptural and historical analysis.

PRODUCER : Kirkbride Bible & Technology P. O. Box 606, Indianapolis, IN 46209-9876, USA NavPress Software 1934 Rutland Drive, Suite 500, Austin, Texas 78758, USA Sales:800-888-9898/512-8356900 Fax: 512-8341888 www.WORDsearchBible.com

---

SR.NO : 5

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : Christian Library - Heritage Edition

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : It includes over 80 Resources - on One CD-Rom, Bibles, commentaries, theologies, word studies, dictionaries, histories, maps, biographies, quotations and more.

PRODUCER : Ages Software P. O. Box 1926, Albany, OR 97321, USA Tel:800-2974307 Fax: 541-9170839 www.ageslibrary.com

---

SR.NO : 6

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : Bible Study Companion

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : It contains different versions of the Bible like King James, American Standard Version, Young's Literal Translation, Darby, Latin Vulgate, Spanish R.V.T., French L.S., German E.B. and Dutch L.V., choose one or all ten versions to study, display 2 versions on the same screen for comparison, synchronize the text of both or conduct independent searches, it is a powerful research tools, easy to use.

PRODUCER : Expertsofware Douglas Entrance, Coral Gables, F;Proda 33134, United States of America. Fax: (305)5961350

SR.NO : 7

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : Multi Bible

VERSION : 3.1

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : It contains the new revised standard Bible, The King James (authorised) Version, the New King James Version with powerful searching capability, every word in every version is indexed, displays all Bibles simultaneously for comparison.

PRODUCER : Innotech Multimedia Corporation 2005 Sheppard Ave East, Suite 200, North York, Ontario, Canada M2J 5B4, Tel: (416) 4923838

SR.NO : 8

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : Bethany Bible

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : Bible search programmes, many many versions of the Bible including the King James, the Derby Bible and the Webster Bible, Bible reference Books, 26 Bible games & educational programs, Bible study utilities, church organizers.

PRODUCER : Walnut Creek CD-ROM Walnut Creek, California 64596, United States of America.

SR.NO : 9

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : PC Study Bible (Discovery Edition) King James Version

VERSION : 2.1

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : It includes: One Bible version, an exhaustive concordance and an essential set on lined Bible reference works, attachable study notes, a Bible study / reading plan, color Bible Maps & much more. The only Bible study software with fully cross-linked reference works! Instantly find all the information in any reference work that applies to any Bible verse.

PRODUCER : Bible Soft 22014 7th Ave., SO., Seattle, WA 98198, United States of America. Tel: (206) 8240547

SR.NO : 10

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : Quick Verse - with King James Translation

VERSION : 4.0

FORMAT : CD-ROM

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : Put everything you need for personal Bible study, lesson preparation and casual reading at your fingertips! Quickly search the entire Bible for any section, word or phrase, go directly to any verse, instantly add Bible text to any document, read, study and enjoy the scriptures with the world's most popular Bible concordance software.

PRODUCER : Parsons Technology One Parsons Drive, Hiawatha, Lowa 52233, United States of America. Tel: (319) 3959626 www.QuickVerse.com

---

SR.NO : 11

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : N.I.V. Bible

FORMAT : CD-ROM

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : It includes a full-feature editor for taking notes while studying the Bible, study God's Word utilizing the world's best selling translation of the Bible, fast and powerful search tools for finding important verses, a comprehensive on-line help system, multiple Bible applications including NIV, KJV, NASB and NIV study Bible notes.

SR.NO : 12

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : The CD-Rom Bible

FORMAT : CD-ROM

LANGUAGE : English / HEBREW

DESCRIPTION : The CD-Rom Bible contains the complete Hebrew and English text of the Bible, all 24 books, from Genesis through Chronicles, are available at the touch of a button, this programme has a host of features that simply cannot be found in other products.

PRODUCER : Davka Corporation 7074 N. Western Ave., Chicago, IL 60645, USA Tel (773) 4654070 Fax: 2629298

SR.NO : 13

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : New Scofield Study Bible

VERSION : 2.0

FORMAT : 1.44 Diskettes X 4

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : The New Scofield Study Bible works with quick verse to give you instant access to all of scofield's notes, references and commentary and ultimately a better understanding of the Bible as a whole.

PRODUCER : Parsons Technology One Parsons Drive, Hiawatha, Lowa 52233, United States of America. Tel: (319) 3959626

top

THE BIBLE

SR.NO : 1

NAME OF THE BIBLE : Holy Bible

VERSION : Authorised King James Version

EDITION & YEAR : 1611

SR.NO : 2

NAME OF THE BIBLE : Master Study Bible (Encyclopedia; Concordance; Words of Christ in Red)

VERSION : Authorised King James Version

EDITION & YEAR : 1983

SR.NO : 3

NAME OF THE BIBLE : Holy Bible

VERSION : Revised Standard Version

EDITION & YEAR : 1952

SR.NO : 4

NAME OF THE BIBLE : The Bible

VERSION : Revised Standard Version

EDITION & YEAR : 1971

SR.NO : 5

NAME OF THE BIBLE : Holy Bible

VERSION : New Revised Standard Version with Apocrypha

EDITION & YEAR : 1989

SR.NO : 6

NAME OF THE BIBLE : Holy Bible

VERSION : New International Version

EDITION & YEAR : VIth Edition 1987

SR.NO : 7

NAME OF THE BIBLE : The Holy Bible

VERSION : The Douay Version of the Old Testament and The Confraternity Edition of the New Testament

EDITION & YEAR : 1950

SR.NO : 8

NAME OF THE BIBLE : Good News Bible (with the Apocryphal / Dueterocanonical books)

VERSION : Today's English Version

EDITION & YEAR : 1979

SR.NO : 9

NAME OF THE BIBLE : New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures

VERSION : Jehovah witnesses Version

EDITION & YEAR : 1984

N.B. : IRF HAS MORE THAN FIFTY DIFFERENT VERSIONS OF THE ENGLISH BIBLE

top

STUDY BIBLE

SR.NO : 1

NAME OF THE BIBLE : Thompson Chain-Reference Bible

VERSION : King James Version

EDITION & YEAR : Fifth Improved Edition 1988

SR.NO : 2

NAME OF THE BIBLE : Harper Study Bible

VERSION : Revised Standard Version Reference Edition with Concordance and Maps

EDITION & YEAR : 1978

SR.NO : 3

NAME OF THE BIBLE : Holman Study Bible

VERSION : Revised Standard Version

EDITION & YEAR : 1952

SR.NO : 4

NAME OF THE BIBLE : Life Application Study Bible

VERSION : New Living Translation

EDITION & YEAR : 1996

SR.NO : 5

NAME OF THE BIBLE : The Rainbow Study Bible

VERSION : King James Version

EDITION & YEAR : 1989

SR.NO : 6

NAME OF THE BIBLE : The New Testament from 26 Translations

VERSION : (Twenty six different versions / translations)

EDITION & YEAR : 1984

SR.NO : 7

NAME OF THE BIBLE : Eight Translation New Testament

VERSION : Eight different versions: King James Version, The Living Bible, Philips Modern English, Revised Standard Version, Today's English Version, New International Version, Jerusalem Bible, New English Bible.

EDITION & YEAR : 1974

SR.NO : 8

NAME OF THE BIBLE : The Five Gospels (The Search for the Authentic Words of Jesus)

VERSION : New Translation and Commentary by Robert W. Funk, Roy W. Hoover and the Jesus Seminar

EDITION & YEAR : 1993

top

TEN MOST COMMON QUESTIONS ASKED BY CHRISTIAN MISSIONARIES AGAINST ISLAM

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

1. QUR'AN PLAGIARIZED FROM THE BIBLE :

Question

Is it not true that Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) has copied the Qur'an from the Bible?

Answer

Many critics allege that Prophet Muhummad (pbuh) himself was not the author of the Qur'an but he learnt it and/or plagiarised (copied or adapted) it from other human sources or from previous scriptures or revelations.

1. MUHUMMAD LEARNT THE QUR'AN FROM A ROMAN BLACKSMITH WHO WAS A CHRISTIAN

Some Pagans accused the Prophet of learning the Qur'an from a Roman Blacksmith, who was a Christian staying at the outskirts of Makkah. The Prophet very often used to go and watch him do his work. A revelation of the Qur'an was sufficient to dismiss this charge - the Qur'an says in Surah An-Nahl chapter 16 verse 103:

"We know indeed that they say, 'It is a man that teaches him,' The tongue of him they wickedly point to is notably foreign, while this is Arabic, pure and clear."
[Al-Qur'an 16:103]

How could a person whose mother tongue was foreign and could hardly speak little but of poor broken Arabic be the source of the Qur'an which is pure, eloquent, fine Arabic? To believe that the blacksmith taught the Prophet the Qur'an is some what similar to believing that a Chinese immigrant to England, who did not know proper English, taught Shakespeare.

2. MUHUMMAD (PBUH) LEARNT FROM WARAQA - THE RELATIVE OF KHADIJAH (RA)

Muhummad's (pbuh) contacts with the Jewish and Christian Scholars were very limited. The most prominent Christian known to him was an old blind man called Waraqa ibn-Naufal who was a

relative of the Prophet's first wife Khadijah (r.a.). Although of Arab descent, he was a convert to Christianity and was very well versed with the New Testament. The Prophet only met him twice, first when Waraqa was worshipping at the Kaaba (before the Prophetic Mission) and he kissed the Prophet's forehead affectionately; the second occasion was when the Prophet went to meet Waraqa after receiving the first revelation. Waraqa died three years later and the revelation continued for about 23 years. It is ridiculous to assume that Waraqa was the source of the contents of the Qur'an.

3. PROPHET'S RELIGIOUS DISCUSSIONS WITH THE JEWS AND CHRISTIANS

It is true that the Prophet did have religious discussions with the Jews and Christians but they took place in Madinah more than 13 years after the revelation of the Qur'an had started. The allegation that these Jews and Christians were the source is perverse, since in these discussions Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) was performing the roles of a teacher and of a preacher while inviting them to embrace Islam and pointing out that they had deviated from their true teachings of Monotheism. Several of these Jews and Christians later embraced Islam.

4. THE PROPHET LEARNT THE QUR'AN FROM THOSE JEWS AND CHRISTIANS THAT HE MET OUTSIDE ARABIA

All historical records available show that Muhummad (pbuh) had made only three trips outside Makkah before his Prophethood:

i. At the age of 9 he accompanied his mother to Madinah.
ii. Between the age of 9 and 12, he accompanied his uncle Abu-Talib on a business trip to Syria.
iii. At the age of 25 he led Khadija's Caravan to Syria.

It is highly imaginary to assume that the Qur'an resulted from the occasional chats and meetings with the Christians or Jews from any of the above three trips.

5. LOGICAL GROUNDS TO PROVE THAT THE PROPHET DID NOT LEARN THE QUR'AN FROM JEWS OR CHRISTIANS

i. The day-to-day life of the Prophet was an open book for all to see. In fact a revelation came asking people to give the Prophet (pbuh) privacy in his own home. If the Prophet had been meeting people who told him what to say as a revelation from God, this would not have been hidden for very long.
ii. The extremely prominent Quraish nobles who followed the Prophet and accepted Islam were wise and intelligent men who would have easily noticed anything suspicious about the way in which the Prophet brought the revelations to them - more so since the Prophetic mission lasted 23 years.
iii. The enemies of the Prophet kept a close watch on him in order to find proof for their claim that he was a liar - they could not point out even a single instance when the Prophet may have had a secret rendezvous with particular Jews and Christians.
iv. It is inconceivable that any human author of the Qur'an would have accepted a situation in which he received no credit whatsoever for originating the Qur'an.

Thus, historically and logically it cannot be established that there was a human source for the Qur'an.

6. MUHUMMAD (PBUH) WAS AN ILLITERATE

The theory that Muhummad (pbuh) authored the Qur'an or copied from other sources can be disproved by the single historical fact that he was illiterate.

Allah testifies Himself in the Qur'an
In Surah Al-Ankabut chapter no.29 verse 48

"And thou was not (able) to recite a Book before this (Book came), nor art thou (able) to transcribe it with thy right hand: in that case, indeed, would the talkers of vanities have doubted."
[Al-Qur'an 29:48]

Allah (swt) knew that many would doubt the authenticity of the Qur'an and would ascribe it to Prophet Muhummad (pbuh). Therefore Allah in His Divine Wisdom chose the last and final Messenger to be an 'Ummi', i.e. unlettered, so that the talkers of vanity would not then have the slightest justification to doubt the Prophet. The accusation of his enemies that he had copied the Qur'an from other sources and rehashed it all in a beautiful language might have carried some weight, but even this flimsy pretence has been deprived to the unbeliever and the cynic.

Allah reconfirms in the Qur'an in Surah Al A'raf chapter 7 verse 157:

"Those who follow the Messenger, the unlettered Prophet, whom they find mentioned in their own (Scriptures) in the Law and the Gospel"

The prophecy of coming of the unlettered Prophet (pbuh) is also mentioned in the Bible in the book of Isaiah chapter 29 verse 12.

"And the book is delivered to him that is not learned."
[Isaiah 29:12]

The Qur'an testifies in no less than four different places that the Prophet (pbuh) was illiterate. It is also mentioned in Surah A'raf chapter 7 verse 158 and in Surah Al-Jumu'a chapter 62 verse 2.

7. ARABIC VERSION OF THE BIBLE WAS NOT PRESENT

The Arabic version of the Bible was not present at the time of Prophet Muhummad (pbuh). The earliest Arabic version of the Old Testament is that of R. Saadias Gaon of 900 C.E. - more than 250 years after the death of our beloved Prophet. The oldest Arabic version of the new Testament was published by Erpenius in 1616 C.E. - about a thousand years after the demise of our Prophet.

8. SIMILARITIES IN THE QUR'AN AND THE BIBLE DUE TO COMMON SOURCE

Similarities between the Qur'an and the Bible does not necessarily mean that the former has been copied from the latter. In fact it gives evidence that both of them are based on a common third source; all divine revelations came from the same source - the one universal God. No matter what human changes were introduced into some of these Judeo-Christian and other older religious scriptures that had distorted their originality, there are some areas that have remained free from distortion and thus are common to many religions.

It is true that there are some similar parallels between the Qur'an and the Bible but this is not sufficient to accuse Muhummad (pbuh) of compiling or copying from the Bible. The same logic would then also be applicable to teachings of Christianity and Judaism and thus one could wrongly claim that Jesus (pbuh) was not a genuine Prophet (God forbid) and that he simply copied from the Old Testament.

The similarities between the two signify a common source that is one true God and the continuation of the basic message of monotheism and not that the later prophets have plagiarised from the previous prophets.

If someone copies during an examination he will surely not write in the answer sheet that he has copied from his neighbour or Mr. XYZ. Prophet Muhummad (pbuh) gave due respect and credit to all the previous prophets (pbut). The Qur'an also mentions the various revelations given by Almighty God to different prophets.

9. MUSLIMS BELIEVE IN THE TAURAH, ZABOOR, INJEEL AND QUR'AN

Four revelations of Allah (swt) are mentioned by name in the Qur'an: the Taurah, the Zaboor, the Injeel and the Qur'an.

Taurah, the revelation i.e. the Wahi given to Moosa (a. s.) i.e. Moses (pbuh).
Zaboor, the revelation i.e. the Wahi given to Dawood (a.s.) i.e. David (pbuh).
Injeel, the revelation i.e. the Wahi given to Isa (A.S.) ie. Jesus (pbuh).
'Al-Qur'an', the last and final Wahi i.e. revelation given to the last and final Messenger Muhammad (pbuh).

It is an article of faith for every Muslim to believe in all the Prophets of God and all revelations of God. However, the present day Bible has the first five books of the Old Testament attributed to Moses and the Psalms attributed to David. Moreover the New Testament or the four Gospels of the New Testament are not the Taurah, the Zaboor or the Injeel, which the Qur'an refers to. These books of the present day Bible may partly contain the word of God but these books are certainly not the exact, accurate and complete revelations given to the prophets.

The Qur'an presents all the different prophets of Allah as belonging to one single brotherhood; all had a similar prophetic mission and the same basic message. Because of this, the fundamental teachings of the major faiths cannot be contradictory, even if there has been a considerable passage of time between the different prophetic missions, because the source of these missions was one: Almighty God, Allah. This is why the Qur'an says that the differences which exist between various religions are not the responsibility of the prophets, but of the followers of these prophets who forgot part of what they had been taught, and furthermore, misinterpreted and changed the scriptures. The Qur'an cannot therefore be seen as a scripture which competes with the teachings of Moses, Jesus and the other prophets. On the contrary, it confirms, completes and perfects the messages that they brought to their people.

Another name for the Qur'an is the 'The Furqan' which means the criteria to judge the right from the wrong, and it is on the basis of the Qur'an that we can decipher which part of the previous scriptures can be considered to be the word of God.

10. SCIENTIFIC COMPARISON BETWEEN QUR'AN AND BIBLE

If you glance through the Bible and the Qur'an you may find several points which appear to be exactly the same in both of them, but when you analyse them closely, you realise that there is a difference of 'chalk and cheese' between them. Only based on historical details it is difficult for someone who is neither conversant with Christianity or Islam to come to a firm decision as to which of the scriptures is true; however if you verify the relevant passages of both the scriptures against scientific knowledge, you will yourself realize the truth.

a. **Creation of the Universe in Six Days**
   As per the Bible, in the first book of Genesis in Chapter One, the universe was created in six days and each day is defined as a twenty-four hours period. Even though the Qur'an

mentions that the universe was created in six ‘Ayyaams’, ‘Ayyaam’ is the plural of years; this word has two meanings: firstly, it means a standard twenty-four hours period i.e. a day, and secondly, it also means stage, period or epoch which is a very long period of time.

When the Qur’an mentions that the universe was created in six ‘Ayyaams’, it refers to the creation of the heavens and the earth in six long periods or epochs; scientists have no objection to this statement. The creation of the universe has taken billions of years, which proves false or contradicts the concept of the Bible which states that the creation of the Universe took six days of twenty-four hour durations each.

b. **Sun Created After the Day**

The Bible says in chapter 1, verses 3-5, of Genesis that the phenomenon of day and night was created on the first day of creation of the Universe by God. The light circulating in the universe is the result of a complex reaction in the stars; these stars were created according to the Bible (Genesis chapter 1 verse 14 to 19) on the fourth day. It is illogical to mention the result that is the light (the phenomenon of day and night) was created on the first day of Creation when the cause or source of the light was created three days later. Moreover the existence of evening and morning as elements of a single day is only conceivable after the creation of the earth and its rotation around the sun. In contrast with the contents of the Bible on this issue, the Qur’an does not give any unscientific sequence of Creation. Hence it is absolutely absurd to say that Prophet Muhummad (pbuh) copied the passages pertaining to the creation of the universe from the Bible but missed out this illogical and fantastic sequence of the Bible.

c. **Creation of the Sun, The Earth and the Moon**

According to the Bible, Book of Genesis, chapter 1, verses 9 to 13, the earth was created on the third day, and as per verses 14 to 19, the sun and the moon were created on the fourth day. The earth and the moon emanated, as we know, from their original star, the Sun. Hence to place the creation of the sun and the moon after the creation of the earth is contrary to the established idea about the formation of the solar system.

d. **Vegetation Created on the third day and Sun on the fourth day**

According to the Bible, Book of Genesis, chapter 1, verses 11-13, vegetation was created on the third day along with seed-bearing grasses, plants and trees; and further on as per verses 14-19, the sun was created on the fourth day. How is it scientifically possible for the vegetation to have appeared without the presence of the sun, as has been stated in the Bible?

If Prophet Muhummad (pbuh) was indeed the author of the Qur’an and had copied its contents from the Bible, how did he manage to avoid the factual errors that the Bible contains? The Qur’an does not contain any statements which are incompatible with scientific facts.

e. **The Sun and the Moon both Emit light**

According to the Bible both the sun and the moon emit their own light. In the Book of Genesis, chapter 1, verse 16 says, "And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night".

Science tells us today that the moon does not have its own light. This confirms the Qur’anic concept that the light of the moon is a reflected light. To think that 1400 years ago, Prophet Muhummad (pbuh) corrected these scientific errors in the Bible and then copied such corrected passages in the Qur’an is to think of something impossible.

11. ADAM (PBUH), THE FIRST MAN ON EARTH, LIVED 5,800 YEARS AGO

As per the genealogy of Jesus Christ given in the Bible, from Jesus through Abraham (pbuh) to the first man on earth i.e. Adam (pbuh), Adam appeared on the earth approximately 5800 years ago:

i. 1948 years between Adam (pbuh) and Abraham (pbuh)

ii. Approximately 1800 years between Abraham (pbuh) and Jesus (pbuh)
iii. 2000 years from Jesus (pbuh) till today

These figures are further confused by the fact that the Jewish calendar is currently on or about 5800 years old.

There is sufficient evidence from archaeological and anthropological sources to suggest that the first human being on earth was present tens of thousands of years ago and not merely 5,800 years ago as is suggested by the Bible.
The Qur'an too speaks about Adam (pbuh) as the first man on earth but it does not suggest any date or period of his life on earth, unlike the Bible - what the Bible says in this regard is totally incompatible with science.

12. NOAH (PBUH) AND THE FLOOD

The Biblical description of the flood in Genesis chapter 6, 7 and 8 indicates that the deluge was universal and it destroyed every living thing on earth, except those present with Noah (pbuh) in the ark. The description suggests that the event took place 1656 years after the creation of Adam (pbuh) or 292 years before the birth of Abraham, at a time when Noah (pbuh) was 600 years old. Thus the flood may have occurred in the 21st or 22nd Century B.C.

This story of the flood, as given in the Bible, contradicts scientific evidence from archaelogical sources which indicate that the eleventh dynasty in Egypt and the third dynasty in Babylonia were in existence without any break in civilisation and in a manner totally unaffected by any major calamity which may have occurred in the 21st century B.C. This contradicts the Biblical story that the whole world had been immersed in the flood water. In contrast to this, the Qur'anic presentation of the story of Noah and the flood does not conflict with scientific evidence or archaeological data; firstly, the Qur'an does not indicate any specific date or year of the occurance of that event, and secondly, according to the Qur'an the flood was not a universal phenomenon which destroyed complete life on earth. In fact the Qur'an specifically mentions that the flood was a localised event only involving the people of Noah.

It is illogical to assume that Prophet Muhummad (pbuh) had borrowed the story of the flood from the Bible and corrected the mistakes before mentioning it in the Qur'an.

13. MOSES (PBUH) AND PHARAOH OF THE EXODUS

The story of Moses (pbuh) and the Pharaoh of the Exodus are very much identical in the Qur'an and the Bible. Both scriptures agree that the Pharaoh drowned when he tried to pursue Moses (pbuh) and led the Israelites across a stretch of water that they crossed. The Qur'an gives an additional piece of information in Surah Yunus chapter 10 verse 92:

"This day shall We save thee in thy body, that thou mayest be a sign to those who come after thee! But verily, many among mankind are heedless of Our Signs!"
[Al-Qur'an 10:92]

Dr. Maurice Bucaille, after a thorough research proved that although Rameses II was known to have persecuted the Israelites as per the Bible, he actually died while Moses (pbuh) was taking refuge in Median. Rameses II's son Merneptah who succeeded him as Pharaoh drowned during the exodus. In 1898, the mummified body of Merneptah was found in the valley of Kings in Egypt. In 1975, Dr. Maurice Bucaille with other doctors received permission to examine the Mummy of Merneptah, the findings of which proved that Merneptah probably died from drowning or a violent shock which immediately preceeded the moment of drowning. Thus the Qur'anic verse that we

shall save his body as a sign, has been fulfilled by the Pharaohs' body being kept at the Royal Mummies room in the Egyptian Museum in Cairo.

This verse of the Qur'an compelled Dr. Maurice Bucaille, who was a Christian then, to study the Qur'an. He later wrote a book 'The Bible, the Qur'an and Science', and confessed that the author of the Qur'an can be no one else besides God Himself. Thus he embraced Islam.

14. <u>QUR'AN IS A BOOK FROM ALLAH</u>

These evidences are sufficient to conclude that the Qur'an was not copied from the Bible, but that the Qur'an is the Furqaan - 'the Criteria' to judge right from wrong and it should be used to decipher which portion of the Bible may be considered as the Word of God.

The Qur'an itself testifies in Surah Sajda chapter 32 verse 1 to 3

Alif Laam Meem.

(This is) the revelation of the Book in which there is no doubt – from the Lord of the Worlds.

Or do they say, 'He has forged it'? Nay, it is the Truth from thy Lord, that thou mayest admonish a people to whom no warner has come before thee: in order that they may receive guidance."
[Al-Qur'an 32:1-3]

7. DIFFERENCE BETWEEN MARY AND MIRIAM

Question

It is mentioned in your Qur'an that Mary was the sister of Aaron (pbuh). Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) who wrote the Qur'an did not know the difference between Miriam the sister of Aaron (pbuh) and Mary the Mother of Jesus (pbuh), the time span between both of them was about a thousand years.

Answer

1. <u>IN THE SEMITIC LANGUAGES SISTER ALSO MEANS DESCENDANT</u>

The Qur'an mentions in Surah Maryam, Chapter 19 verses 27-28

"At length she brought the (babe) to her people, carrying him (in her arms). They said: 'O Mary! Truly an amazing thing hast thou brought!

O sister of Aaron! Thy father was not a man of evil, nor thy mother a woman unchaste!'"
[Al-Qur'an 19:27-28]

Christian missionaries say that Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) did not know the difference between Mary the mother of Jesus (pbuh) and Miriam the sister of Aaron (pbuh). The time span between both was more than a thousand years.

In the Arabic construction of the sentence, sister is also considered as a descendant. Thus, when the people said to Mary, Ukhta Haroon i.e. 'sister of Aaron' it actually means descendant of Aaron (pbuh).

2. <u>SON ALSO MEANS DESCENDANT</u>

It is mentioned in the Gospel of Mathew, Chapter 1 verse 1

"Jesus Christ, the son of David,....".
[Mathew 1:1]

Gospel of Luke Chapter 3, verse 23

"And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, ..."
[Luke 3:23]

DID JESUS (PBUH) HAVE TWO FATHERS?

What do you call a person who has two fathers? The explanation of the phrase that Jesus (pbuh) was the son of David (pbuh), is that Jesus (pbuh) was a descendant of David (pbuh). 'Son', here means a descendant.

8. JESUS (PBUH) DID NOT DIE

Question

Is it not true that your Qur'an mentions in Surah Maryam, Chapter 19 verse 33 that Jesus (pbuh) died and was resurrected?

Answer

JESUS (PBUH) SAID, "THE DAY THAT I DIE", NOT "THE DAY THAT I DIED"

It is mentioned in Surah Maryam, Chapter 19 verse 33

"So Peace is on me the day I was born, the day that I die and the Day that I shall be raised up to life (again)".
[Al-Qur'an 19:33]

The Qur'an mentions that Jesus (pbuh) said "Peace is on me the Day I was born, the day that I die". It is not stated "the day that I died". It is in the future tense and not in the past tense.

1. JESUS (PBUH) WAS RAISED UP ALIVE

The Qur'an further says in Surah Nisa, Chapter 4 verse 157-158:

"That they said (in boast), 'We killed Jesus Christ the son of Mary, the Messenger of Allah' – But they killed him not, Nor crucified him, but so it was made to appear to them, and those who differ therein are full of doubts, with no (certain) knowledge, but only conjecture to follow, for of a surety they killed him not –

Nay, Allah raised him up unto Himself; and Allah is exalted in Power, Wise."
[Al-Qur'an 4:157-158]

9. JESUS IS "A WORD" OF ALLAH AND A "SPIRIT" FROM ALLAH

Question

Does not your Qur'an mention that Jesus is Kalimatullah –"The Word of Allah (swt)", as well as Ruhullah – "The Spirit of Allah", indicating his Divinity?

Answer

1. <u>JESUS (PBUH) "IS A WORD FROM ALLAH" NOT "THE WORD OF ALLAH"</u>

The Qur'an mentions in Surah Ali 'Imran Chapter 3 verse 45

"Behold! The angels said: O Mary! Allah giveth thee glad tidings of a Word from Him: his name will be Christ Jesus. The son of Mary, held in honour in this world and the Hereafter and of (the company of) those Nearest to Allah.
[Al-Qur'an 3:45]

Jesus (pbuh) is referred in the Qur'an as a word from Allah and not as 'the word of Allah'.

"A word" of Allah means a message of Allah. If a person is referred to as "a word" from Allah, it means that he is a Messenger or a Prophet of Allah.

2. <u>THE TITLE OF A PROPHET (PBUH) DOES NOT MEAN THAT IT EXCLUSIVELY BELONGS TO THAT PROPHET (PBUH)</u>

Different titles are given to different prophets (pbut). Whenever a title is given to a prophet (pbuh), it does not necessarily mean that the other prophets do not have the same characteristic or quality. For e.g. Prophet Abraham (pbuh) is referred to in the Qur'an as Khaleelullah, a friend of Allah. This does not indicate that all the other Prophets (pbuh) were not the friends of Allah. Prophet Moses (pbuh) is referred to in the Qur'an as Kaleemullah, indicating that God spoke to him. This does not mean that God did not speak to others. Similarly when Jesus (pbuh) is referred to in the Qur'an as Kalimatullah, "a word from Allah", it does not mean that the other Prophets were not "the word," of Allah.

3. <u>JOHN THE BAPTIST (PBUH) IS ALSO CALLED "A WORD" OF ALLAH</u>

Yahya (pbuh) i.e. John the Baptist (pbuh) is also referred to in the Qur'an as Kalimatullah i.e. a word of Allah in Surah Ali 'Imran, Chapter 3, verses 38-39

"There did Zakariya Pray to his Lord, saying: "O my Lord! Grant unto me from Thee a progeny that is pure: for Thou art He that heareth prayer!

While he was standing in prayer in the chamber, the angels called unto him: "Allah doth give thee glad tidings of Yahya, witnessing the truth of a Word from Allah, and (be besides) noble, chaste, and a Prophet – of the (goodly) company of the righteous."
[Al-Qur'an 3:39]

4. <u>JESUS (PBUH) REFERRED AS RUHULLAH – A SPIRIT OF ALLAH</u>

Jesus (pbuh) also never referred to as Ruhullah "a spirit of Allah" but as a spirit from Allah in Surah Nisa Chapter 4 verse 171

"O People of the Book! Commit no excesses in your religion: nor say of Allah aught but the truth. Jesus Christ the son of Mary was (no more than) a Messenger of Allah, And His Word, which He bestowed on Mary, and a Spirit proceeding from Him: so believe in Allah and His Messengers.

Say not ‘Trinity’: desist: it will be better for you: for Allah is One God: glory be to Him: (Far Exalted is He) above having a son. To Him belong all things in the heavens and on earth. And enough is Allah as a Disposer of affairs."
[Al-Qur’an 4:171]

5. SPIRIT OF ALLAH IS BREATHED IN EVERY HUMAN BEING

A spirit from Allah does not indicate that Jesus (pbuh) is God. The Qur’an mentions in several places that Allah breathed into the human beings "His Spirit" in Surah Al-Hijr, chapter 15 verse 29 in Surah Sajdah, chapter 32 verse 9

Surah Al Hijr Chapter 15 verse 29

"When I have fashioned him (in due proportion) and breathed into him of My spirit, fall ye down in obeisance unto him."
[Al-Qur’an 15:29]

Surah Sajdah Chapter 32 verse 9

"But He fashioned him in due proportion, and breathed into him something of His spirit. And He gave you (the faculties of) hearing and sight and feeling (and understanding): little thanks do ye give!"
[Al-Qur’an 32:9]

10. IS NOT THE QUR’AN WRITTEN BY SATAN?

Question

The Qur’an is not the Word of God but on the contrary the handiwork of Satan.

Answer

In reply to a similar allegation put forward by the pagans of Makkah, that the prophet (pbuh) received the revelations from Satan, the following verses were revealed:

Surah Waqiah, chapter 56 verses 77-80

"That this is indeed
A Qur’an most honourable,

In a Book well-guarded,

Which none shall touch
But those who are clean:

A Revelation from the Lord
Of the Worlds."

Kitabim Maknoon means a book well guarded or a protected book, referring to Lauh-e-Mahfooz in the heaven, which none shall touch except the Mutahhareen. i.e. those who do not have any

uncleanliness or impurity or evil like sin. This refers to the angels. The satan is absolutely prohobited.

Thus since it is impossible for satan to come anywhere close to it or touch it, the question of him writing the verses of the Glorious Qur'an does not arise.

It is further mentioned in Surah Shura, chapter 26 verse 210-212

"No evil ones have brought
Down this (Revelation):

It would neither suit them
Nor would they be able (To produce it).

Indeed they have been removed
Far from even (a chance of)
Hearing it."

Many people have a wrong concept of satan. They think that satan can probably do everything, except a couple of things that God can do. According to them, satan is slightly below God in power. Since the people do not want to accept that the Qur'an is a miraculous revelation, they say that it is satan's handiwork.

1. If satan would have written the Qur'an, he would not have mentioned in the same Qur'an in Surah Nahl, chapter 16 verse no. 98

   "When thou does read
   The Qur'an, seek Allah's protection from Satan the Rejected One."

   Is this how you feel satan would write a book? Does he tell you; "Before you read my book ask God to save you from me?"

2. There are several verses in the Qur'an which will give enough evidence that satan is not the author of the Qur'an.

   In Surah Al Aaraf chapter 7 verse 200

   "If a suggestion from Satan assail your (mind),
   seek refuge with Allah; for He hears and knows
   (all things).

   Why would satan tell his followers, that whenever he gives any suggestions to them, they should seek refuge in Allah (swt) to whom he is an avowed enemy.

3. In Surah Baqarah, chapter 2 verse 168

   "O ye people!
   Eat of what is on earth, lawful and good;
   and do not follow the footsteps of the Evil one,
   For he is to you an avowed enemy."

4. In Surah Yasin, chapter 36 verse 60

   "Did I not enjoin on you,
   O ye children of Adam,
   that ye should not worship Satan;
   for that he was to you an enemy avowed?"

   Satan is intelligent, no wonder that he can put this idea into the minds of people that he himself wrote the Qur'an. Compared to Almighty God, Satan is insignificant, and Allah (swt) is far more intelligent. He knows satan's evil intentions and hence no wonder that He has given the reader of the Qur'an several proofs to show that Qur'an is God's word, and not satan's word.

   The Bible mentions in the Gospel of Mark, chapter 3, verses 24-26

   "And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that
   kingdom cannot stand."

   "And if a house be divided against itself,
   that house cannot stand."

   "And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end."

IS THE BIBLE GOD'S WORD?

CHAPTER ONE

WHAT THEY SAY

CHRISTIANS CONFESS

Dr. W. Graham Scroggie of the MOODY BIBLE INSTITUTE, Chicago, one of the most prestigious Christian Evangelical Mission in the world, answering the question — **"Is the Bible the Word of God?"** (also the title of his book), under the heading: **IT IS HUMAN, YET DIVINE.** He says on page 17:

"Yes, the Bible is **human,** though some, out of zeal which is not according to knowledge, [1] have denied this. Those books[2] have passed through the **minds of men,** are written in the **language of men**, were penned by the hands **of men,** and bear in their style the **characteristics of** men." (Emphasis added).

Another erudite Christian scholar, Kenneth Cragg, the Anglican Bishop of Jerusalem, says on page 277 of his book, **"The Call of the Minaret":**

"Not so the New Testament[3] . . . There is **condensation** and editing; [4]there is **choice, reproduction** and **witness.** The Gospels have come through the **mind of the Church behind the authors.** They represent **experience** and **history."** [5]

If words have any meaning, do we need to add another word **of** comment to prove our case? No! But the professional propagandists, after letting the cat out of the bag, still have the face to try to make their readers believe that they have proved beyond the shadow of any doubt that the Bible is the "irrefragable [6] Word of God." Their semantic gymnastics — equivocating, and playing with words — is amazing!

1. Out of ignorance.

2. The Bible is not Just a **Book. It** is a selection and compilation of many books.

3. As opposed to the Qur'ân.

4. Another word for Interpolating.

5. Emphasis are mine.

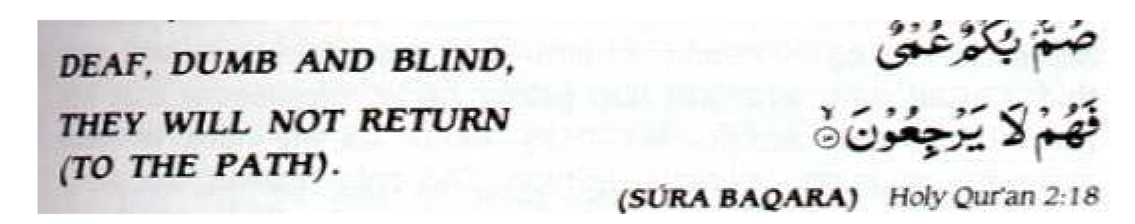
6. Indisputable.

Both these Doctors of Religion are telling us in the clearest language humanly possible that the Bible is the handiwork of man, all the while pretending that they are proving to the contrary. An old Arab saying goes: "IF SUCH ARE THE PRIESTS, GOD BLESS THE CONGREGATION."

With this sort of drivel, the hot-gospeller and the Bible-thumper is "inspired" to harry the "heathen."[1] A theological student — a not-yet-qualified young evangelist — from the University of Witwatersrand, became a frequent visitor to the Newtown Mosque in Johannesburg, with the "noble" thought of "witnessing"[2] to the members of its congregation. When I was introduced to him, (and having learnt his purpose), I invited him to lunch at my brother's residence — a stone's-throw from the Mosque. While discussing the authenticity of the Bible over the dinner table and sensing his stubborn dogmatism, I put out a feeler: "Your **Professor** Geyser, (The Head of the Department of Theology) does not believe the Bible to be the Word of God." Without the slightest surprise he answered, "I know." Now I personally had no knowledge of the Professor's conviction about the Bible. I had only assumed so from a controversy which raged around him about the "Divinity of Christ."[3] He had taken issue with the orthodox believers on this point some years ago. I continued further, saying, "Your **lecturer** does not believe the Bible as being God's Word." The young evangelist, responded again, "I know" but he continued this time-with the words, **"but I believe** that it is the Word of God!" There is no real remedy for such people. Even Jesus bewailed this sickness:

"... seeing they see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand." (Matthew 13:13)

Al-Qur'an, the Holy Book of God, also condemns this mulish mentality:



These pages are now addressed to those sincerely humble souls, who are genuinely interested in seeking the Light of God, and who wish to be guided by it. As for the other, with a sickness in their souls, the facts presented herein can only increase the disease of their hearts.

1. See **"How Lost are the Heathen?"** by the same MOODY PRESS of Dr. Scroggie.

2. When the Christian talks of "witnessing" he means propagating, proselytizng, converting.

3. This subject is dealt extensively in the book — **"CHRIST IN ISLAM"**

CHAPTER TWO

THE MUSLIMS' STANDPOINT

PRESUMPTUOUS CHRISTIANS

Whether Catholic, Protestant or a "Cultist," of the thousand -and - one - sects - and - denominations-of-Christianity, never will you find a missionary who will not, **prima facie,** presuppose that his potential convert accepts his "Holy Bible" as the book of final authority on every religious opinion? The only answer the prospective proselyte has is to quote verses from the Bible which are contradictory to the missionary's or debate their interpretations.

THE DOGGED QUESTION

When the Muslim proves his point from the Christian's own **Holy** Scripture, and when the professional priest, parson or predikant cannot refute the arguments — the inevitable Christian evasion is — "DO YOU ACCEPT THE BIBLE AS GOD'S WORD? On the face of it, the question seems to be an easy one, but a simple "Yes" or "No" cannot be given as an answer. You see, one has first to explain one's position. But the Christian will not give one the opportunity. He gets impatient. "Answer — 'Yes or No!' " he insists. The Jews did the same to Jesus two thousand years ago, except that surprisingly he was not strait-jacketed, as is the fashion today!

The reader will readily agree that things are not always either BLACK or WHITE. Between these two extremes there are various shades of GREY. If you say "Yes" to his question, then it would mean that you are prepared to swallow everything HOOK, LINE and SINKER, from **Genesis** to**Revelation** from his Bible. If you respond with a "No" he quickly unhooks himself from the facts you have presented, and rallies support from his co-religionists in the audience with; "You see, this man does not believe in the Bible! What right has he to expound his case from our Book?" With this hydra-like somersault he rests content that he has safely evaded the issue. What is the **Muballigh**[1]to do? He has to explain his position **vis-a-vis** the Bible, as he ought to do.

1. MUBALLIGH: The Propagator of Islam

THREE GRADES OF EVIDENCE

We Muslims have no hesitation in acknowledging that in the Bible, there are three different kinds of witnessing recognizable without any need of specialized training. These are:

1. You will be able to recognize in the Bible what may be described as **"The Word of God."**

2. You will also be able to discern what can be described as the **"Words of a Prophet of God."**

3. And you will most readily observe that the bulk of the Bible is the records of eye witnessess or ear witnesses, or people writing from hearsay. As such they are the **"Words of a Historian"**

You do not have to hunt for examples of these different types of evidences in the Bible. The following quotations will make the position crystal clear:

The **FIRST** Type:

(a) **I** will raise them up a prophet . . . and **I** will put my words in ... and he shall speak unto them all that **I** shall command him." (Deuteronomy 18:18)

(b) **I** even, **I** am the Lord, and beside **me** there is no saviour." (Isaiah 43:11)

(c) "Look unto **me**, and be ye saved, all the end of the earth: for **I** am God, and there is non else." (Isaiah 45:22)

Note the first person pronoun singular (highlighted in green) in the above references, and without any difficulty you will agree that the statements seem to have the sound of being GOD'S WORD.

The **SECOND** Type:

(a) ***"Jesus cried*** with a loud voice, saying ***Eli, Eli, lama sabachtani?*** . . ." (Matthew 27:46)

(b) "And **Jesus answered him**, The first of all the commandments is, **Hear, O Israel; the Lord our God is one Lord:"** (Mark 12:29)

(c) "And **Jesus said** unto him, Why callest thou me good? There is none good but one, that is God." (Mark 10:18).

Even a child will be able to affirm that: Jesus **"cried"** Jesus **"answered"** and Jesus **"said"** are the words of the one to whom they are attributed, i.e. the WORDS OF A PROPHET OF GOD.

The **THIRD** Type:

"And seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves, **he**, (JESUS) came, if haply**he** (JESUS) might find anything thereon: and when he (JESUS) came **to it,**(Jesus) found nothing but leaves . . ." (Mark 11:13)

The bulk of the Bible is a witnessing of this **THIRD** kind. These are the words of a **third** person. Note the underlined pronouns. They are not the Words of God or of His prophet, but the WORDS OF A HISTORIAN.

For the Muslim it is quite easy to distinguish the above types of evidence, because he also has them in his own faith. But of the followers of the different religions, he is the most fortunate in this that his various records are contained in **separate** Books!

ONE: The first kind — THE WORD OF GOD — is found in a Book called**The Holy Qur'ân.**

TWO: The second kind — THE WORDS OF THE PROPHET OF GOD, (Muhummed, may the peace and blessings of Allah be upon him) are recorded in the Books of Tradition called **The Hadeeth.**

THREE: Evidence of the third kind abounds in different volume of Islamic history, written by some of high integrity and learning, and others of lesser trustworthiness, but the Muslim advisedly keeps his Books in separate volumes!

The Muslim keeps the above three types of evidence Jealously apart, in their proper gradations of authority. He never equates them. On the other hand, the "Holy Bible" contains a motley type of literature, which composes the embarrassing kind, the sordid, and the obscene — all under the same cover — A Christian is forced to concede equal spiritual import and authority to all, and is thus unfortunate in this regard.

CHAPTER THREE

THE MULTIPLE BIBLE VERSIONS

It will now be easy for us to analyze a Christian's claim about his Holy Book.

SEPARATING THE WHEAT FROM THE CHAFF

Before we scrutinize the various versions, let us clarify our own belief regarding the Books of God. When we say that we believe in the **Tauraat,**the **Zaboor,** the **Injeel** and the **Qur'an,** what do we really mean? We already know that the Holy Qur'an is the infallible Word of God, revealed to our Holy Prophet Hazrat Muhummed Mustapha (Peace be upon him) word for word,

through the agency of the Archangel Jibraeel, (known as Gabriel in English), and perfectly preserved and protected from human tampering for the past fourteen hundred years![1] Even hostile critics of Islam have grudgingly vouched for the purity of the Holy Qur'ân: **"THERE IS PROBABLY IN THE WORLD NO OTHER BOOK WHICH HAS REMAINED TWELVE CENTURIES** (now fourteen) **WITH SO PURE A TEXT."** — (Sir William Muir)

The **Tauraat** we Muslims believe in is not the "Torah" of the Jews and the Christians, though the words — one Arabic, the other Hebrew — are the same. We believe that whatever the Holy Prophet Moses (Peace be upon him) preached to his people, was the revelation from God Almighty, but that Moses was **not** the author of those "books" attributed to him by the Jews and the Christians.[2]

Likewise, we believe that the **Zaboor** was the revelation of God granted to Hazrat Dawood (David) (Peace be upon him), but that the present Psalms associated with his name are **not** that revelation. The Christians themselves do **not** insist that David is the sole author of "his" Psalms.3

1. Whether Muslim or non-Muslim, you do not have lo accept this claim on**faith** alone. You **can** verify the fact that Al-Qur'ân is the Word of God. See**"AL-QURAN- The Miracle of Miracles";**

2- More evidence later on — "Moses not the author of the Biblical**"Torah."**

3.. Later on you'll read how Christian "Brains Trust" confess — "Author; Principally David, **though there are other writers."**

What about the **Injeel?** INJEEL means the "Gospel" or "good news" which Jesus Christ preached during his short ministry. The "Gospel" writers often mention that Jesus going about and preaching the Gospel (the **Injeel):**

1. "And Jesus went . . . preaching the **gospel** . . . and healing every disease among the people." ***(Matthew 9:35)***

2. "... but whosoever shall lose his fife for my sake and the **gospel's,** the same shall save it." ***(Mark 8:35)***

3. "... preached the **gospel. .** ." ***(Luke 20:1)***

The "gospel" is a frequently-used word, but what Gospel did Jesus preach? Of the 27 books of the New Testament, only a small fraction can be accepted as the words of Jesus. The Christians boast about the Gospels according to St. Matthew, according to St. Mark, according to St. Luke and according to St. John,

but there is not a single Gospel **"according"** to (St.) Jesus himself! We **sincerely** believe that everything Christ (May the peace and blessings of God be upon him) preached was from God. That was the **Injeel,** the good news and the guidance of God for the Children of Israel. In his life-time Jesus never wrote a single word, nor did he instruct anyone to do so. What passes off as the "GOSPELS" today are the works of anonymous hands!

The question before us is: **"Do you accept that the Bible is God's Word?"** The question is really in the form of a challenge. The questioner is not simply seeking enlightenment. The question is posed in the spirit of a debate. We have every right to demand in a similar vein — "Which Bible are you talking about?", we may ask. "Why, there is only ONE Bible!" he mutters.

THE CATHOLIC BIBLE

Holding the **"Douay"** Roman Catholic Version of the Bible aloft in my hand, I ask, "Do **YOU** accept **THIS** Bible as the Word of God?" For reasons best known to themselves, the Catholic Truth Society have published their Version of the Bible in a very short, stumpy form. This Version is a very odd proportion of the numerous Versions in the market today. The Christian questioner is taken aback. "What Bible is that?" he asks. "Why, I thought you said that there was only ONE Bible!" I remind him. "Y-e-s," he murmurs hesitantly, "but what Version is that?" "Why, would that make any difference?" I enquire. Of course it does, and the professional preacher knows that it does. He is only bluffing with his "ONE Bible" claim.

The Roman Catholic Bible was published at Rheims in 1582, from Jerome's Latin Vulgate and reproduced at Douay in 1609. As such the RCV (Roman Catholic Version) is the oldest Version that one can still buy today. Despite its antiquity, the whole of the Protestant world, including the "cults"* condemn the RCV because it contains seven extra "books" which they contemptuously refer to as the **"apocrypha"** i.e. of DOUBTFUL AUTHORITY. Notwithstanding the dire warning contained in the Apocalypse, which is the last book in the RCV (renamed as **"Revelation"** by the Protestants), it is "revealed":

". . . If any man shall add to these things (or delete) ***God shall add unto him the plagues written in this Book." (Revelation 22:18-19)***

But who cares! They do not really believe! The Protestants have bravely **expunged seven whole books** from their Book of God! The outcasts are:

The Book of Judith
The Book of Tobias
The Book of Baruch
The Buck of Esther, etc.

***** This disparaging title is given by the orthodox to Jehovah's Witnesses, the Seventh Day Adventists and a thousand other sects and denominations with whom they do not see eye to eye.

THE PROTESTANT BIBLE

Sir Winston Churchill has some pertinent things to say about the Authorised Version (AV) of the Protestant Bible, which is also widely known as the "King James Version (KJV)".

"THE AUTHORISED VERSION OF THE BIBLE WAS PUBLISHED IN 1611 BY THE **WILL** AND **COMMAND** OF **HIS MAJESTY** KING JAMES THE 1ST WHOSE NAME IT BEARS TILL TODAY."

The Roman Catholics, believing as they do that the Protestants have mutilated the Book of God, are yet aiding and abetting the Protestant "crime" by forcing their native converts to purchase the Authorised Version (AV) of the Bible, which is the only Bible available in some 1500 languages of the lesser developed nations of the world. The Roman Catholics milk their cows, but the feeding is left to the Protestants! The overwhelming majority of Christians — both Catholics and Protestant — use the**Authorised** (AV) or the **King James Version** (KJV) as it is alternatively called.

GLOWING TRIBUTES

First published, as Sir Winston says, in 1611, and then revised in 1881 (RV), and now re-revised and brought up to date as the **Revised Standard Version** (RSV) 1952, and now again re-re-revised in 1971 (still RSV for short). Let us see what opinion Christendom has of this most revised Bible, the RSV:-

1. "THE FINEST VERSION WHICH HAS BEEN PRODUCED IN THE PRESENT CENTURY." **— (Church of England Newspaper)**

2. "A COMPLETELY FRESH TRANSLATION BY SCHOLARS OF THE HIGHEST EMINENCE." — **(Times literary Supplement)**

3. "THE WELL-LOVED CHARACTERISTICS OF THE AUTHORISED VERSION COMBINED WITH A NEW ACCURACY OF TRANSLATION." — **(Life and Work)**

4. "THE MOST ACCURATE AND CLOSE RENDERING OF THE ORIGINAL" **— (The Times)**

The publishers (Collins) themselves, in their notes on the Bible at the end of their production, say on page 10: "THIS BIBLE **(RSV)**, IS THE PRODUCT OF **THIRTY-TWO SCHOLARS,** ASSISTED BY AN ADVISORY COMMITTEE

REPRESENTING **FIFTY** CO-OPERATING DENOMINATIONS." Why all this boasting? To make the gullible public buy their product? All these testimonies convince the purchaser that he is backing the right horse, with the purchaser little suspecting that he is being taken for a ride.

"THE WORLD'S BEST SELLER"

But what about the Authorised Version of the Bible (AV), the "World's Best Seller?" These Revisers, all good salesmen, have some very pretty things to say about it. However, their page iii, paragraph six of the PREFACE of the RSV reads;

"THE KING JAMES VERSION (alternative description of AV) HAS WITH GOOD REASON BEEN TERMED **'THE NOBLEST MONUMENT OF ENGLISH PROSE.'** ITS REVISERS IN 1881 EXPRESSED ADMIRATION FOR **'ITS SIMPLICITY, ITS DIGNITY, ITS POWER, ITS HAPPY TURNS OF EXPRESSION ... THE MUSIC OF ITS CADENCES, AND THE FELICITIES OF ITS RHYTHM.'** IT ENTERED, AS NO OTHER BOOK HAS, INTO THE MAKING OF THE PERSONAL CHARACTER AND THE PUBLIC INSTITUTIONS OF THE ENGLISH-SPEAKING PEOPLES. WE OWE TO IT AN INCALCULABLE DEBT."

Can you, dear reader, imagine a more magnificent tribute being paid to the "Book of Books" than the above? I, for one, cannot. Let the believing Christian, now steel himself for the un-kindest blow of all from his own beloved Lawyers of Religion; for in the very same breath they say:

"YET THE KING JAMES VERSION HAS GRAVE DEFECTS." And, "THAT THESE DEFECTS ARE **SO MANY AND SO SERIOUS** AS TO CALL FOR REVISION . . ." This is straight from the horse's mouth, i.e. the orthodox Christian scholars of "the highest eminence." Another galaxy of Doctors of Divinity are now required to produce an encyclopedia explaining the cause of those GRAVE AND SERIOUS DEFECTS in their Holy Writ and their reasons for eliminating them.

PREFACE

THE Revised Standard Version of the Bible is an authorized revision of the American Standard Version, published in 1901, which was a revision of the King James Version, published in 1611.

The first English version of the Scriptures made by direct translation from the original Hebrew and Greek, and the first to be printed, was the work of William Tyndale. He met bitter opposition. He was accused of willfully perverting the meaning of the Scriptures, and his New Testaments were ordered to be burned as "untrue translations." He was finally betrayed into the hands of his enemies, and in October 1536, was publicly executed and burned at the stake.

Yet Tyndale's work became the foundation of subsequent English versions, notably those of Coverdale, 1535; Thomas Matthew (probably a pseudonym for John Rogers), 1537; the Great Bible, 1539; the Geneva Bible, 1560; and the Bishops' Bible, 1568. In 1582 a translation of the New Testament, made from the Latin Vulgate by Roman Catholic scholars, was published at Rheims.

The translators who made the King James Version took into account all of these preceding versions; and comparison shows that it owes something to each of them. It kept felicitous phrases and apt expressions, from whatever source, which had stood the test of public usage. It owed most, especially in the New Testament, to Tyndale.

The King James Version had to compete with the Geneva Bible in popular use; but in the end it prevailed, and for more than two and a half centuries no other authorized translation of the Bible into English was made. The King James Version became the "Authorized Version" of the English-speaking peoples.

The King James Version has with good reason been termed "the noblest monument of English prose." Its revisers in 1881 expressed admiration for "its simplicity, its dignity, its power, its happy turns of expression . . . the music of its cadences, and the felicities of its rhythm." It entered, as no other book has, into the making of the personal character and the public institutions of the English-speaking peoples. We owe to it an incalculable debt.

Yet the King James Version has grave defects. By the middle of the nineteenth century, the development of Biblical studies and the discovery of many manuscripts more ancient than those upon which the King James Version was based, made it manifest that these defects are so many and so serious as to call for revision of the English translation. The task was undertaken, by authority of the Church of England, in 1870. The English Revised Version of the Bible was published in 1881–1885; and the American Standard Version, its variant embodying the preferences of the American scholars associated in the work, was published in 1901.

Because of unhappy experience with unauthorized publications in the two decades between 1881 and 1901, which tampered with the text of the English Revised Version in the supposed interest of the American public, the American Standard Version was copyrighted, to protect the text from unauthorized changes. In 1928 this copyright was acquired by the International Council of Religious Education, and thus passed into the ownership of the churches of the United States and Canada which were associated in this Council through their boards of education and publication.

The Council appointed a committee of scholars to have charge of the text of the American Standard Version and to undertake inquiry as to whether

This is a photographic reproduction from the R.S.V. 1971.

CHAPTER FOUR

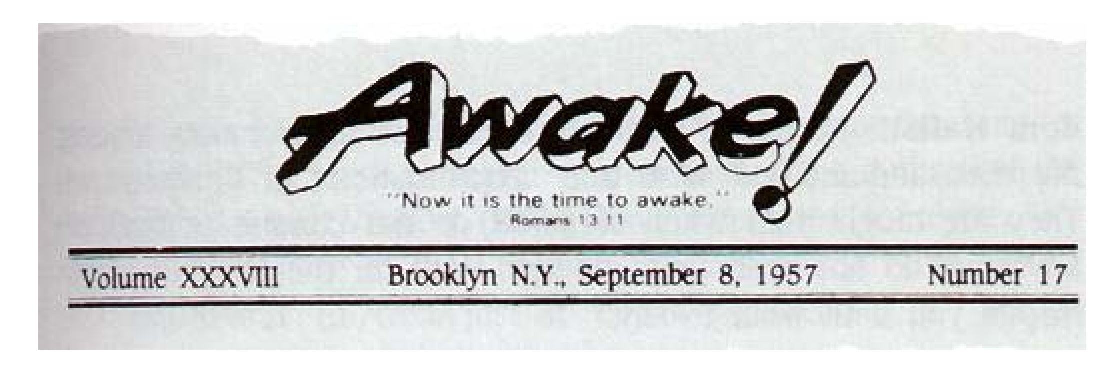
FIFTY THOUSAND ERRORS (?)

The Jehovah's Witnesses in their **"AWAKE!"** Magazine dated 8 September, 1957, carried this startling headline — **"50000 ERRORS IN THE BIBLE?"** (See below for the reproduction).

While I was still formulating the theme of this booklet, I heard a knock at my door one Sunday morning. I opened the door. A European gentleman stood there, grinning broadly. "Good morning'" he said. "Good morning" I replied. He was

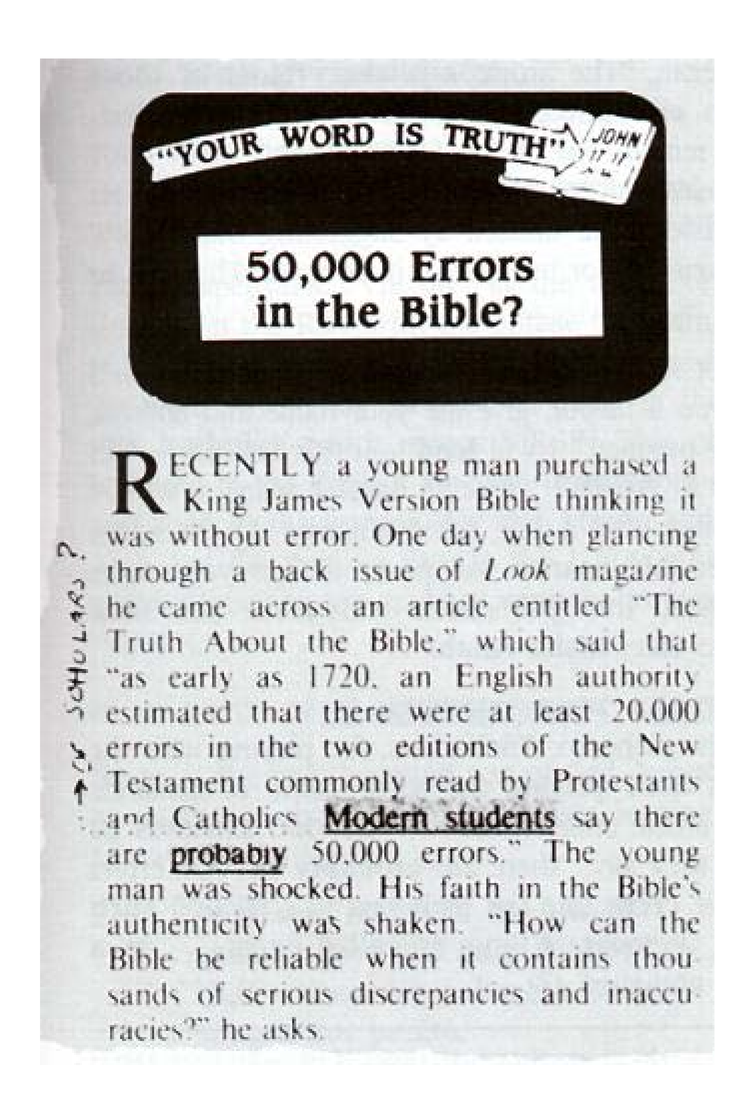
offering me his **"Awake"** and **"Watchtower"** magazines. Yes, a Jehovah's Witness! If a few had knocked at your door previously, you will recognize them immediately. The most supercilious lot of people who ever knocked at people's doors! I invited him in.

As soon as he settled down, I produced the full reproduction of what you see below. Pointing to the monograph at the top of the page, I asked, "Is this your's?" He readily recognised his own. I said, "It says: 50 000 Errors in the Bible, is it true?" "What's that!" he exclaimed. I repeated, "I said, that it says, that there are 50 000 errors in your Bible." "Where did you get that?" He asked. (This was published 23 years ago, when he was perhaps a little nipper) I said, "Leave the fancy talk aside — is this your's?" pointing again to the monograph — **"Awake!"** He said, "Can I have a look?" "Of course," I said. I handed him the page. He started perusing. They (the Jehovah's Witnesses) are trained. They attend classes five times a week in their "Kingdom Halls." Naturally, they are the fittest missionaries among the thousand -and - one - sects - and - denominations of Christendom. They are taught that when cornered, do not commit yourself to anything, do not open your mouths. Wait for the Holy Ghost to inspire you with what to say.


Awake!

"Now it is the time to awake."
Romans 13:11

Volume XXXVIII   Brooklyn N.Y., September 8, 1957   Number 17



"YOUR WORD IS TRUTH" JOHN 17:17

50,000 Errors in the Bible?

RECENTLY a young man purchased a King James Version Bible thinking it was without error. One day when glancing through a back issue of *Look* magazine he came across an article entitled "The Truth About the Bible," which said that "as early as 1720, an English authority estimated that there were at least 20,000 errors in the two editions of the New Testament commonly read by Protestants and Catholics. Modern students say there are probably 50,000 errors." The young man was shocked. His faith in the Bible's authenticity was shaken. "How can the Bible be reliable when it contains thousands of serious discrepancies and inaccuracies?" he asks.

I silently kept watching him, while he browsed the page. Suddenly he looked up. He had found it. The "Holy Ghost" had tickled him. He began, "The article says that **"most of those errors have been eliminated."** I asked "If **MOST** are eliminated, how many remain out of 50000? 5000? 500? 50? Even if 50 remain, do you attribute those errors to God?" He was speechless. He excused himself by suggesting that he will come again with some senior member of his Church. That will be the day!

If I had this booklet ready, I would have offered him, saying — "I would like to do you a favour, give me your name and address, and your telephone number. I will **lend** you this booklet — **IS THE BIBLE GOD'S WORD?"** for 90 days. I want a written reply!" If you do this, And a few other Muslims do the same. They and the other missionaries will never darken your doors again. I believe that this publication will prove the most effective talisman to date. **Insha-Allah!**

This "cult" of Jehovah's Witnesses which is so strong in its condemnation of the orthodox Trinitarians, for playing with the "Word of God," is itself playing the same game of semantic gymnastics. In the article under review — **"50000**

ERRORS IN **THE BIBLE?"** — they say: "there are **probably**50 000 errors . . . errors that have **crept** into the Bible text . . . 50000 **such serious** (?) errors… **most** of those **so-called** errors**... as a whole** the Bible is accurate." (?)

We do not have the time and space to go into the tens of thousands of — grave or minor — defects that the authors of the Revised Standard Version (RSV) have attempted to revise. We leave that privilege to the Christian scholars of the Bible. Here I will endeavour to cast just a cursory glance at a "half-a-dozen" or so of those "minor" changes.

1. ***"Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign: Behold, a VIRGIN shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel."***

(Isaiah 7:14 - AV)

The indispensable "VIRGIN" in the above verse has now been replaced in the RSV with the phrase **"a young woman,"** which is the correct translation of the Hebrew word **almah.** Almah is the word which has occurred all along in the Hebrew text and NOT **bethulah** which means VIRGIN. This correction is only to be found in the English language translation, as the RSV is only published in this tongue. For the African and the Afrikaner, the Arab and the Zulu, in fact, in the 1 500 other languages of the world, Christians are made to continue to swallow the misnomer "VIRGIN."

BEGOTTEN, NOT MADE

"Jesus is the only begotten son of God, **begotten** not **made,"** is an adjunct of the orthodox catechism, leaning for support on the following:

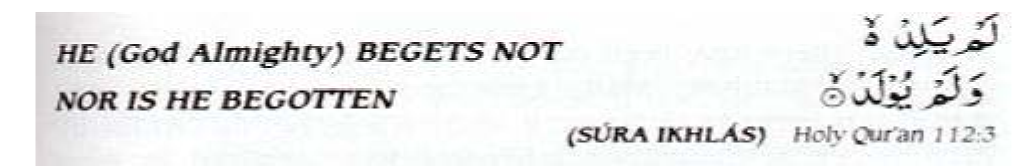
2. ***For God so loved the world, that he gave his only BEGOTTEN son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life." (John 3:16 - AV)***

No priest worth his cloth would fail to quote **"the only BEGOTTEN of the Father!"** when preaching to a prospective convert. But this fabrication — "BEGOTTEN" — has now been unceremoniously excised by the Bible Revisers, without a word of excuse. They are as silent as church-mice and would not draw the reader's attention to their furtive excision. This blasphemous word "BEGOTTEN" was another of the many such interpolations in the "Holy Bible." God Almighty condemned this blasphemy in the strongest terms soon after its innovation. He did not wait for 2000 years for Bible scholars to reveal the fraud.

AND THEY SAY: "(GOD) MOST GRACIOUS HAS BEGOTTEN A SON!"	وَقَالُوا اتَّخَذَ الرَّحْمٰنُ وَلَدًا
INDEED YE HAVE PUT FORTH A THING MOST MONSTROUS!	لَقَدْ جِئْتُمْ شَيْئًا إِدًّا
AT IT THE SKIES ARE READY TO BURST,	تَكَادُ السَّمٰوٰتُ يَتَفَطَّرْنَ مِنْهُ
AND THE EARTH TO SPLIT ASUNDER,	وَتَنْشَقُّ الْأَرْضُ
AND THE MOUNTAINS TO FALL DOWN IN UTTER RUIN,	وَتَخِرُّ الْجِبَالُ هَدًّا
THAT THEY SHOULD INVOKE A SON FOR (GOD) MOST GRACIOUS.	أَنْ دَعَوْا لِلرَّحْمٰنِ وَلَدًا
FOR IT IS NOT CONSONANT WITH THE MAJESTY OF (GOD) MOST GRACIOUS	وَمَا يَنْبَغِي لِلرَّحْمٰنِ
THAT HE SHOULD BEGET A SON.	أَنْ يَتَّخِذَ وَلَدًا

(SÚRA MARYAM) Holy Qur'an 19:88-92

The Muslim World should congratulate the **"Fifty cooperating denominations"** of Christendom and their Brains Trust the **"Thirty-two scholars of the highest eminence"** for bringing their Holy Bible a degree nearer to the Qur-anic truth.



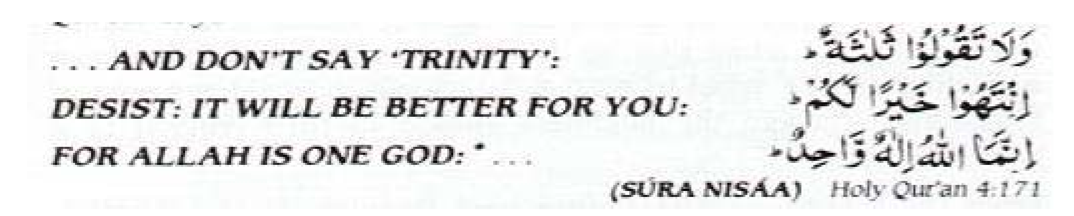
"CHRISTIAN MES-A-MATHICS"

3. ***"For there are three that bear record in heaven, the FATHER, the WORD, and the HOLY GHOST: and these three are one."***

1st Epistle of John 5:7 - AV

This verse is the closest approximation to what the Christians call their **Holy Trinity** in the encyclopaedia called the BIBLE. This key-stone of the Christian faith has also been scrapped from the RSV without even a semblance of explanation. It has been a pious fraud all along and well-deservedly has it been expunged in the RSV for the English-speaking people. But for the 1499 remaining language groups of the world who read the Christian concoctions in

their mother tongues, the fraud remains. These people will never know the truth until the Day of Judgement. However, we Muslims must again congratulate the galaxy of D.D.'s who have been honest enough to eliminate another lie from the English (RSV) Bible, thus bringing their Holy Book yet another step closer to the teachings of Islam. For the Holy Qur'an says:



***** Not one in a trinity. Not one in a trinity.

THE ASCENSION

One of the most serious of those **"grave defects"** which the authors of the RSV had tried to rectify concerned the Ascension of Christ. There have been only two references in the Canonical Gospels of Matthew, Mark, Luke and of John to the most stupendous event in Christianity — OF JESUS BEING TAKEN UP INTO HEAVEN. These two references were obtained in every Bible in every language, prior to 1952, when the RSV first appeared. These were:

4a. ***"So then the Lord Jesus, after he had spoken to them, was TAKEN UP INTO HEAVEN, and sat down at the right hand of God." (Mark 16:19)***

4b. ***"While he blessed them, he parted from them, and was CARRIED UP INTO HEAVEN." (Luke 24:51)***

Now please look at the image below, which is a photocopy where the quotation 4a above ought to appear. You will be shocked to note that Mark 16 ends at verse **8,** and after an embarrassing expanse of blank space the missing verses appear in "small print" as a footnote at the bottom of the page. If you can lay your hands on a RSV **1952,** you will find the last six words of 4b above, i.e. **"AND WAS CARRIED UP INTO HEAVEN"**replaced by a tiny "a" to tell you to see the footnote if you please, where you will find these missing words. Every honest Christian has to admit that he does not consider any footnote in any Bible as the word of God. Why should the paid servants of Christianity consign the mightiest miracle of their religion to a mere footnote?



MARK 16 52 *"He has risen"*

saw a young man sitting on the right side, dressed in a white robe; and they were amazed. [6]And he said to them, "Do not be amazed; you seek Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified. He has risen, he is not here; see the place where they laid him. [7]But go, tell his disciples and Peter that he is going before you to Galilee; there you will see him, as he told you." [8]And they went out and fled from the tomb; for trembling and astonishment had come upon them; and they said nothing to any one, for they were afraid.[k]

NOTE MARK 16
ENDS AT VERSE 8

NOTE THE HUGE EXPANSE
BETWEEN THE TEXT
AND THE FOOTNOTE

MARK 16:9-20
RELEGATED
TO FOOTNOTE

[k]Other texts and versions add as Mk 16.9-20 the following passage:

Revised Standard Version

TRANSLATED FROM THE ORIGINAL TONGUES

BEING THE VERSION SET FORTH A.D. 1611

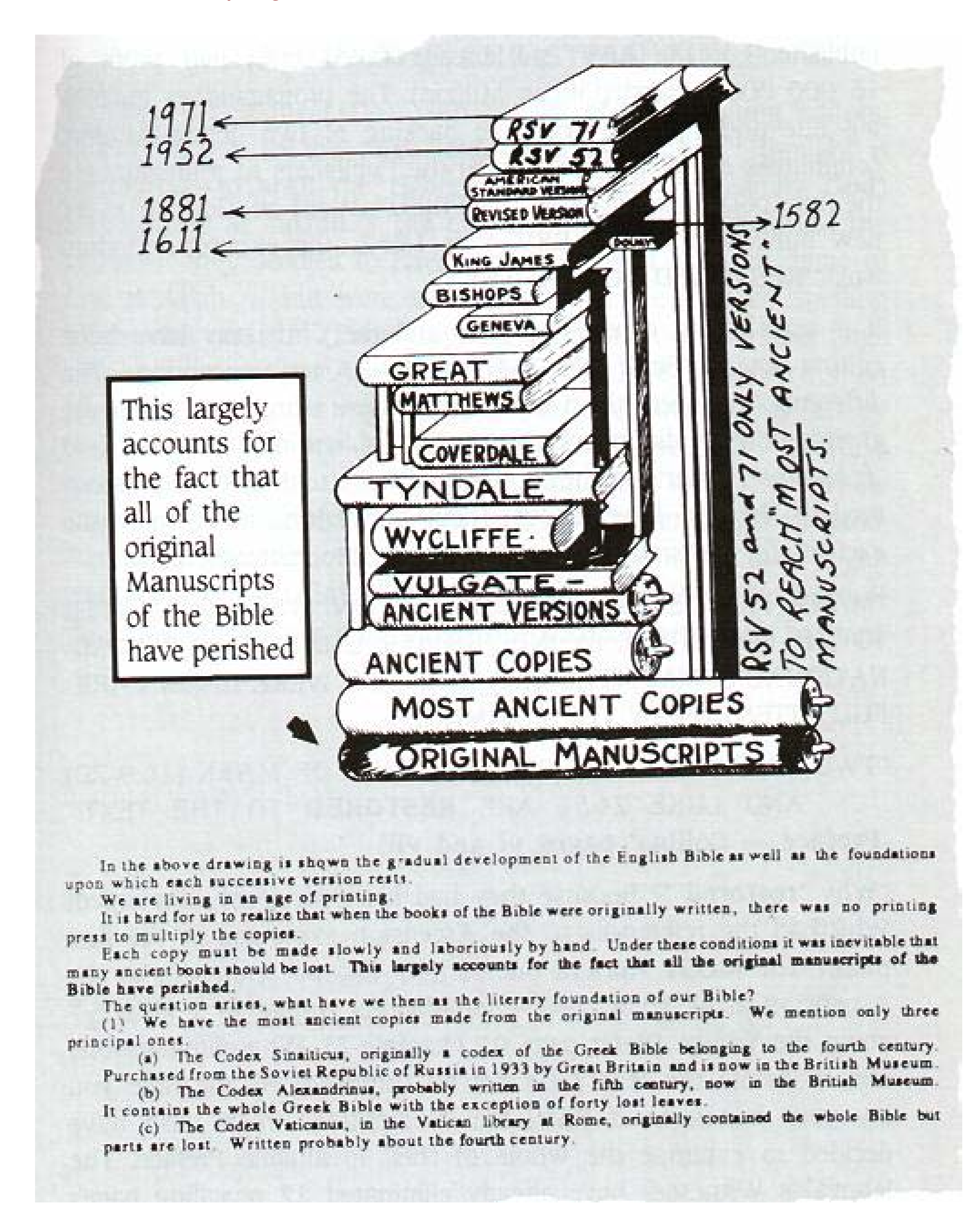
REVISED A.D. 1881-1885 AND A.D. 1901

COMPARED WITH THE MOST ANCIENT AUTHORITIES

AND REVISED A.D. 1952

From the Chart — **"The Origin and Growth of the English** Bible" — appearing below, you will note that all the Biblical "Versions" prior to the Revised Version of 1881 were dependent upon the ANCIENT COPIES — those dating only five or six hundred years after Jesus. The Revisers of the RSV 1952, were the first Bible scholars who were able to tap the **"MOST Ancient** Copies" fully, dating three and four centuries after Christ. We agree that the closer to the source the more

authentic is the document. Naturally "MOST" Ancient deserves credence more than mere "ANCIENT." But not finding a word about Jesus being **"taken up"** or **"carried up"** into heaven in the MOST ANCIENT manuscripts, the Christian fathers expurgated those references from the RSV **1952.**



In the above drawing is shown the gradual development of the English Bible as well as the foundations upon which each successive version rests.

We are living in an age of printing.

It is hard for us to realize that when the books of the Bible were originally written, there was no printing press to multiply the copies.

Each copy must be made slowly and laboriously by hand. Under these conditions it was inevitable that many ancient books should be lost. **This largely accounts for the fact that all the original manuscripts of the Bible have perished.**

The question arises, what have we then as the literary foundation of our Bible?

(1) We have the most ancient copies made from the original manuscripts. We mention only three principal ones.

(a) The Codex Sinaiticus, originally a codex of the Greek Bible belonging to the fourth century. Purchased from the Soviet Republic of Russia in 1933 by Great Britain and is now in the British Museum.

(b) The Codex Alexandrinus, probably written in the fifth century, now in the British Museum. It contains the whole Greek Bible with the exception of forty lost leaves.

(c) The Codex Vaticanus, in the Vatican library at Rome, originally contained the whole Bible but parts are lost. Written probably about the fourth century.

THE DONKEY CIRCUS

The above facts are a staggering confession by Christendom that the **"inspired"** authors of the Canonical Gospels did not record a single word about the ASCENSION of Jesus- Yet these **"inspired"** authors were unanimous

in recording that their Lord and Saviour rode a donkey into Jerusalem as his mission drew to a close.

" . . . And they sat him thereon." (The Donkey) ***(Matt. 21:7)***	***" . . . And he sat upon him."*** (The Donkey) ***(Mark 11:7)***
" . . . And they set Jesus Thereon." (The Donkey) ***(Luke 19:35)***	**" . . . Jesus ... sat thereon:"** (The Donkey) ***(John 12:14)***

Could God Almighty have been the author of this incongruous situation — going out of His Way to see that all the Gospel writers did not miss their footing recording of His "son's" donkey-ride into the Holy City — and yet "inspiring" them to black-out the news about His "son's" heavenly flight on the wings of angels?

NOT FOR LONG!

The **hot-gospellers** and the **Bible-thumpers** were too slow in catching the Joke. By the time they realised that the corner-stone of their preaching — THE ASCENSION OF JESUS — had been undermined as a result of Christian Biblical erudition, the publishers of the RSV had already raked in a net profit of 15 000 000 dollars! (Fifteen Million). The propagandists made a big hue and cry, and with the backing of two denominational committees out of the fifty, forced the Publishers to re-incorporate the interpolations into the "INSPIRED" Word of God in every new publication of the RSV after 1952, the expunged portion was "RESTORED TO THE TEXT."

It is an old, old game. The Jews and the Christians have been editing their "Book of God" from its very inception. The difference between them and the ancient forgerers is that the ancient forgers did not know the art of writing "prefaces" and "footnotes", otherwise they too would have told us as clearly as our modern heroes have about their tampering, and their glib excuses for transmuting forged currency into glittering gold.

"MANY PROPOSALS FOR MODIFICATION WERE SUBMITTED TO THE COMMITTEE BY INDIVIDUALS AND BY TWO DENOMINATIONAL COMMITTEES ALL OF THESE WERE GIVEN CAREFUL ATTENTION BY THE COMMITTEE.

"TWO PASSAGES, THE I LONGER ENDING OF MARK (16:9-20) . . . AND LUKE 24:51 ARE **RESTORED** TO THE TEXT." **(Preface — Collins' pages vi and vii)**

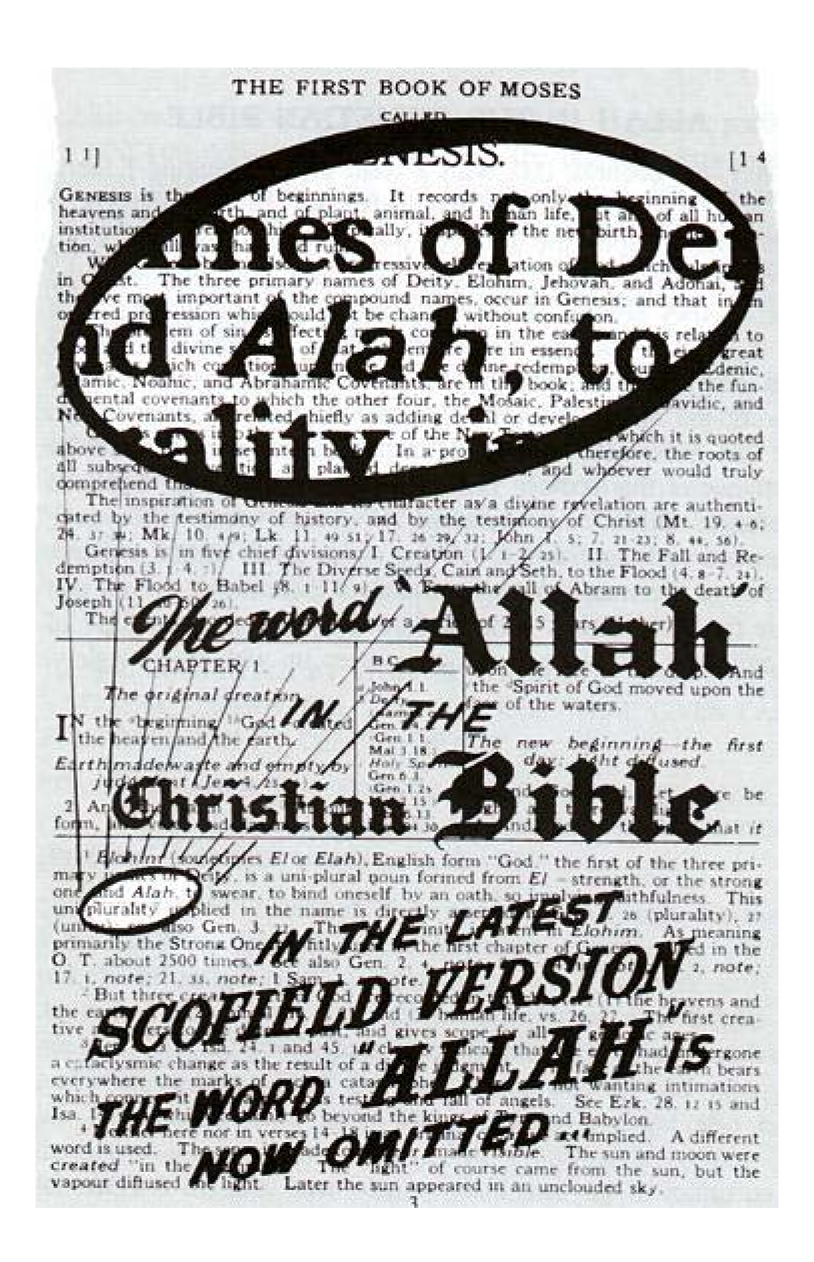
"Why **'restored'"?** Because they had been previously expunged! Why had the references to the Ascension expunged in the first place? The **MOST**Ancient manuscripts had no references to the Ascension at all. They were interpolations

similar to ***1 John 5:7*** about the Trinity. (Refer to the earlier example 3). Why eliminate one and re-instate the other? Do not be surprised! By the time you lay your hands on a RSV, the "Committee" might also have decided to expunge the whole of their invaluable Preface. The Jehovah's Witnesses have already eliminated 27 revealing pages of their FOREWORD to their **"New World Translation of the CHRISTIAN GREEK SCRIPTURES,"** (this is their way of saying — New Testament).

ALLAH IN THE CHRISTIAN BIBLE

The Rev. C. I. Scofield, D. D. with a team of 8 Consulting Editors, also all D.D.'s in the **"Scofield Reference Bible"** thought it appropriate to spell the Hebrew word **"Elah"** (meaning **God)** alternatively as **"Alah"** The Christians had thus swallowed the camel — they seemed to have accepted at last that the name of God is Allah — but were still straining at the gnat by spelling Allah with one "L"! (Photographic reproduction of the Bible page showing the word **"ALAH"** is preserved here for posterity below). References were made in public lectures to this fact by the author of this booklet. Believe me, the subsequent **"Scofield Reference Bible"** has retained word for word the whole commentary of Genesis 1:1, but has, by a clever sleight-of-hand, blotted out the word **"Alah"** altogether. There is not even a gap where the word **"Alah"** once used to be.[1] This is in the Bible of the orthodox! One is hard pressed to keep up with their Jugglery.

1. See **"WHAT IS HIS NAME"** for more information on this Biblical omission of the word Allah. Under the section of "Now you see it, now you don't".



CHAPTER FIVE

DAMNING CONFESSIONS

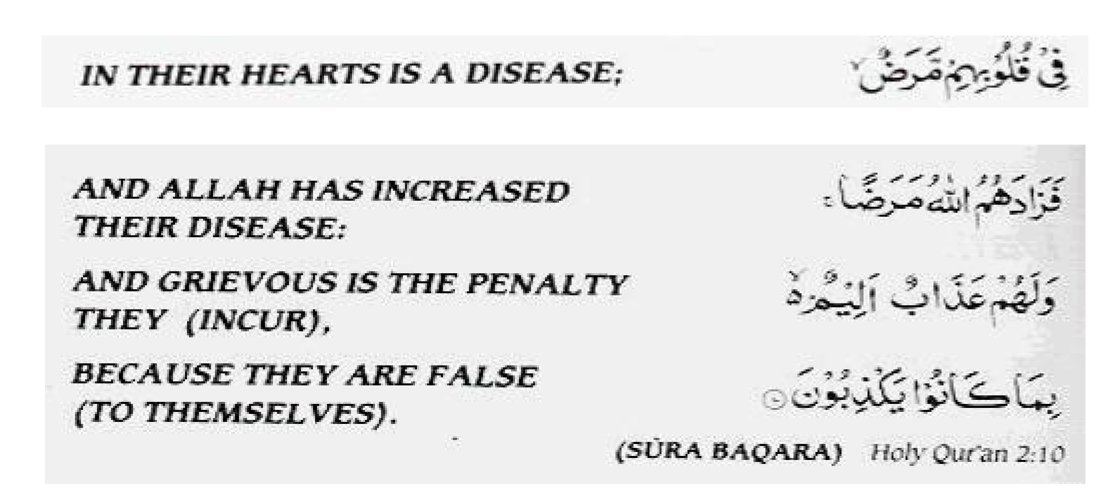
Mrs. Ellen G. White, a "prophetess" of the Seventh Day Adventist Church, in her Bible Commentary Vol. 1, page 14, has this confession to make about the fallibility of the "Holy Bible."

"THE BIBLE WE READ TODAY IS THE WORK OF MANY COPYISTS WHO HAVE IN MOST INSTANCES DONE THEIR WORK WITH MARVELLOUS ACCURACY. BUT COPYISTS HAVE **NOT BEEN INFALLIBLE,** AND GOD

MOST EVIDENTLY HAS **NOT SEEN FIT** TO PRESERVE THEM ALTOGETHER **FROM ERROR** IN TRANSCRIBING."

In the following pages of her commentary, Mrs. White testifies further: "I SAW THAT GOD HAD ESPECIALLY GUARDED THE BIBLE" (from what?) "YET WHEN COPIES OF IT WERE FEW, LEARNED MEN HAD IN SOME INSTANCES **CHANGED THE WORDS,** THINKING THAT THEY WERE MAKING IT PLAIN, WHEN IN REALITY THEY WERE **MYSTIFYING**THAT WHICH WAS PLAIN, BY CAUSING IT TO **LEAN TO THEIR ESTABLISHED VIEWS,** WHICH WERE GOVERNED BY TRADITION."

DEVELOPED SICKNESS



The mental malady is a cultivated one. This authoress and her followers can still trumpet from roof tops that **"Truly, the Bible is the infallible Word of God." "Yes, it is adulterated, but pure" "It is human, yet divine."** Do words have any meaning in their language? Yes, they have in their courts of law, but not in their theology. They carry a "poetic license" in their preaching.

THE WITNESSES

The most vociferous of all the Bible-thumpers are the Jehovah's Witnesses. On page 5 of their "FOREWORD" mentioned earlier, they confess:

"IN COPYING THE INSPIRED ORIGINALS BY HAND THE ELEMENT OF**HUMAN FRAILTY** ENTERED IN, AND SO NONE OF THE THOUSANDS OF COPIES EXTANT TODAY IN THE ORIGINAL LANGUAGE **ARE PERFECT DUPLICATES.** THE RESULT IS THAT **NO TWO** COPIES ARE **EXACTLY ALIKE"** Now you see, why the whole "foreword" of 27 pages is eliminated from their Bibles. Allah was making them to hang themselves with their own erudition.

POT-LUCK

Out of over four thousand differing manuscripts the Christians boast about, the Church fathers just selected four which tallied with their prejudices and called them Gospels of Matthew, Mark, Luke and John. We will deal with each of them in their proper place. **Here/ let** us go over the conclusion of the Jehovah's Witnesses' research as recorded in the now expunged Foreword:

"THE EVIDENCE IS, THEREFORE, THAT THE ORIGINAL TEXT Of THE CHRISTIAN GREEK SCRIPTURES [1] **HAS BEEN TAMPERED WITH,** THE SAME AS THE TEXT OF THE LXX THE SAME AS THE TEXT OF THE LXX[2] HAS BEEN,"

Yet this incorrigible Cult has the effrontery to publish 9 000 000 (Nine Million) copies as a First Edition of a 192-page book entitled — **"Is the Bible REALLY the Word of God?"** We are dealing here with a sick mentality, for no amount of tampering, as they say, will "APPRECIABLY AFFECT THE AUTHENTICITY OF THE BIBLE" (?). This is Christian logic.

1. New Testament.

2. "LXX" meaning **Seventy,** is the JWs alternative title of the Old Testament Do not be mystified; they have a habit of calling a simple four letter word, a "tetragrammaton." meaning **Seventy,** is the JWs alternative title of the Old Testament Do not be mystified; they have a habit of calling a simple four letter word, a "tetragrammaton."

A PATIENT HEARING

Dr. Graham Scroggie in his aforementioned book, pleads, on page 29. for the Bible:-

"AND LET US BE PERFECTLY FAIR AS WE PURSUE THE SUBJECT (Is the Bible the Word of God?). BEARING IN MIND THAT WE ARE TO HEAR **WHAT THE BIBLE HAS TO SAY ABOUT ITSELF.** IN A COURT OF LAW WE ASSUME THAT A WITNESS WILL SPEAK THE TRUTH, AND MUST ACCEPT WHAT HE SAYS UNLESS WE HAVE GOOD GROUNDS FOR SUSPECTING HIM, OR CAN PROVE HIM A LIAR. SURELY THE BIBLE SHOULD BE GIVEN THE SAME OPPORTUNITY TO BE HEARD, AND SHOULD RECEIVE A LIKE PATIENT HEARING."

The plea is fair and reasonable. We will do exactly as he asks and let the Bible speak for itself.

In the first five books of the Bible — **Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy —** there are more than 700 statements which prove not only that God is **NOT** the Author of these books, but that EVEN Moses himself had no hand in them. Open these books at random and you will see:

• "And the **Lord said unto him.** Away, get thee down . . ."

• "And **Moses said unto the Lord,** the people cannot come. . ."

• "And the **Lord said unto Moses,** Go on before the people . . ."

• "And the **Lord spake unto Moses,** saying . . ."

• "And the **Lord said unto Moses,** Get down, charge the **. . ."**

It is manifest and apparent that these are **NEITHER** the Words of God**NOR** of Moses. They indicate the voice of a third person writing from hearsay.

MOSES WRITES HIS OWN OBITUARY?

Could Moses had been a contributor to his own obituary before his demise? Did the Jews write their own obituaries? **"So Moses . . . DIED . . . And he** (God Almighty) **BURIED HIM** (Moses) **... he was 120 years old when he DIED ... And there arose not a prophet SINCE in Israel like unto Moses ..."** ***(Deut. 34:5-10)***. We will analyze the rest of the Old Testament presently from other angles.

CHAPTER SIX

THE BOOK CHRISTENED "THE NEW TESTAMENT"

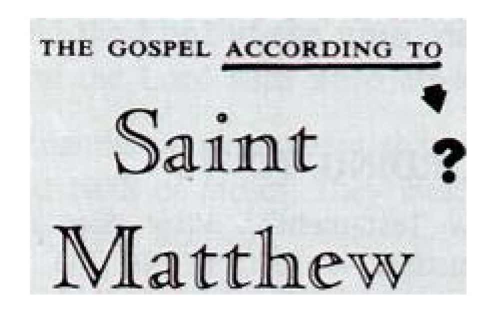
WHY "ACCORDING TO?"

What about the so-called New Testament?[1] Why does every Gospel begin with the introduction — ACCORDING TO ... ACCORDING TO ... (See below). Why **"according to?"** Because not a single one of the vaunted four thousand copies extant carries its author's autograph! Hence the supposition **"according to!"** Even the internal evidence proves that Matthew was not the author of the first Gospel which bears his name.

"And as Jesus passed forth thence, **HE** (JESUS) saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and **HE** (JESUS) saith unto **HIM**(MATTHEW), follow **ME** (JESUS) And **HE** (MATTHEW) arose, and followed **HIM** (JESUS)." ***(Matthew 9:9)***

1. The "so-called," because nowhere does the "New Testament" calls itself the New Testament, and nowhere the Old Testament calls itself the Old **Testament.** And also the word "Bible" is unknown **within the pages**of the Bible. **God forgot to give a title to "HIS" books!**

Without any stretch of the imagination, one can see that the **"He's"** and the**"Him's"** of the above narration do not refer to Jesus or Matthew as its author, but some third person writing what he saw and heard — a hearsay account. If we cannot even attribute this "book of dreams" (as the first Gospel is also described) to the disciple Matthew, how can we accept it as the Word of God?



ST. MATHEW 9

Mathew Called 9.

And as Jesus passed forth from thence, <u>he</u> saw a man named Mathew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and <u>he</u> saith unto <u>him</u>, follow me. And <u>he</u> arose, and followed <u>him</u>.
<u>"HE"</u> AND <u>"HIM"</u> NOT MATHEW!



FORASMUCH as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us,
2 Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses, and ministers of the word;
3 <u>It seemed good to me also</u>, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, <u>to write unto thee in order</u>, most excellent Theophilus,
4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things, wherein thou hast been instructed.





<u>"HE"</u> AND <u>"HIM"</u> NOT JOHN!

ST. JOHN 19

35. And <u>he</u> that saw it bare record, and <u>his</u> record is true: and <u>he</u> knoweth that <u>he</u> saith true, that ye might believe.

ST. JOHN 21

24. This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.

The Conclusion

25. And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, <u>if they should be written every one</u>, I suppose that <u>even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written</u>. Amen.

We are not alone in this discovery that Matthew did not write the **"Gospel according to St. Matthew"** and that it was written by some anonymous hand. J. B. Phillips concurs with us in our findings. He is the paid servant of the Anglican Church, a prebendary of the Chichester Cathedral, England. He would have no reason to lie or betray to the detriment of the official view of his Church! Refer to his introduction to the "Gospel of St. Matthew" (reproduced here below). Phillips has this to say about its authorship.

"EARLY TRADITION ASCRIBED THIS GOSPEL TO THE APOSTLE MATTHEW, BUT SCHOLARS NOWADAYS **ALMOST ALL REJECT THIS VIEW."** In other words, St. Matthew did not write the Gospel which bears his name. This is the finding of Christian scholars of the highest eminence — not of Hindus, Muslims and Jews who may be accused of bias. Let our Anglican friend continue: "THE AUTHOR, WHOM WE STILL CAN CONVENIENTLY CALL MATTHEW" **"Conveniently"** because otherwise everytime we made a reference to "Matthew" we would have to say — **"THE FIRST BOOK OF THE NEW TESTAMENT"** Chapter so and so, verse so and so. And again and again **"The first book . . ."** etc. Therefore, according to J. B. Phillips it is **convenient** that we give the book some name. So why not "Matthew?" Suppose its as good a name as any other! Phillips continues: "THE AUTHOR HAS PLAINLY DRAWN ON**THE MYSTERIOUS 'Q'** WHICH MAY HAVE BEEN A COLLECTION OF ORAL TRADITIONS." What is this **"mysterious 'Q'?"** "Q" is short for the German word **"quella"** which means **"sources."** There is supposed to be another document — a common source — to which our present Matthew, Mark and Luke had access. All these three authors, whoever they were, had a common eye on the material at hand. They were writing as if looking through **"one"** eye. And because they saw eye to eye, the first three "Gospels" came to be known as the Synoptic Gospels.

THE

GOSPELS

translated into Modern English

by

J. B. PHILLIPS

THE GOSPEL OF MATTHEW

The Master taught the disciples not to steal but here Matthew stole wholesale from Mark!

Early tradition ascribed this Gospel to the apostle Matthew, but scholars nowadays almost all reject this view.

The author, whom we still can conveniently call Matthew, has plainly drawn on the mysterious "Q", which may have been a collection of oral traditions. He has used Mark's Gospel freely, though he has rearranged the order of events and has in several instances used different words for what is plainly the same story. The style is lucid, calm and "tidy". Matthew writes with a certain judiciousness as though he himself had carefully digested his material and is convinced not only of its truth but of the divine pattern that lies behind the historic facts.

If Matthew wrote, as is now generally supposed, somewhere between 85 and 90, this Gospel's value as a Christian document is enormous. It is, so to speak, a second generation view of Jesus Christ the Son of God and the Son of Man. It is being written at that distance in time from the great Event where sober reflection and sturdy conviction can perhaps give a better balanced portrait of God's unique revelation of Himself than could be given by those who were so close to the Light that they were partly dazzled by it.

LONDON

GEOFFREY BLES

WHOLESALE CRIBBING

But what about that **"inspiration"** business? The Anglican prebendary has hit the nail on the head. He is, more than anyone else, entitled to do so. A paid servant of the Church, an orthodox evangelical Christian, a Bible scholar of repute, having direct access to the "original" Greek manuscripts, let HIM spell it out for us. (Notice how gently he lets the cat out of the bag):**"HE** (Matthew) **HAS USED MARK'S GOSPEL FREELY"** which in the language of the school-teacher — **"has been copying WHOLESALE from Mark!"** Yet the Christians call this wholesale plagiarism the Word of God?

Does it not make you wonder that an eye-witness and an ear-witness to the ministry of Jesus, which the disciple Matthew was supposed to be, instead of writing his own first hand impressions of the ministry of "his Lord" would go and steal from the writings of a youth (Mark), who was a ten year old lad when Jesus upbraided his nation? Why would an eye-witness and ear-witness copy from a fellow who himself was writing from hearsay? The disciple Matthew would not do any such silly thing. For an anonymous document has been imposed on the fair name of Matthew.

PLAGIARISM OR LITERARY KIDNAPPING

Plagiarism means literary theft. Someone copies ad verbatim (word for word) from another's writing and palms it off as his own, is known as plagiarism. This is a common trait amongst the 40 or so anonymous authors of the books of the Bible. The Christians boast about a supposedly common cord amongst the writers of the 66 Protestant booklets and the writers of the 73 Roman Catholic booklets called the "Holy Bible." Some common cord there is, for Matthew and Luke, or whoever they were, had plagiarised 85% word for word from Mark! God Almighty did not dictate the same wordings to the synoptists (one-eyed). The Christians themselves admit this, because they do not believe in a verbal inspiration, as the Muslims do about the Holy Qur'ân. [1]

This 85% plagiarism of Matthew and Luke pales into insignificance compared to the literary kidnapping of the authors of the Old Testament where a hundred percent stealing occurs in the so-called Book of God. Christian scholars of the calibre of Bishop Kenneth Cragg euphemistically calls this stealing, "reproduction"[2] and take pride in it.

1. See **"AL-QURAN — The Miracles of Miracles"** (coming soon)

2. See beginning of chapter one for the full quotation.

PERVERTED STANDARDS

Dr. Scroggie (referred to earlier on) most enthusiastically quotes in his book Scroggie (referred to earlier on) most enthusiastically quotes in his book[1] a Dr. Joseph Parker for his unique eulogy of the Bible:

"WHAT A BOOK IS THE BIBLE IN THE MATTER OF VARIETY OF CONTENTS! . . . WHOLE PAGES ARE TAKEN UP WITH OBSCURE NAMES, AND MORE IS TOLD OF A GENEALOGY THAN OF THE DAY OF JUDGMENT. STORIES ARE HALF TOLD, AND THE NIGHT FALLS BEFORE WE CAN TELL WHERE VICTORY LAY. WHERE IS THERE ANYTHING" (in the Religious Literature of the world) "TO CORRESPOND WITH THIS?" A beautiful necklace of words and phrases undoubtedly! It is much ado about nothing, and rank blasphemy against God Almighty for authorising such an embarrassing hotch potch. Yet the

Christians gloat over the very defects of their book, like Romeo over the "mole" on Juliet's lip!

1. "Is the Bible the Word of God?" by the Moody Press. by the Moody Press.

NOTHING LESS THAN 100%

To demonstrate the degree of plagiarism practised by the "inspired" Bible writers, I asked my audience during a symposium at the University of Cape Town conducted between myself and Professor Cumpsty the Head of the Department of Theology on the subject **"Is the Bible God's Word?"** to open their Bibles.

Some Christians are very fond of carrying their Bibles under their arms when religious discussions or debates take place. They seem to be utterly helpless without this book. At my suggestion a number of the audience began ruffling the pages. I asked them to open chapter 37 in the **"Book of Isaiah."** When the audience was ready, I asked them to compare my "Isaiah 37" with their "Isaiah 37" while I read, to see whether they were identical. I began, readingly slowly. Verses 1, 2, 4,10, 15, and so on, until the end of the chapter. I kept on asking after every verse if what I had been reading, was identical with the verses in their Bibles. Again and again they chorused — "Yeh!", "Yeh!". At the end of the chapter with the Bible still open in my hands at the place from which I had been reading, I made the Chairman to reveal to the audience that I was not reading from Isaiah 37 at all but from **2 KINGS 19!** There was a terrible consternation in the audience! I had thus established 100% plagiarism in the "Holy Bible." (See below)

In other words, Isaiah 37 and 2 Kings 19 are identical word for word. Yet they have been attributed to two different authors, centuries apart, whom the Christians claim have been inspired by God.

Who is copying whom? Who is stealing from whom? The 32 renowned Bible scholars of the RSV say that the author of the Book of Kings is "UNKNOWN!" See later on for a reproduction from the RSV by **"Collins'".**These notes on the Bible were prepared and edited by the Right Rev. David J. Fant, Litt. D., General Secretary of the New York Bible Society. Naturally, if the Most Reverend gentlemen of Christiandom had an iota of belief about the Bible being the Word of God, they would have said so, but they honestly (shamefacedly?) confess: **"Author —** UNKNOWN!" They are prepared to pay lip service to Scriptures which could have been penned by any Tom, Dick or Harry and expect everyone to regard these as the Word of God — Heaven forbid!

100% PLAGARISM	
II KINGS 19	**ISAIAH 37**

AND it came to pass. when king Hez-e-ki'-ah heard it, that he rent his clothes, and covered himself with sackcloth, and went into the house of the lord. 2 And he sent E-li'-a-kim. which *was*over the household, and Shebna the scribe, and the 'elders of the priests, covered with sackcloth, to Isaiah the prophet the son of Amoz. 3 And they said unto him. Thus saith Hez-e-ki'-ah, This day *is* a day of trouble, and of rebuke, and blasphemy : for the children are come to the birth, and *there is not* strength to bring forth. 5 So the servants of king Hez-e-ki'-ah came to Isaiah. 10 Thus shall ye speak to Hez-e-ki'-ah king of Judah, saying. Let not thy God in whom thou trustest deceive thee, saying. Jerusalem shall not be delivered into the hand of the king of Assyria. 11 Behold, thou hast heard what the kings of Assyria have done to all lands, by destroying them utterly: and shalt thou be delivered? 12 Have the gods of the nations delivered them which my fathers have destroyed; *as* Gozan, and Ha-ran. and Rezeph. and the children of Eden which *were* in Thel'-a-sar? 14 And Hez-e-ki'-ah received the letter of the hand of the messengers. and read it: and Hezekiah went up into the house of the lord, and spread it before the lord; 15 And Hez-e-ki'-ah prayed before the lord, and said. O lord God of Israel, which dwellest *between* the cher'-u-bims. thou art the God. *even* thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth, thou hast made heaven and earth. 36 So Sen-nach'-er-ib king of Assyria departed, and went and returned, and dwelt at Nin'-e-veh. 37 And it came to pass. as he was	**A**ND it came to pass. when king Hez-e-ki'-ah heard *it,* that he rent his clothes, and covered himself with sackcloth, and went into the house of the lord. 2 And he sent E-li'-a-kim. who was over the household, and Shebna the scribe, and the elders of the priests covered with sackcloth, unto Isaiah the prophet the son of Amoz. 3 And they said unto him. Thus saith Hez-e-ki'-ah, This day is a day of trouble, and of rebuke, and of blasphemy: for the children are come to the birth, and *there is* not strength to bring forth. 5 So the servants of king Hez-e-ki'-ah came to Isaiah. 10 Thus shall ye speak to Hez-e-ki'-ah king of Judah. saying. Let not thy God. in whom thou trustest, deceive thee, saving, Jerusalem shall not be given into the hand of the king of Assyria. 11 Behold, thou hast heard what the kings of Assyria have done to all lands by destroying them utterly; and shall thou be delivered? 12 Have the gods of the nations delivered them which my fathers have destroyed, *as* Gozan, and Har-an. and Rezeph. and the children of Eden which *were* in Te-las'-sar? 14 And Hez-e-ki'-ah received the letter from the hand of the messengers, and read it: and Hezekiah went up unto the house of the lord, and spread it before the lord. 15 And Hez-e-ki'-ah prayed unto the lord, saying, 16 O lord of hosts. God of Israel. that dwellest *between* the cher'-u-bims, thou *art* the God, *even* thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth: thou hast made heaven and earth. 37 So Sen-nach'-er-ib king of Assyria departed, and went and returned. and dwelt at Nin'-e-veh.

worshipping in the house of Nis'-roch his god, that A-dram'-me-lech and Sha-re'-zer his sons smote him with the sword: and they escaped into (he land of Armenia. And E-sar-had'-don his son reigned in his stead.	38 And it came to pass. as he was worshipping in thc_house of Nis'-roch his god, that A-dram'-me-lecb and Sha-rc'-zcr his sons smote him with the sword; and they escaped into the land of Armenia: and E'-sar-had'-don his son reigned in his stead.

These verses are culled from the Authorised Version, but you will find the same in every Version.

NO VERBAL INSPIRATION

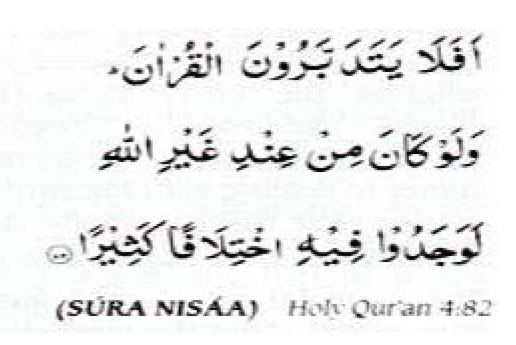
(For a complete list of all the books of the Bible and their authors, avail yourself of the "Collins"' R.S.V. 'with' its annotations). What have Christian scholars to say about the **"Book of Isaiah?"** They say: **"MAINLY**CREDITED TO ISAIAH. PARTS **MAY HAVE BEEN** WRITTEN BY**OTHERS"** In view of the confessions of Bible scholars, we will not take poor Isaiah to task. Can we then nail this **plagiarism** on the door of God? What blasphemy! Professor Cumptsy confirmed at question time, at the end of the aforementioned symposium that the **"Christians do not believe in a verbal inspiration of the Bible"** So God Almighty had not absent-mindedly dictated the same tale twice! Human hands, all too human, had played havoc with this so-called Word of God — the Bible. Yet, Bible-thumpers will insist that "every word, comma and full stop of the Bible is God's Word!"

CHAPTER SEVEN

THE ACID TEST

How do we know that a book claimed to be from God is really the Book of God? One of the tests, out of many such tests, is — that a Message emanating from an Omniscient Being MUST be consistent with itself. It ought to be free from all discrepancies and contradictions. This is exactly what the **LAST** TESTAMENT, the Book of God says:

DO THEY NOT CONSIDER THE QUR'AN (WITH CARE)
HAD IT BEEN FROM ANY OTHER THAN ALLAH
THEY WOULD HAVE FOUND THEREIN MANY A DISCREPANCY



(SÛRA NISÂA) Holy Qur'an 4:82

GOD OR THE DEVIL?

If God Almighty wants us to verify the authenticity of His Book (The Holy Qur'ân) with this acid test, why should we not apply the very same test to any other Book claiming to be from Him? We do not want to bamboozle anybody with words as the Christians have been doing. It would be readily agreed from the references, I have given from Christian scholars, that they have been proving to us that the Bible is **NOT** the Word of God, yet making us believe that they have actually convinced us to the contrary.

A classic example of this sickness was in evidence again only "yesterday" The Anglican synod was in session in Grahamstown. The Most. Rev. Bill Burnett, the Archbishop was preaching to his flock. He created a confusion in his Anglican community. An erudite Englishman, addressing a group of learned English priests and bishops, in their own mother-tongue — English, which his learned colleagues drastically misunderstood: to such an extent that Mr. McMillan, perhaps also an Anglican, the Editor of an English daily — **"The Natal Mercury"** dated December 11, 1979, had this to say about the confusion the Archbishop had created among his own learned clergy:

"ARCHBISHOP BURNETTS REMARKS AT THE SYNOD WERE **HARDLY A MODEL OF CLARITY** AND WERE **WIDELY** AND **DRAMATICALLY MISINTERPRETED** BY MANY OF THOSE PRESENT."

There is nothing wrong with English as a language, but can't you see that the Christian is trained in muddled thinking in all matters religious. The "bread" in his Holy Communion is not "bread" but "flesh?" The "wine" is "blood?" "Three is one?" and "Human is Divine?" But don't make a mistake, he is not that simple when dealing with the earthly kingdom, he is then most precise. You will have to be doubly careful when entering into a contract with him! He can have you sold out, without you realising it.

The examples that I shall furnish in substantiating the points I have raised about the contradictions in the so-called Book of God, would be found so easy even for a child to follow and understand. See below.

II SAMUEL 24 *The Numbering* **A**ND again the anger of the **LORD** was kindled against Israel, and he moved David against them to say, Go, number Israel and Judah.
While the author of Samuel 24 above, makes God the boss of the situation, the author of Chronicles below gives credit to the Devil.
I CHRONICLES 21 *The Numbering* **A**ND **SATAN** stood up against Israel, and provoked David to number Israel.

Apart from showing allegiance to God as is noted elsewhere, the **Devil**(Satan) is also given his due. This dichotomy on the part of the author of Chronicles reminds one of the story of the old woman who lit one candle to St. Michael and another to the devil. St. Michael was trampling underfoot, so that whether she went to Heaven or Hell, she would have a friend. This Chronicles fellow, made sure that he had a friend at court Above, as well as a friend at court Below. He wanted to have it both ways, or wanted to have his cake and eat it too.

You will observe that the authors of the books of **"Chronicles"** and of**"Samuel"** are telling us the same story about David taking a census of the Jews. Where did David get his "inspiration" to do this novel deed? The author of ***2 Samuel 24:1*** says that it was the **"LORD"** God who MOVED (RSV: "incited") David, but the author of ***1 Chronicles 21:1*** says that it was "SATAN" who PROVOKED (RSV: "incited") David to do such a dastardly thing! How could the Almighty God have been the source of these contradictory **"INSPIRATIONS?"** Is it God **or** is it Satan! In which religion is the DEVIL synonymous with GOD? I am not talking about "Satanism" a recent fungus growth of Christianity, in which ex-Christians worship the Devil. Christianity has been most prolific of spawning isms. Atheism, Communism, Fascism, Totalitarianism, Nazism, Mormonism, Moonism, Christian Scientism and now Satanism. What else will Christianity give birth to?

The "Holy Bible" lends itself to all kinds of contradictory interpretations. This is the Christian boast! "SOME CLAIM AND RIGHTLY SO, THAT BIBLICAL PASSAGES HAVE BEEN CONTINUOUSLY MISUSED AND MISAPPROPRIATED TO JUSTIFY ALMOST EVERY EVIL KNOWN TO MAN" (From: **"The Plain Truth"** an American-based Christian Journal under the heading: **"THE BIBLE — World's Most Controversial Book."**(July 1975).

WHO ARE THE REAL AUTHORS?

As further evidence will be adduced from **"Samuel"** and **"Chronicles"** I deem it advisable first to determine their authors instead of suspecting God of those books' incongruities. The Revisers of the RSV say:

(a) SAMUEL: Author **"Unknown"** (Just one word)

(b) CHRONICLES: Author **"Unknown,** probably collected and edited by Ezra."

We must admire the humility of these Bible scholars, but their **"possiblys" "probablys"** and **"likelys"** are always construed as ACTUALLY'S by their fleeced sheep. Why make poor Ezra or Isaiah the scapegoats for these anonymous writers?

WHAT DID THE LORD DECREE 3 YEARS FAMINE OR 7 YEARS FAMINE?

II SAMUEL 24:13 **13.**So Gad came to David, and told him, and said unto him, Shall **seven years of famine** come unto thee in thy land? Or wilt thou flee three months before thine enemies, while they pursue, thee?
I CHRONICLES 21:11 **11.** So Gad came to David, and said unto him, Thus saith the LORD, Choose thee **12.** Either **three years' famine**; or three months to be destroyed before thy foes, while that the sword of thine enemies overtaketh thee;

If God is the Author of every single word, comma and full-stop in the Bible, as the Christians claim, then is He the Author of the above arithmetical discrepancy as well?

THREE OR SEVEN?

Note the reproduction of above. Compare both the quotations. ***2 Samuel 24:13*** tells us — **"So Gad came to David,** AND TOLD HIM, and said unto him . . ." These words are repeated word for word in ***1 Chronicles 21:11***, except the redundant **"AND TOLD HIM"** is removed! But while trimming the useless phrase, the author also pruned the time factor from "SEVEN" years to "THREE" years. What did God say to Gad **— Three** or **Seven**years plague — "on both your houses?"

EIGHT OR EIGHTEEN?

See below. Compare the two quotations. ***2 Chronicles 36:9*** tells us that JEHOIACHIN was **"eight"** years old when he began to reign, while 2 Kings 24:8 says that he was **"eighteen"** when he began to reign. The **"unknown"** author of KINGS must have reasoned that what possible "evil" could a child of eight do to deserve his abdication, so he generously added ten years to make JEHOIACHIN mature enough to become liable to God's wrath. However, he had to balance his tampering, so he cut short his reign by 10 days! Add **TEN** years to age and deduct **TEN** days from rule? Could God Almighty say two widely differing things on the same subject?

HOW OLD WAS JEHOIACHIN? 8 OR 18?

Between Eight and Eighteen years, there is a gap or difference at a full 10 years. Can we say (God forbid!) that the all-knowing Almighty could not count, and thus did not know the difference between 8 and 18? If we are to believe in the Bible as the Word of God, then the Dignity and Status of the Lord Almighty will hit an all-time low!

II CHRONICLES 36 **9.** Jehoiachin was **eight years** old when he began to reign, and he reigned three months and ten days in Jerusalem: and he did that which was evil in the sight of the LORD.
II KINGS 24 **8.** Jehoiachin was **eighteen years** old when he began to reign, and he reigned in Jerusalem three months. And his mothers name was Nehushta, the daughter of Elnathan of Jerusalem.

CAVALRY OR INFANTRY?

Compare the two quotations on page 40. How many chariot riders did David slay? Seven **hundred** or seven **thousand?** And further, did he slay 40000 "HORSEMEN" or 40000 "FOOTMEN?" The implication in the conflicting records between ***2 Samuel 10:18*** and ***1 Chronicles 19:18*** is not only that God could not discern the difference between hundreds and thousands, but that He could not even distinguish **"CAVALRY"** from **"INFANTRY!"** It is obvious that blasphemy masquerades in the Christian dictionary as "inspiration!"

700 or 7 000?

It is certainly naught for Bible-lovers' comfort that a whole nought (0) was either added to 700, or subtracted from 7 000, thus making the confused Biblical Mathematics even more confounded!*

II SAMUEL 10
18. And the Syrians fled before Israel; and David slew the men of **seven hundred** chariots of the Syrians, and forty thousand **horsemen**, and smote Shobach the captain of their host, who died there.
I CHRONICLES 19
18. But the Syrians fled before Israel: and David slew of the Syrians **seven thousand** men which fought in chariots, and forty thousand **footmen**, and killed Shophach the captain of the host.

* The remarks on the Zero will be discussed soon.

GOD CONFUSED BETWEEN "CAVALRY" AND "INFANTRY" ?

As for the "inspired writers" of the Bible not knowing the difference between **"footmen"** and **"horsemen,"** is all the more serious because God himself here stands accused, as a source of that "inspiration" for not knowing the difference between cavalry and infantry. Or is it possible that the Syrians who fled before Israel were centaurs (i.e. a race of creatures with the body and legs of a horse and the torso, head and arms of a man), is it possible that these "creatures" had suddenly stepped out of Classical Mythology to bemuse the all too gullible authors.

PRACTICAL HOMEWORK

Solomon is his glory began building a royal palace for himself which took him thirteen years. We learn this from the 1st Book of Kings, chapter 7. You remember Dr. Parker's boast (earlier on) about **"whole pages being taken up by obscure names?"** Well, for sheer puerility you cannot beat this chapter 7 and Ezekiel chapter 45. You owe it to yourself to read it just once in your lifetime. After that, you will really appreciate the Holy Qur'ân! Reproduced below, you will read the passages for your **boring** pleasure. Obtain your own Bible and colour code it for easy reference. You may colour the various references from this booklet in your Bible: **"Yellow"** for all contradictions; use **"Red"** for pornographic passages; and **"Green"** for sensible, acceptable quotations as the ones I have mentioned at the beginning of this essay — that is words that you can effortlessly recognize as being those of God and His Holy Messengers. With just this preparation, you will be ready to confute and confuse any missionary or Bible scholar that comes your way! "IF WE PERSPIRE MORE IN TIMES OF PEACE, WE WILL BLEED LESS IN TIMES OF WAR." (Chiang Kai-Shek)

GOD, AS BUILDER, ENGINEER AND CRAFTSMAN (IF YOU HAVE PATIENCE, READ

THIS CHAPTER AND COMPLETE THE REST OF THE CHAPTER IN YOUR BIBLE)

7 But Solomon took "thirteen years to build his own house; so he finished all his house. 2Chr 8:1 **2.** He also built the "House of the Forest of Lebanon; its length was one hundred cubits, its width fifty cubits, and its height thirty cubits, with four rows of cedar pillars, and cedar beams on the pillars. **2 Chr 9:16 • About 150 feet**
3. And it was paneled with cedar above the beams that were on forty-five pillars, fifteen to a row.
4. *There* were windows with *beveled frames in* three rows, and window was opposite window in three tiers.
5. And all the doorways and doorposts had rectangular frames; and window was opposite window in three tiers.
6. He also made the Hall of Pillars: its length was fifty cubits, and its width thirty cubits; and in front of them was a portico with pillars, and a canopy was in front of them.
7. Then he made a hall for the throne, the Hall of Judgment. where he might judge; and it was paneled with cedar from floor to ceiling. Lit. floor of the upper level
8. And the house where he dwelt had another court inside the hall, of like workmanship. Solomon also made a house like this hall for Pharaoh's daughter, whom he had taken as *wife.*

9. All these were of costly stones hewn to size, trimmed with saws. inside and out. from the foundation to the eaves, and also on the outside to the great court.
10. The foundation was *of* costly stones, large stones, some ten cubits and some eight cubits.
11. And above *were* costly stones, hewn to size, and cedar wood.
12. The great court was enclosed with three rows of hewn stones and a row of cedar beams. So were the inner court of the house of the lord "and the vestibule Of the temple. **1 Kin. 6:36 * John 10:23**
13 Now King Solomon sent and brought Hiram from Tyre.
14. "He was the son of a widow from the tribe of Naphtali, and "his father was a man of Tyre, a bronze worker; he was filled with wisdom and understanding and skill in working with all kinds of bronze work. So he came to King Solomon and did all his work. **2 Chr. 2:14 • 2 Chr. 4:16**
15. And he cast "two pillars of bronze, each one eighteen cubits high, and a line of twelve cubits measured the circumference of each. ***Fashioned*** **• Jer 52:21**
16. Then he made two capitals of cast bronze, to set on the tops of the pillars. The height of one capital was five cubits, and the height of the other capital was five cubits.

GOD, AS LAND SURVEYOR AND ARCHITECT (IF YOU HAVE PATIENCE, READ THIS CHAPTER AND COMPLETE THE REST OF THE CHAPTER IN YOUR BIBLE)

45 "Moreover, when you "divide the land by lot into inheritance, you shall set apart a district for the lord,

7. ""The prince shall have *a portion* on one side and the other of the holy district and the city's property; and bordering on the holy district and the city's property, extending westward on the west side and eastward on the

a holy portion of the land; its length *shall be*twenty-five thousand cubits, and the width ten thousand. It *shall be* holy throughout its territory all around.**Ezek 47:22 - Ezek 48:8,9**

2. *"*Of this there shall be a square plot for the sanctuary, "five hundred by five hundred rods, with fifty cubits around it for an open space. **Ezek. 42.20**

3. "So this is the district you shall measure: twenty-five thousand cubits long and ten thousand wide; in it shall be the sanctuary. The Most Holy Place.

4 "It shall be a holy portion of the land, belonging to the priests, the ministers of the sanctuary, who come near to minister to the lord; it shall be a place for their houses and a holy place for the sanctuary. **Ezek. 48:10.11**

5. "An area twenty-five thousand cubits long and ten thousand wide shall belong to the Levites, the ministers of the temple; they shall have twenty chambers as a possession.

6. "You shall appoint as the property of the city an area five thousand cubits wide and twenty-five thousand long, adjacent to the district of the holy east side, the length *shall be* side by side with one of the tribal Portions, from the west border to the east border.**Ezek. 48:21**

8. "The land shall be his possession in Israel; and "My princes shall no more oppress My people, but they shall give the rest of the land to the house of Israel, according to their tribes." **Ezek 22:27**

9. Thus says the Lord god: "Enough, O princes of Israel! Remove violence and plundering, execute justice and righteousness, and stop dispossessing My people." says the Lord god.

10. "You shall have just "balances, a just ephah, and a just bath. **Lev. 19:36**

11. "The ephah and the bath shall be of the same measure, so that the bath contains one-tenth of a homer, and the ephah one-tenth of a homer; their measure shall be according to the homer.

12. "The shekel *shall be* twenty gerahs; twenty shekels, twenty-five shekels, and fifteen shekels shall be your mina. **Ex. 30:13**

13. "This is the offering which you shall offer: you shall give one-sixth of an ephah from a homer of wheat, and one-sixth of an ephah from a homer of barley.. ""The prince shall have *a portion* on one side and the other of the holy district and the city's property; and bordering on the holy district and the city's property, extending westward on the west side and eastward on the east side, the length *shall be* side by side with one of the tribal Portions, from the west border to the east border. **Ezek. 48:21**

8. "The land shall be his possession in Israel; and "My princes shall no more oppress My people, but they shall give the rest of the land to the house of Israel, according to their tribes." **Ezek 22:27**

9. Thus says the Lord god: "Enough, O princes of Israel! Remove violence and plundering, execute justice and righteousness, and stop dispossessing My people." says the Lord god.

10. "You shall have just "balances, a just ephah, and a just bath. **Lev. 19:36**

11. "The ephah and the bath shall be of the same measure, so that the bath contains one-tenth of a homer, and the ephah one-tenth of a homer; their measure shall be according to the homer.

12. "The shekel *shall be* twenty gerahs; twenty shekels,

portion; it shall belong to the whole house of Israel. **Ezek. 48:25**	twenty-five shekels, and fifteen shekels shall be your mina. **Ex. 30:13** **13**. "This is the offering which you shall offer: you shall give one-sixth of an ephah from a homer of wheat, and one-sixth of an ephah from a homer of barley.

HOW HYGIENIC?

Now, look below and note that the author of ***1 Kings 7:26*** has counted 2 000 baths in Solomon's palace, but the author of ***2 Chronicles 4:5*** increases the kingly count by 50% to 3 000! What extravagance and error in the "Book of God?" Even if God Almighty had nothing else to do, would He occupy Himself "inspiring" such trivial contradictory nonsense to the Jews? Is the Bible God's Book? Is it the Word of God?

THE DIFFERENCE 2 000 and 3 000 IS ONLY 50% EXAGGERATION!

I KINGS 7 **26.** And it was an hand breadth thick, and the brim thereof was wrought like the brim of a cup, with flowers of lilies: it contained **two thousand** baths..
II CHRONICLES 4 **5.** And the thickness of it was an handbreadth, and the brim of it like the work of the brim of a cup, with flowers of lilies; and it received and held **three thousand** baths.

Whether it is witting or unwitting, the "inspired" writer's singular inability to grasp the difference between 2 000 and 3 000 is unforgivable. It is an obvious contradiction. "AND NO MIRACLE WOULD PROVE THAT TWO AND TWO MAKES FIVE, OR THAT A CIRCLE HAS FOUR ANGELS; AND NO MIRACLES, HOWEVER NUMEROUS COULD REMOVE A CONTRADICTION WHICH LIES ON THE SURFACE OF THE TEACHINGS AND RECORDS OF CHRISTIANITY." — (Albert Schweizer), from his book: **"In Search of the Historical Jesus."** Page 22.

PILED CONTRADICTIONS

Before I conclude this series of contradictions, let me give you just one more example. There are hundreds of others in the Bible. See below. It is Solomon again. He really does things in a big way. The ex-Shah of Iran was a nursery kid by comparison! The author of ***2 Chronicles 9:25*** gives Solomon one thousand more stalls of horses than the number of baths he had given him. **"And**

Solomon had FOUR thousand stalls for horses ..." But the author of ***1 Kings 4:26*** had real kingly thoughts about his royal patron. He multiplied Solomon's stalls by 1 000% — from 4 000 to 40000 stalls of horses! Before some glib evangelist draws the wool over your eyes that the difference is only a nought, a zero — "0"; that some scribe or copyist had inadvertently added a zero to 4 000 to make it 40 000, let me tell you that the Jews in the time of Solomon knew nothing about the zero — "O"! It was the Arabs who introduced the zero to the Middle East and to Europe centuries later. The Jews spelt out their figures in words in their literary works and did not write them in numerals. Our Question is — Who was the real author of this staggering discrepency of 36000? Was it God or man? You will find these references and many more allied facts in a very comprehensive book — **"THE BIBLE — Word of God or Word of Man?"** by A. S. K. Joommal.

II CHRONICLES

CHAPTER 9

25. And Solomon had **four thousand** stalls for horses and chariots, and twelve thousand horsemen; whom he bestowed in the chariot cities, and with the king at Jerusalem.

I KINGS

CHAPTER 4

26 And Solomon had **forty thousand** stalls of horses for his chariots, and twelve thousand horsemen.

The Difference between 4 thousand and 40 thousand is only 36 OOO! The Jews did not use The "0" (Zero) in the Old Testament between 4 thousand and 40 thousand is only 36 OOO! The Jews did not use The "0" (Zero) in the Old Testament

CHAPTER EIGHT

MOST OBJECTIVE TESTIMONY

The Christian propagandist is very fond of quoting the following verse as proof that his Bible is the Word of God.

"All scripture <u>IS</u> given by inspiration of God, and <u>IS</u> profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness." (2 Timothy 3:16 — AV by Scofield)

Note the "IS's" in capitals. Rev. Scofield is telling us silently that they do not occur in the original Greek. **"THE** NEW **ENGLISH BIBLE,"** translated by a committee representing the Church of England, the Church of Scotland, the Methodist Church, the Congregational Church, the Baptist Union, the Presbyterian Church of England, etc., etc., **and** the BRITISH AND FOREIGN BIBLE SOCIETY has produced the closest translation of the original Greek which deserves to be reproduced here:

"EVERY INSPIRED SCRIPTURE HAS ITS USE FOR TEACHING THE TRUTH AND REFUTING ERROR, OR FOR REFORMATION OF MANNERS AND DISCIPLINE IN RIGHT LIVING." (2 Timothy 3:16)

The Roman Catholics in their "Douay" Version, are also more faithful to the text than the Protestants in their Authorised Version (AV). They say: "ALL SCRIPTURE, INSPIRED OF GOD, IS PROFITABLE TO TEACH, TO REPROVE, TO CORRECT . . ."

We will not quibble with words. Muslims and Christians are agreed that whatever emanates from God, whether through in inspiration or by revelation, must serve one of four purposes:-

1. It must either teach us **DOCTRINE;**

2. **REPROVE** us for our error;

3. Offer us **CORRECTION;**

4. Guide us into **RIGHTEOUSNESS.**

I have been asking learned men of Christianity for the past forty years, whether they can supply a **FIFTH** "peg" to hang the Word of God on. They have failed signally. That does not mean that I have improved upon their performance. Let us examine the **"Holy Bible"** with these objective tests.

NOT FAR TO SEEK

The very first book of the Bible — **Genesis** — provides us with many beautiful examples. Open chapter 38 and read. We are given here the history[1] of Judah, the father of the Jewish race, from whom we derive the names **"judea"** and **"Judaism."** This patriarch of the Jews got married and God granted him three sons, Er, Onan and Shelah. When the first-born was big enough, Judah had him married to a lady called Tamar. "BUT ER, JUDAH'S

FIRST-BORN **WAS WICKED** IN THE SIGHT OF THE LORD; AND THE **LORD SLEW HIM."** ***(Genesis 38:7)***. Under what heading, from the above four principles of Timothy will you place this sad news? The**second** — "REPROVE" is the answer. Er was wicked so God killed him. A lesson for all, God will destroy us for our wickedness. **REPROOF!**

Continuing with this Jewish history, according to their custom, if a brother died and left no offspring, it was the duty of the other brother to give "seed" to his sisters-in-law so that the deceased's name might be perpetuated. Judah, in honour of this custom, orders his second son Onan to do his duty. But Jealousy enters his heart. It will be **his seed** but the name will be his brother's! So at the critical moment "HE **SPILLED IT** ON THE GROUND . . . AND THE THING HE **DID DISPLEASED THE LORD:** WHEREFORE HE **SLEW HIM ALSO."** ***(Genesis 38:9-10)***. Again, where does this slaying fit into Timothy's tests? "REPROOF!" is the answer again. No prizes are offered for these easy answers. They are so basic. Do wrong and bear the consequence! Onan is forgotten in the "Book of God," but Christian sexologists have immortalized him by referring to "coitus interruptus," as Onanism[2] in their "Books of Sex."

Now Judah tells his daughter-in-law, Tamar, to return to her father's house until his third son Shelah attains manhood, when she will be brought back so that he can do his duty.

1. You remember Dr. Kenneth Cragg in his **"Call of the Minaret"** and his**"HISTORY."** See full quotation on page one. **This is that "history."**

2. "ONANISM:" Now immortalized in the Oxford Dictionary.

<u>A WOMAN'S REVENGE</u>

Shelah grows up and is, perhaps, married to another woman. But Judah had not fulfilled his obligation to Tamar. Deep in his **heart** he is terrified. He has already lost two sons on account of this "witch," — "LEST PERADVENTURE HE (Shelah) DIE ALSO, AS HIS BRETHERN DID."***(Genesis 38:11)***. So Judah conveniently forgets his promise. The aggrieved young lady resolves to take revenge on her father-in-law for depriving her of her "seed" right. Tamar learned that Judah is going to Timnath to sheer his sheep. She plans to get even with him on the way. She forestalls him, and goes and sits in an open place en route to Timnath. When Judah sees her, he thinks she is a harlot because she has covered her face. He comes up to her and proposes — "ALLOW ME TO COME IN UNTO THEE; AND SHE SAID WHAT WILT THOU GIVE ME, THAT THOU MAYEST COME IN UNTO ME?" He promises that he would send her a goat kid from his flock. What guarantee could she have that he would send it? What guarantee did she require, Judah queried. "His ring, his bracelet and his staff" is the ready answer. The old man hands these possessions to her, and "CAME IN UNTO HER, AND SHE CONCEIVED BY HIM."***(Genesis 38:16-18)***.

THE MORAL LESSON

Before we seek the heading from ***Timothy 3:16***, under which to categorize this filthy, dirty story from the "Book of God," I am tempted to ask, as you would be tempted to ask: what is the moral (?) lesson that our children will learn from Tamar's sweet revenge? Of course we do tell our children, fables, not really for their entertainment value, but that through them some moral may be imparted." The Fox and the Grapes," "The Wolf and the Lamb," "The Dog and his Shadow," etc. However simple or silly the story, a **moral** is aimed at.

'CHRISTIAN PARENTAL DILEMMAS'

Dr. Vernon Jones, an American psychologist of repute, carried out experiments on groups of schoolchildren to whom certain stories had been told. The heroes of the stories were the same in the case of the different groups of children, but the heroes behaved contradictorily to each group. To one group "St. George," slaving the dragon emerged a very brave figure, but to another group, fleeing in terror and seeking shelter in his mother's lap. "THESE STORIES MADE CERTAIN SLIGHT BUT PERMANENT CHANGES IN CHARACTER, EVEN IN THE NARROW CLASSROOM SITUATION," concluded Dr. Jones.

How much more permanent damage the rapes and murders, incests and beastialities of the "Holy Bible" has done to the children of Christendom, can be measured from reports in our daily newspapers. If such is the source of Western morality, it is no little wonder, then, that Methodists and Roman Catholics have already solemnized marriages between HOMOSEXUALS in their "Houses of God." And 8000 "gays" (an euphemistic term for sodomites) parade their "wares" in London's Hyde Park in July 1979, to the acclaim of the news and TV media. [1]

You must get that "Holy Bible" and read the whole chapter 38 of Genesis. Mark in **"red"** the words and phrases deserving this adornment. We had reached verse 18 in our moral (?) lesson — "AND SHE CONCEIVED BY HIM."

1. Ever since then, the major cities of the Western World; be it London, New York, San Francisco, Sydney, Paris etc hold annual gay parades (Mardi Gras), with now, public turnouts bringing in children as spectators. Australia prides itself in having Sydney being declared the gay capital of the world.

CAN'T HIDE FOR EVER

Three months later, as things were bound to turn out, news reached Judah that his daughter-in-law, Tamar, had played the "harlot" and that she was with "CHILD BY WHOREDOM AND JUDAH SAID, BRING HER FORTH, AND LET HER BE BURNT." ***(Genesis 38:24)***. Judah had deliberately spurned her as a "witch" and now he sadistically wants to burn her. But this wiley Jewess was one up on the old man. She sent the "ring," the "bracelet," and the "staff" with a

servant, beseeching her father-in-law to find the culprit responsible for her pregnancy. Judah was in a fix. He confessed that his daughter-in-law was more "RIGHTEOUS" than himself, and "HE KNEW HER AGAIN NO MORE." (verse 26). It is quite an experience to compare the choice of language in which the different Versions describe the same incident. The Jehovah's Witnesses in their **"New World Translation"** translate the last quotation as — "HE HAD NO FURTHER INTERCOURSE WITH HER AFTER THAT."[1] This is not the last we will hear about in the "Book of God" of this Tamar whom the Gospel writers have immortalized in their "Genealogy of their Lord."

1. The Jehovah's Witness Version is more explicit in its choice of words. It does not hesitate to call a spade a spade! Compare Ezekiel 23 with any other Version, and see the difference.

INCEST HONOURED

I do not want to bore you with details, but the end verses of Genesis 38 deal with a duel in Tamar's womb: about the twins struggling for ascendancy. The Jews were very meticulous about recording their "first borns." The first born got the lion's share of their father's patrimony. Who are the lucky winners in this prenatal race? There are four in this unique contest. They are **"PHAREZ** and **ZARAH** of **TAMAR** by **JUDAH."** How? You will see presently. But first, let us have the moral. What is the moral in this episode? You remember Er and Onan: how God destroyed them for their several sins? And the lessons we have learnt in each case was **"REPROOF"** Under what category of Timothy will you place the incest of Judah, and his illegitimate progeny? All these characters are honoured in the "Book of God" for their bastardy. They become the great grandfathers and great grandmothers of the **"only begotten son of God'(?)** See ***Matthew 1:3***. In every Version of the Bible, the Christians have varied the spelling of these characters' names from those obtained in the Old Testament (Genesis chapter 38) with those contained in the New Testament (Matthew chapter 1) to put the reader off the scent. From PHAREZ in the "Old" to PARES in the "New," and ZARAH to ZARA and TAMAR to THAMAR, But what about the moral? God blesses Judah for his incestuous crime! So if you do "evil" (Er), God will slay you; if you spill "seed" (Onan), God will kill you, but a daughter-in-law (Lamat) who vengefully and guilefully collect her father-in-law's (Judah's) "seed" is rewarded. Under what category will the Christians place this "honour" in the "Book of God?" Where does it fit? Is it Your ...

1. DOCTRINE?

2. REPROOF?

3. CORRECTION? or

4. INSTRUCTION INTO RIGHTEOUSNESS?

Ask him who comes and knocks at your door — that professional preacher, that hot-gospeller, that Bible-thumper. Here, he deserves a prize if he can grant an explanation for the correct answer. There is none born who can justify this filth, this pornography under any of the above headings. But a heading has to be given. It can only be recorded under — "PORNOGRAPHY!"

BAN THE BOOK!

George Bernard Shaw said that "THE MOST DANGEROUS BOOK (the Bible) ON EARTH, KEEP IT UNDER LOCK AND KEY." Keep the Bible out of your children's reach. But who will follow his advice? He was not a "B.A.,[1] a "reborn" Christian.

According to the high moral scruples of the Christian rulers of South African, who have banned the book, **"Lady Chatterley's Lover,"** because of a "tetragrammaton" — a four-letter word, they would most assuredly have placed a ban on the "Holy Bible" if it had been a Hindu religious Book, or a Muslim religious Book. But they are utterly helpless against their own "Holy Book," their "SALVATION" depends upon it!

> Reading Bible stories to children can also open up all sorts of opportunities to discuss the morality of sex. An unexpurgated Bible might get an X-rating from some censors,
>
> The PLAIN TRUTH October 1977

1. "B.A." short for **"born again"** it is a new sickness. It destroyed the "SUICIDE CULT" of Rev. Jim Jones, in Jonestown, Guyana.

DAUGHTERS SEDUCE THEIR FATHER

Read Genesis 19, verses 30 to the end and mark again in **"red"** the words and phrases deserving this honour. Do not hesitate and procrastinate. Your "coloured" Bible will become a priceless heirloom for your children. I agree with Shaw, to keep the Bible "under lock and key," but we need this weapon to meet the Christian challenge. The Prophet of Islam said that "WAR IS STRATEGY," and strategy demands that we use the weapons of our enemy. It is not what we like and what we do not like. It is what we are forced to use against the "ONE BOOK" (Bible) professors, who are knocking at our doors with **"the Bible says this"** and **"the Bible says that."** They want us to exchange our Holy Qur'an for their "Holy Bible." Show them the holes in the "holiness" which they have not yet seen. At times these zombies pretend to see the filth for the first time. They have been programmed with selected verses for their propagation.

To continue: the "history" has it that, night after night, the daughters of Lot seduce their drunken father with the noble (?) motive of preserving their father's **"seed."** "Seed" figures very prominently in this "Holy Book": forty seven times in the little booklet of Genesis alone! Out of this another incestuous relationship come the **"Ammonites"** and the **"Moabites,"** for whom the God of Israel was supposed to have had a special compassion. Later on in the Bible we learn that the Jews are ordered by the same compassionate God to slaughter the Philistines mercilessly — men, women and children. Even trees and animals are not to be spared, but the Amonites and the Moabites are not to be **"distressed"** or **"meddled"**with because they are the seed of Lot! ***(Deuteronomy 2:19)***

No decent reader can read the seduction of Lot to his mother, sister or daughter, not even to his fiancee if she is a chaste and moral woman. Yet you will come across perverted people who will gorge this filth. Tastes can be cultivated!

Read again and mark Ezekiel 23. You will know what colour **to** choose. The "whoredoms" of the two sisters, Aholah and Aholibah. The sexual details here puts to shame even the unexpurgated edition of many banned books. Ask your "born again" Christian visitors, under what category will they classify all this lewdness? Such filth certainly has no place in any "Book of God."

Al-Haj A.D. Ajijola in his book — **"The Myth of the Cross"** gives a masterly expose of the fallacy of the Bible as well as of the crucifixion, in short, of the whole of Christianity. No student of comparative religion can afford to be without this publication and **"THE BIBLE: Word of God or Word of Man?"** mentioned earlier on.

CHAPTER NINE

THE GENEALOGY OF JESUS

Watch now how the Christian fathers have foisted the incestuous progenies of the Old Testament upon their Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ, in the New Testament. For a man who had no genealogy, they have manufactured one for him. And what a genealogy! Six adulterers and offsprings of incest are imposed upon this holy man of God. Men and women deserving to be stoned to death according to God's own law, as revealed through Moses, and further to be ostracised and debarred from the House of God for generations. [1]

1. "The **bastard** shall not enter the congregation of the Lord even unto the tenth generation." (Deut. 23:2 — AV). The "Witnesses" have been hyper sensitive to this word. Swallowing the camel and straining at the gnat!

IGNOBLE ANCESTRY

Why should God give a "father" (Joseph) to His "son" (Jesus)? And why such an ignoble ancestry? **"This is the whole beauty of it"** says the pervert. **"God loved the sinners so much that he disdaineth not to give such progenitors for His 'son. "**

ONLY TWO COMMISSIONED

Of the four Gospel writers, God "inspired" only two of them to record the genealogy of His "son." To make it easy for you to compare the "fathers and grandfathers" of Jesus Christ in both the "inspired" lists, I have culled the names only, minus the verbiage. See below. Between David and Jesus, God "inspired" Matthew to record only 26 ancestors for His "son." But Luke, also "inspired," gathered up 41 forefathers for Jesus. The only name common to these two lists between David and Jesus is **JOSEPH**and that, too, a "supposed" father according to Luke 3:23 (AV). This one name is glaring. You need no fine-tooth comb to catch him. It is Joseph the carpenter. You will also easily observe that the lists are grossly contradictory. Could both the lists have emanated from the same source, i.e. God?

GENEALOGY FROM DAVID TO JESUS

According to MATTHEW 1:6-16	According to LUKE 3:23-31	
	DAVID	
1. SOLOMON	1. NATHAN	21. SALATHIEL
2. ROBOAM	2. MATTATHA	22. ZOROBABEL
3. ABIA	3. MENAN	23. RHESA
4. ASA	4. MELEA	24. JOANNA
5. JOSAPHAT	5. ELIAKIM	25. JUDA
6. JORAM	6. JONAN	26. JOSEPH
7. OZIAS	7. JOSEPH	27. SEMEI
8. JOATHAM	8. JUDA	28. MATTATHIAS
9. ACHAZ	9. SIMEON	29. MAATH
10. EZEKIAS	10. LEVI	30. NAGGE
11. MANASSES	11. MATTHAT	31. ESLI
12. AMON	12. JORIM	32. NAUM
13. JOSIAS	13. ELIEZER	33. AMOS
14. JECHONIAS	14. JOSE	34. MATTATHIAS
15. SALATHIEL	15. ER	35. JOSEPH
16. ZOROBABEL	16. ELMODAM	36. JANNA
17. ABIUD	17. COSAM	37. MELCHI
18. ELIAKIM	18. ADDI	38. LEVI
19. AZOR	19. MELCHI	39. MATTHAT
20. SADOC	20. NERI	40. HELI
21. ACHIM		
22. ELIUD		
23. ELEAZAR		
24. MATTHAN		
25. JOCOB		
26. **JOSEPH**	41. **JOSEPH**	
	JESUS	

FULFILLING PROPHECY?

Matthew and Luke are over-zealous in making **DAVID** the King, the prime ancestor of Jesus, because of that false notion that Jesus was to sit on the "THRONE OF HIS FATHER DAVID" ***(Acts 2:30)***. The Gospels belie this prophecy, for they tell us that instead of Jesus sitting on his father's (David's) throne, it was Pontious Pilate, a Roman Governor, a pagan who sat on that very throne and condemned its rightful (?) heir (Jesus) to death. "Never mind," says the evangelist, **"if not in his first coming, then in his second coming he will fulfill this prophecy and three hundred others beside"** But with their extravagant enthusiasm to trace the ancestry of Jesus **physically** to David, (for this is actually what the Bible says —**THAT OF THE FRUIT OF HIS** (David's) **LOINS, ACCORDING TO THE FLESH"** (literally, not metaphorically ***Acts 2:30***), both the "inspired" authors trip and fall on the very first step.

Matthew 1:6 says that Jesus was the son of **David** through SOLOMON, but Luke 3:31 says that he (Jesus) was the son of **David** through NATHAN. One need not be a gynecologist to tell that by no stretch of the imagination could the seed of David reach the mother of Jesus both through Solomon and Nathan at the same time! We know that both the authors are confounded liars, because Jesus was conceived miraculously, without any male intervention. Even if we concede a physical ancestry through David, both authors would still be proved liars for the obvious reason.

BREAKING PREJUDICE

As simple as the above logic is, the Christian is so emotionally involved that it will not penetrate his prejudiced mind. Let us give him an identical example, but one where he can afford to be objective.

We know from history that Muhammed the Prophet of Islam, was the son of Abraham through ISHMAEL, so if some "inspired" writer came along and tried to palm off his "revelation" to the effect that Muhummed was the son of Abraham through ISAAC, we would, without any hesitation, brand such a writer as a liar, because the seed of Abraham could never reach Amina (Muhummed's mother) through Ishmael and through Isaac at the same time! The differences of lineage between these two sons of Abraham is the difference between the JEWS and the ARABS.

In the case of Muhummed, we would know then that anyone who says that Isaac is his progenitor, was a liar. But in the case of Jesus both Matthew and Luke are suspect. Until the Christians decide which line of ancestors they prefer for their "god," both Gospels will have to be rejected. Christendom has been battling tooth and nail with these genealogies for the past 2000 years, trying to unravel the mystery. They have not given up yet. We admire their perseverance. They still believe that **"TIME WILL SOLVE THE PROBLEM."** Perhaps another 2000 years?!

"THERE ARE CLAIMED CONTRADICTIONS THAT THEOLOGIANS HAVE NOT RESOLVED TO EVERY ATHEIST'S SATISFACTION. THERE ARE TEXTUAL DIFFICULTIES WITH WHICH SCHOLARS ARE **STILL WRESTLING.** ONLY A BIBLE ILLITERATE WOULD DENY THESE AND OTHER PROBLEMS" **"The Plain Truth,"** July 1975.

THE SOURCE OF LUKE'S "INSPIRATION"

We have already nailed 85% of Matthew and Luke to Mark or that **"mysterious 'Q"'.** [1] Let us now allow Luke to tell us who "inspired" him to tell his **"most excellent Theophilus"** ***(Luke 1:3)*** the story of Jesus. See below for Luke's preamble to his "Gospel." He tells us plainly that he was only following in the footsteps of others who were less qualified than himself, others who had the

temerity to write accounts of his hero (Jesus). As a physician, as against fishermen and tax collectors, he was no doubt better equipped to create a literary masterpiece. This he did, because **"IT SEEMED GOOD TO ME ALSO"** to **"PUT IN ORDER."** These are his prominent Justifications over his predecessors.



FORASMUCH as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us,

2. Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses and ministers of the word;

3. It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

4. That thou mightest know the certainty of those things, wherein thou has been instructed.

Luke 1:1-4

In the introduction to his translation of the **"Gospel of St Luke"** A Christian scholar, J. B. Phillips, has this to say — "ON HIS OWN ADMISSION LUKE HAS CAREFULLY COMPARED AND EDITED EXISTING MATERIAL, BUT IT WOULD SEEM THAT HE HAD ACCESS TO A GOOD DEAL OF ADDITIONAL MATERIAL, AND WE CAN REASONABLY GUESS AT SOME OF THE SOURCES FROM WHICH HE DREW." And yet you call this the Word of God?! Obtain **"The Gospels in Modern English"** in soft cover by 'FONTANA' publications. It is a cheap edition. Get it quickly before the Christians decide to have Phillips' invaluable notes expunged from his translation! And do not be surprised if the authors of the RSV also decide to eliminate the "Preface" [2] from their translation. It is an old, old habit. As soon as those who have vested interests in Christianity realize that they have inadvertently let the cat out of the bag, they quickly make amends. They make my current references "past" history overnight!

1. Refer to Chapter Six.

2. Refer to Chapter Three.

THE REMAINING GOSPEL

Who is the author of **"The Gospel of St. John?"** Neither God nor St. John! See what "he" (?) says about it "himself" (?) on page 58 — John 19:35 and 21:24-25. Who is his "HE" and "HIS" and **"THIS?"** A-N-D, his**"WE** KNOW" and "I SUPPOSE." Could it be the fickle one who left him in the lurch in the garden, when he was most in need, or the fourteenth man at the table, at the "last Super," the one that "Jesus loved?" Both were Johns. It was a popular name among the Jews in the times of Jesus, and among Christians even now. Neither of these two was the author of this Gospel. That it was the product of an anonymous hand, is crystal clear.

WATCH THE PRONOUNS!

ST. JOHN 19

35. And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe.

WHO IS "HE" AND "HIS"?



ST. JOHN 21

24. This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.

WHO IS "WE"?

The Conclusion

25. And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen. **WHAT AN EXAGGERATION!**

WHO IS "I"?

AUTHORS IN A NUTSHELL

Let me conclude this "authorship" search with the verdict of those 32 scholars, backed by their 50 co-operating denominations. God had been eliminated from

this authorship race long ago. In the RSV by "Collins," invaluable notes on **"The Books of the Bible"** are to be found at the back of their production. I am reproducing only a bit of that information on below. We start with **"GENESIS"** — the first book of the Bible. The scholars say about its "AUTHOR": **"One of the 'five books of Moses'."** Note the words **"five books of Moses"** are written in inverted commas — " " This is a subtle way of admitting that this is what people say — that it is the book of Moses, that Moses was its author, but we (the 32 scholars) who are better informed, do not subscribe to that tittle-tattel.

The next four books, **"EXODUS, LEVITICUS, NUMBERS** and**DEUTERONOMY":** AUTHOR? **"Generally credited to Moses."** This is the same category as the book of **Genesis.**

Who is the author of the book of **"JUDGES?"** Answer: **"Possibly Samuel."**

Who is the author of the book of **"JOSHUA?"** Answer: **"Major part credited to Joshua."**

Who is the author of **"RUTH?"** Answer: **"Not definitely known"** AND

Who is the author of:

1ST SAMUEL?............ Answer: Author **"Unknown"**

2ND SAMUEL........... Answer: Author **"Unknown"**

1ST KING?................. Answer: Author **"Unknown"**

2ND KING?............... Answer: Author **"Unknown"**

1st CHRONICLES? …. Answer: Author "**Unknown, probably** …"

2st CHRONICLES? …. Answer: Author "**Likely collected** …"

THE BOOKS OF THE BIBLE

GENESIS
AUTHOR One of the **"five books of Moses."**

EXODUS
AUTHOR **Generally** credited to Moses.

LEVITICUS
AUTHOR **Generally** credited to Moses.

NUMBERS
AUTHOR **Generally** credited to Moses.

DEUTERONOMY
AUTHOR **Generally** credited to Moses.

JOSHUA
AUTHOR. **Major part** credited to Joshua.

JUDGES
AUTHOR. **Possibly** Samuel,

RUTH
AUTHOR. Not definitely known,**perhaps** Samuel.

FIRST SAMUEL
AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

SECOND SAMUEL
AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

FIRST KINGS
AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

SECOND KINGS
AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

FIRST CHRONICLES
AUTHOR. **Unknown,** probably collected and edited by Ezra.

SECOND CHRONICLES
AUTHOR. **Likely** collected and edited by Ezra.

EZRA
AUTHOR. **Probably** written or edited by Ezra.

ESTHER
AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

JOB
AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

PSALMS
AUTHOR. Principally David, though there are **other writers.**

ECCLESIASTES
AUTHOR. Doubtful, but **commonly** assigned to Solomon.

ISAIAH
AUTHOR. Mainly credited to Isaiah. Parts **may** have been written **by others.**

JONAH
AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

HABAKKUK
AUTHOR. Nothing **known of** the place or time of his birth.

The above facts are from Collins' R.S.V. 1971. Pages 12-17.

And so the story goes. The authors of these anonymous books are either **"UNKNOWN"** or are **"PROBABLY"** or **"LIKELY"** or are of **"DOUBTFUL"** origin. Why blame God for this fiasco? The Long-suffering and Merciful God did not wait for two thousand years for Bible scholars to tell us that He was not the Author of Jewish peccadilloes, prides and prejudices; of their lusts, wranglings, jealousies and enormities. He said it openly what they do:-

AND WOE TO THOSE WHO	فَوَيْلٌ لِّلَّذِينَ
WRITE THE BOOK WITH THEIR OWN HANDS	يَكْتُبُونَ الْكِتَٰبَ بِأَيْدِيهِمْ
AND THEN SAY:	ثُمَّ يَقُولُونَ
"THIS IS FROM ALLAH."	هَٰذَا مِنْ عِندِ اللَّهِ
TO TRAFFIC WITH IT FOR A MISERABLE PRICE!	لِيَشْتَرُوا بِهِۦ ثَمَنًا قَلِيلًا
SO WOE TO THEM FOR WHAT THEIR HANDS DO WRITE,	فَوَيْلٌ لَّهُم مِّمَّا كَتَبَتْ أَيْدِيهِمْ
AND WOE TO THEM FOR WHAT THEY EARN THEREBY![1]	وَوَيْلٌ لَّهُم مِّمَّا يَكْسِبُونَ

(SURA BAQARA) Holy Qur'an 2:79

We could have started the thesis of this book with the above Qur'anic verse and ended with it, with the satisfaction that God Almighty had Himself delivered His verdict on the subject — **"Is the Bible God's Word?",** but we wished to afford our Christian brethern an opportunity to study the subject as objectively as they wished.[2] Allowing believing Christians, "reborn" Christians, and their own Holy Book the Bible to testify against their "better" judgement.

What about the Holy Qur'ân? Is the Qur'ân the Word of God? The author of this humble publication has endeavoured to answer this question in a most scientific manner in his book **"AL'QUR'AN — The Miracle of Miracles"** available absolutely free of charge from the "Centre" on request.

1. "THE BIBLE" - "The World's Best Seller!" the Publishers of the RSV made a net profit of 15 000 000 dollars on the first edition alone' **"What a miserable price in exchange for eternity!"**

2. See Dr Scroggie's plea in chapter 5.

EPILOGUE

The reader must by now be convinced, that is if he has an open mind, that the Bible is not what it is claimed to be by the protagonists of Christianity.

For nearly four decades people have asked me as to how I have such an "in depth" knowledge of the Bible and Christianity.

Frankly speaking my present position as a Muslim "expert" on Judaism and Christianity is not of my own volition. I have been forced into being what I am.

EARLY PROVOCATION

It was in 1939 when I was working as a shop assistant at Adams Mission near a Christian seminary by that name; producing preachers and priests, that I and my fellow Muslim workers were the target of young aspiring men of the cloth. Not a day passed when these young Christians did not harass me or my brothers-in-faith, through insults which they piled on Islam, the Holy Prophet and the Qur'ân.

Being a sensitive young man of 20, I spent sleepless nights in tears for not being able to defend the one dearer to me than my own life, **that mercy unto all mankind—** Muhummed P.B.U.H.

I resolved to study the Qur'ân, the Bible and other literature. My discovery of the book — **"IZHARUL HAQ"** was the turning point in my life. After a short while I was able to invite the trainee missionaries of Adams Mission College and cause them to perspire under the collar until they developed a respect for Islam and its Holy Apostle.

MUSLIMS UNDER CONSTANT ATTACK

It made me ponder as to how so many unwary Muslims are being constantly assaulted by Christian evangelists who carry out a door to door campaign, and being invited in by the proverbially hospitable Muslim, I thought of how the merciless missionary munched the **samoosas** and punched the wind out of the Muslim with snide remarks against his beliefs.

Determined to bring home to the Muslims their right to defend themselves and to arm them with enough knowledge to counter the hot gospeller, the door to door pedlar of Christianity and the shameless insulter of Islam and its Holy Apostle; I humbly undertook to deliver lectures to show the Muslim masses that they had nothing to fear from the assaults of the Christians.

My lectures were also an invitation to the Christians to witness the truth of Islam and the fabrications which had penetrated the true teachings of Jesus (P.B.U.H).

ATTACK NOT NEW

Christian Missionaries in the past hundred years and more have challenged Muslims on many aspects and quite a number of these challenges have, to my knowledge, gone answered or have been partly answered. Perhaps by the will of Allah my contribution in this field can also be answers or part answers to the challenges of the detractors of Islam. It is of supreme importance that we do not go by default.

One such challenge comes to mind viz. Geo G. Harris the author of **"How to lead Muslims to Christ".** This missionary who tried to convert the Muslims of China says in the usual arrogant and condecending manner of the Westerner on page 19 under the heading **— "THE THEORY OR CHARGE OF CORRUPTION."**

"WE NOW COME TO THE MOST SERIOUS CHARGE BY THE MOSLEM WORLD, AGAINST OUR CHRISIIAN SCRIPTURES. THERE ARE THREE ASPECTS OF THIS CHARGE.

1. That the Christian scriptures have been so changed and altered that they bear little, if any, resemblance to the glorious Injil praised in the Qur'ân. This can be answered by the asking of one of the following questions: Wherein have these been so changed or altered? Can you obtain a copy of a true Injil and show it that I may compare it with mine? At what date in past history was the unaltered Injil in circulation?

2. That our Gospels have suffered corruption. The following five questions are definite and we have a perfect right to ask them;

(a) Was such corruption or alteration intentional?

(b) Can you point out in my Bible one such passage?

(c) How did this passage read originally?

(d) When, by whom, how **or** why was it corrupted or altered?

(e) Was such, corruption of the text or of the meaning?

3. That our Gospels are "faked" substitutes for the original Injil. Or that our Gospels are the handiwork of men, not the noble Injil which descended upon Jesus. A little questioning will usually reveal the true situation, that usually the Moslem making the charge is woefully ignorant of the Bible or New Testament as it actually existed in the past or exists today.

BEFORE GOING ON TO THE LATTER HALF OF THIS DISCUSSION, A REMINDER IS IMPORTANT THAT AS SOON AS THE OBJECTOR IS WILLING TO SENSE THE FLIMSINESS OF SUCH A CHARGE WE SHOULD PRESS

HOME SOME TEACHING FROM OUR SCRIPIURES, THAT OUR EFFORT MAY BE POSITIVE AND NOT NEGATIVE."

HAVE MUSLIMS THE ANSWER?

Have we as Muslims no answers for these questions? **If you, gentle reader have read this book you will admit that Ceo G. Harris has no feet to stand on.** I have been able to give actual pages from the Bible to disprove his assertions.

MUSLIMS CHALLENGED

On page 16 of Geo G. Harris' book he teaches his comrades a basic missionary rule in order to corner the Muslim prospective:

"In this chapter it is assumed that the question of the authenticity and genuineness of our scriptures has been raised by the Mohammedan. When this is the case, before we undertake defense of our position we should bear in mind a basic rule. THE BURDEN OF PROOF RESTS WITH THE MOSLEM." [1]

Praise be to Allah that in my 40 years of disproving the authenticity of the Bible which the Christians have so boldly asked for, I have been able to win the day.

Remember, we Muslims do not go door to door peddling our religion. Whereas Christians of different denominations encroach upon our privacy and peace and take advantage of our hospitality to harass the unwary Musalman.

Those who are afraid to project the truth when they are provoked by these Christians, who even go to the extent of insulting our beloved Nabee Muhummed (S.A.W.) should re-examine their Eemaan.

The lectures I hold are to sound out these slinking missionaries who "attack" the home and hearth of the unsuspecting Muslim who goes about minding his own business.

The lectures are also aimed at restoring the damaged dignity of the Muslim who has been ruffled by the ruthless attacks of the Christian pedlar. Ask the poor Muslims of Chatsworth, Hanover Park or Riverlea[2] as to how they are subjected to the tyrany of certain missionaries.

If this humble little contribution of mine **"Is** the **Bible God's Word?"** finds a place in the Muslim home as a bulwark against the missionary menace my effort would be amply rewarded.

A greater reward would be if even one sincere disciple of Jesus (on whom be peace) were to be led to the truth and be removed from fabrications and falsehood.

The greatest reward of course lies with Allah Almighty whom I supplicate for guidance and mercy and pray and crave that He accepts my effort which I dedicate to Him in all humility.

1. Alhamdo-lillah! (Praise be to Allah), the reader will agree that in this and our other publications listed on the back cover, we have been constantly meeting this Christian challenge. (Praise be to Allah), the reader will agree that in this and our other publications listed on the back cover, we have been constantly meeting this Christian challenge.

2. These are Just a couple of the many townships in which the poorer Muslim is made to live by law under the South African **"Group Areas Act"**

PROPHET MUHAMMAD (pbuh) IN THE BIBLE

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) in the Old Testament:

The Qur'an mentions in Surah Al-Araf chapter 7 verse 157:

"Those who follow the Messenger, the unlettered Prophet, whom they find mentioned in their own (scriptures) in the law and the Gospel".

1. MUHAMMAD (PBUH) PROPHESISED IN THE BOOK OF DEUTERONOMY:

Almighty God speaks to Moses in Book of Deuteronomy chapter 18 verse 18:

"I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and I will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him."

The Christians say that this prophecy refers to Jesus (pbuh) because Jesus (pbuh) was like Moses (pbuh). Moses (pbuh) was a Jew, as well as Jesus (pbuh) was a Jew. Moses (pbuh) was a Prophet and Jesus (pbuh) was also a Prophet.

If these two are the only criteria for this prophecy to be fulfilled, then all the Prophets of the Bible who came after
Moses (pbuh) such as Solomon, Isaiah, Ezekiel, Daniel, Hosea, Joel, Malachi, John the Baptist, etc. (pbut) will
fulfill this prophecy since all were Jews as well as prophets.

However, it is Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) who is like Moses (pbuh):

i) Both had a father and a mother, while Jesus (pbuh) was born miraculously without any male intervention.

   [Mathew 1:18 and Luke 1:35 and also Al-Qur'an 3:42-47]

ii) Both were married and had children. Jesus (pbuh) according to the Bible did not marry nor had children.

iii) Both died natural deaths. Jesus (pbuh) has been raised up alive. (4:157-158)

Muhammad (pbuh) is from among the brethren of Moses (pbuh). Arabs are brethren of Jews. Abraham (pbuh) had two sons: Ishmail and Isaac (pbut). The Arabs are the

descendants of Ishmail (pbuh) and the Jews are the descendants of Isaac (pbuh).

Words in the mouth:

Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) was unlettered and whatever revelations he received from Almighty God he repeated them verbatim.

"I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him."

[Deuteronomy 18:18]

iv) Both besides being Prophets were also kings i.e. they could inflict capital punishment. Jesus (pbuh) said, "My kingdom is not of this world." (John 18:36).

v) Both were accepted as Prophets by their people in their lifetime but Jesus (pbuh) was rejected by his
people. John chapter 1 verse 11 states, "He came unto his own, but his own received him not."

iv) Both brought new laws and new regulations for their people. Jesus (pbuh) according to the Bible did not bring any new laws. (Mathew 5:17-18).

2. It is Mentioned in the book of Deuteronomy chapter 18:19

"And it shall come to pass, that whosoever will not harken unto my words which he shall speak in my name, I will require it of him."

3. Muhammad (pbuh) is prophesised in the book of Isaiah:

It is mentioned in the book of Isaiah chapter 29 verse 12:

"And the book is delivered to him that is not learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I am not learned."

When Archangel Gabrail commanded Muhammad (pbuh) by saying Iqra - "Read", he replied, "I am not learned".

4. prophet Muhammad (pbuh) mentioned by name in the old testament:

Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) is mentioned by name in the Song of Solomon chapter 5 verse 16:

"*Hikko Mamittakim we kullo Muhammadim Zehdoodeh wa Zehraee Bayna Jerusalem*."

"His mouth is most sweet: yea, he is altogether lovely. This is my beloved, and this is my friend, O daughters
of Jerusalem."

In the Hebrew language im is added for respect. Similarely im is added after the name of Prophet Muhammad
(pbuh) to make it Muhammadim. In English translation they have even translated the name of Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) as "altogether lovely", but in the Old Testament in Hebrew, the name of Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) is yet present.

Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) in the New Testament:

Al-Qur'an Chapter 61 Verse 6:

"And remember, Jesus, the son of Mary, said, 'O Children of Israel! I am the messenger of Allah (sent) to you, confirming the Law (which came) before me and giving glad tidings of a messenger to come after me, whose name shall be Ahmed.' But when he came to them with clear signs, they said, 'This is evident sorcery!' "

All the prophecies mentioned in the Old Testament regarding Muhammad (pbuh) besides applying to the Jews also hold good for the Christians.

1. John chapter 14 verse 16:

"And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you forever."

2. Gospel of John chapter 15 verse 26:

"But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which
proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me."

3. Gospel of John chapter 16 verse 7:

"Nevertheless I tell you the truth; it is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not
come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you".

"Ahmed" or "Muhammad" meaning "the one who praises" or "the praised one" is almost the translation of the
Greek word *Periclytos*. In the Gospel of John 14:16, 15:26, and 16:7. The word 'Comforter' is used in the English translation for the Greek word *Paracletos*which means advocate or a kind friend rather than a comforter.
Paracletos is the warped reading for *Periclytos*. Jesus (pbuh) actually prophesised Ahmed by name. Even the

Greek word *Paraclete* refers to the Prophet (pbuh) who is a mercy for all creatures.

Some Christians say that the Comforter mentioned in these prophecies refers to the Holy Sprit. They fail to realise
that the prophecy clearly says that only if Jesus (pbuh) departs will the Comforter come. The Bible states that the
Holy Spirit was already present on earth before and during the time of Jesus (pbuh), in the womb of Elizabeth, and again when Jesus (pbuh) was being baptised, etc. Hence this prophecy refers to none other than Prophet
Muhammad (pbuh).

4. Gospel of John chapter 16 verse 12-14:

"I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth is
come, he will guide you unto all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. He shall glorify me".

The Sprit of Truth, spoken about in this prophecy referes to none other than Prophet Muhammad (pbuh)

NOTE: All quotations of the Bible are taken from the King James Version.

CONCEPT OF GOD IN CHRISTIANITY

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

I INTRODUCTION TO CHRISTIANITY:

Christianity is a Semitic religion, which claims to have nearly 1.2 billion adherents all over the world. Christianity owes its name to Jesus Christ (peace be on him). The Holy Bible is the sacred scripture of the Christians:

a) The Bible is divided into two parts, the Old Testament and the New Testament. The Old Testament is the Holy Scripture of the Jews and contains records of all the prophets of the Jews that came before Jesus (pbuh).

   The New Testament contains records of the life of Jesus (pbuh).

b) The complete Bible, i.e. the Old Testament and the New Testament put together, contains 73 books. However, the Protestant Bible i.e. the King James Version, contains only 66 books as they consider 7 books of the Old Testament to be*apocrypha,* i.e. of doubtful authority.

   Therefore the Old Testament of the Catholics, contains 46 books and that of the Protestants, 39 books. However the New Testament of both these sects contains 27 books.

II Position of Jesus (pbuh) in Islam:

(i) Islam is the only non-Christian faith, which makes it an article of faith to believe in Jesus (pbuh). No Muslim is a Muslim if he does not believe in Jesus (pbuh).

(ii) We believe that he was one of the mightiest Messengers of Allah (swt).

(iii) We believe that he was born miraculously, without any male intervention, which many modern day Christians do not believe.

(iv) We believe he was the Messiah translated Christ (pbuh).

(v) We believe that he gave life to the dead with God's permission.

(iv) We believe that he healed those born blind, and the lepers with God's permission.

III CONCEPT OF GOD IN CHRISTIANITY:

1. Jesus Christ (pbuh) never claimed Divinity

One may ask, if both Muslims and Christians love and respect Jesus (pbuh), where exactly is the parting of ways? The major difference between Islam and Christianity is the Christians' insistence on the supposed divinity of Christ (pbuh). A study of the Christian scriptures

reveals that Jesus (pbuh) never claimed divinity. In fact there is not a single unequivocal statement in the entire Bible where Jesus (pbuh) himself says, "I am God" or where he says, "worship me". In fact the Bible contains statements attributed to Jesus (pbuh) in which he preached quite the contrary. The following statements in the Bible are attributed to Jesus Christ (pbuh):

(i) "My Father is greater than I."
[The Bible, John 14:28]

(ii) "My Father is greater than all."
[The Bible, John 10:29]

(iii) "…I cast out devils by the Spirit of God…."
[The Bible, Mathew 12:28]

(iv) "…I with the finger of God cast out devils…."
[The Bible, Luke 11:20]

(v) "I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgement is just; because I seek not my own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me."
[The Bible, John 5:30]

2. The Mission of Jesus Christ (pbuh) – to Fulfill the Law

Jesus (pbuh) never claimed divinity for himself. He clearly announced the nature of his mission. Jesus (pbuh) was sent by God to confirm the previous Judaic law. This is clearly evident in the following statements attributed to Jesus (pbuh) in the Gospel of Mathew:

"Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.

"Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven; but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven."

"For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven."
[The Bible, Mathew 5:17-20]

3. God Sent Jesus' (pbuh)

The Bible mentions the prophetic nature of Jesus (pbuh) mission in the following verses:

(i) "… and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me."
[The Bible, John 14:24]

(ii) "And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou has sent."
[The Bible, John 17:3]

4. Jesus Refuted even the Remotest Suggestion of his Divinity

Consider the following incident mentioned in the Bible:

"And behold, one came and said unto him, 'Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?'

And he said unto him, 'Why callest thou me good? There is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.' "
[The Bible, Mathew 19:16-17]

Jesus (pbuh) did not say that to have the eternal life of paradise, man should believe in him as Almighty God or worship him as God, or believe that Jesus (pbuh) would die for his sins. On the contrary he said that the path to salvation was through keeping the commandments. It is indeed striking to note the difference between the words of Jesus Christ (pbuh) and the Christian dogma of salvation through the sacrifice of Jesus (pbuh).

5. Jesus (pbuh) of Nazareth – a Man Approved of God

The following statement from the Bible supports the Islamic belief that Jesus (pbuh) was a prophet of God.

"Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know."
[The Bible, Acts 2:22]

6. The First Commandment is that God is One

The Bible does not support the Christian belief in trinity at all. One of the scribes once asked Jesus (pbuh) as to which was the first commandment of all, to which Jesus (pbuh) merely repeated what Moses (pbuh) had said earlier:

"Shama Israelu Adonai Ila Hayno Adonai Ikhad."

This is a Hebrew quotation, which means:

"Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord."
[The Bible, Mark 12:29]

It is striking that the basic teachings of the Church such as Trinity and vicarious atonement find no mention in the Bible. In fact, various verses of the Bible point to Jesus' (pbuh) actual mission, which was to fulfill the law revealed to Prophet Moses (pbuh). Indeed Jesus (pbuh) rejected any suggestions that attributed divinity to him, and explained his miracles as the power of the One True God.

Jesus (pbuh) thus reiterated the message of monotheism that was given by all earlier prophets of Almighty God.

NOTE: All quotations of the Bible are taken from the King James Version.

IV CONCEPT OF GOD IN OLD TESTAMENT:

1. God is One

The following verse from the book of Deuteronomy contains an exhortation from Moses (pbuh):

"Shama Israelu Adonai Ila Hayno Adna Ikhad".
It is a Hebrew quotation which means:
"Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord"
[The Bible, Deuteronomy 6:4]

2. Unity of God in the Book of Isaiah

The following verses are from the Book of Isaiah:

(i) "I, even I, am the Lord; and beside me there is no saviour."
[The Bible, Isaiah 43:11]

(ii) "I am Lord, and there is none else, there is no God besides me."
[The Bible, Isaiah 45:5]

(iii) "I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me."
[The Bible, Isaiah 46:9]

3. Old Testament condemns idol worship

(i) Old Testament condemns idol worship in the following verses:

"Thou shalt have no other gods before me."

"Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth:"

"Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God."
[The Bible, Exodus 20:3-5]

(ii) A similar message is repeated in the book of Deuteronomy:

"Thou shalt have none other gods before me."

"Thou shalt not make thee any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that in the earth beneath, or that is in the water beneath the earth."

"Thou shalt not bow down thyself unto them, nor serve them; for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God."
[The Bible, Deuteronomy 5:7-9]

Most Common Questions asked on concept of god in Christianity?

1. The Christians' Concept of God is the Trinity i.e. the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost, but these three are one. We believe in one God who is a Triune God.

2. The concept of Trinity can be explained by giving the example that water can be present in three states, as solid i.e. ice, liquid i.e. water and gas i.e. vapour, yet it is one and the same water.

3. A person can also be a father, a brother and a businessman at the same time, but yet he is one and the same person. Then why cannot God be "one in three" i.e. God the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost?

4. Jesus indicated that he was God when he said, "I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me."

5. Is it not mentioned in the Bible that Jesus is the "Begotten Son" of God thus making him God?

6. Jesus clearly claimed Divinity when he said in the Gospel, "I and my Father are one.

7. It is mentioned in the Gospel of John that "In the Beginning was the Word and the Word was with God, and the Word was God" proving without doubt that Jesus is God?

8. Is it not mentioned in the Bible that Jesus is the "Begotten Son" of God thus making him God?

9. Jesus claimed Divinity when he said, "I am Alpha and Omega".

10. Jesus himself said that he is God, when he said "Before Abraham was I AM"

11.Thomas called Jesus "My Lord and my god"

SIMILARITIES BETWEEN ISLAM AND CHRISTIANITY

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

Al-Qur'ân 3:64

Al-Qur'ân 20:25-28
Greet you in the same manner as Jesus (pbuh) greeted in Hebrew
Luke 24:36
'Sholam alay kum'
or Islamic greeting in Arabic Assalaamu alai kum
both meaning 'Peace be on you'.

INTRODUCTION

Similarities / Similar Teachings in the Qur'ân and

the Bible which Muslims follow but Christians don't

I
ISLAM

1.
DEFINITION

A.
Meaning of Islam
(i)
Islam is derived from the word *salaam* meaning peace.
(ii)
Submission to the Will of Allah (swt) i.e. God Almighty.
B.
Meaning of 'Muslim' – One who submits his will to Allah.
C.
Islam is not a new religion found by Prophet Muhammad (pbuh).

2.
MESSENGERS IN ISLAM

A.
(i)

To every nation was sent a Guide or a Messenger

Al-Qur'an 35:24
Al-Qur'an 13:7

(ii)
25 Prophets mentioned by name in the Qur'an
(iii)
Islam is the only non-Christian faith that believes in Jesus (pbuh)
(iv)

Stories only of some prophets mentioned in Qur'an
Al-Qur'an 4:164
Al-Qur'an 40:78

(v)
More than 1,24,000 Messengers according to Hadith
B.
(i)
Previous Messengers were only sent for their people and nation and their complete message was meant only for a particular time period.
(ii)
Moses (pbuh) was only sent for the Jews.
(iii)

Jesus (pbuh) sent only for the Jews i.e. lost sheep of Israel.
Al-Qur'an 3:49
Mathew 10:5-6
Mathew 15:24

(iv)

Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) is the Last and Final Messenger for the
Whole of Mankind.
Al-Qur'an 33:40
Al-Qur'an 21:107
Al-Qur'an 34:28
Sahih Bukhari Vol.1 Book of *Salaah* Chapter 56 Hadith No. 429

(v)

Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) prophesised in the Bible.
Al-Qur'an 7:157
Al-Qur'an 61:6
Deuteronomy 18:18
Isaiah 29:12
Song of Solomon 5:16

John 16:7
John 16:12-14

3.
REVELATIONS OF GOD
A.

Several Revelations sent by Allah – Al-Qur'an 13:38.
By name only four are mentioned in the Qur'an.

B.
(i)
The Qur'an is the Last and Final Revelation.
(ii)
All previous Revelations before Qur'an were only sent for a particular group of people and for a particular time period
(iii)

The Qur'an was Revealed for the Whole of Mankind
Al-Qur'an 14:1
Al-Qur'an 14:52
Al-Qur'an 2:185
Al-Qur'an 39:41

II
PILLARS OF ISLAM:
1.
***Tauheed*: Monotheism**
A.

La ilaha ilallahu, Muhammad-ur-Rasoolullah
Sahih Bukhari Vol. 1 Hadith No. 7

B.

Believe in Allah and the Last Day, and the Angels and the Book and the Messengers.
Al-Qur'an 2:177

C.

Come to common terms — Worship of one God
Al-Qur'an 3:64

D.

Concept of God
Al-Qur'an 112:1-4
Deuteronomy 6:4
Mark 12:29

E.

Shirk – Biggest Sin
Al-Qur'an 4:48
Al-Qur'an 4:116
Exodus 20:2-5
Deuteronomy 5:7-9

F.

Jesus (pbuh) not God. He never claimed Divinity
Al-Qur'an 5:72
John 14:28
John 10:29
Mathew 12:28
Luke 11:20
John 5:30
Acts 2:21

G.

99 Attributes of Almighty God
Al-Qur'an 17:110

H.

Prefer using name 'Allah' rather than the word 'God' as the word 'God' can be played around with. Allah in the Bible – *Eli, Eli, Lama Sabachthani*
Mark 15:34
Mathew 27:46

2.
<u>Salaah</u>
A.

Not merely Prayers but Programming
Al-Qur'an 5:90
Al-Qur'an 2:188

B.

Prayers restrain you from shameful and unjust deeds

Al-Qur'an 29:45

C.

Salaah timings – for healthy soul five times a day
. Al-Qur'an 17:78
Al-Qur'an 20:130

D.
Take off shoes before entering mosque.
(i)

Commandment of Allah to Moses
Al-Qur'an 20:11-12
Exodus 3:5
Acts 7:33

(ii)

Can Pray with Shoes.
Sunan Abu Dawood – Vol. 1, Book of Salaah, Chapter 240,
Hadith No. 652-653.

(iii)
Hygienic
E.
Ablution
(i)

Al-Qur'an 5:6
Exodus 40:31-32
Acts 21:26

(ii)
Hygienic
(iii)
Mental Preparation
F.

Stand shoulder to shoulder, while praying –
Sahih Bukhari – Vol. 1, Book of Adhan Chapter 75 Hadith no. 692
Abu Dawood – Vol. 1, Book of Salaah Chapter 245 Hadith No. 666.

G.
Sujud – Prostration
(i)
To humble your mind, humble your body
(ii)

Sujud mentioned 92 times in the Qur'an
Al-Qur'an 3:43
Al-Qur'an 22:77

(iii)

Prostration in the Bible
Genesis 17:3; Numbers 20:6
Joshua 5:14; Mathew 26:39

3.
Zakaah
A.
Meaning: Purification and Growth
B.

Description: 2.5% of saving every lunar year in charity
Al-Qur'an 9:60

C.
If every human being gives *Zakaah*, not a single person will die of hunger.
D.

"Wealth does not circulate only amongst the wealthy and the rich"
Al-Qur'an 59:7

E.

I Peter 4:8

4.

***SAUM* - FASTING**

A.

Description – one lunar month i.e. during the month of *Ramadaan* every lunar year, Muslims fast, i.e. abstain from food and drinks from sunrise till sunset.

B.

Benefits: learn self restraint. If you can control your hunger you can control almost all your desires. It enhances spiritual awareness.

Al-Qur'an 2:183

C.

Medical Benefits:

(a)

Increases absorption capacity of intestines

(b)

Lowers cholestrol.

D.

Discourages smoking, alcoholism and other addictions.

E.

Bible prescribes Fasting

Mathew 17:21

Mark 9:29

5.

HAJJ

A.

Description – Pilgrimage atleast once in life time if you can afford it

B.

Universal Brotherhood – 2.5 million people from all over the world gather, wear two pieces of unsewn cloth, preferably white. Cannot differentiate between rich and poor.

Al-Qur'an 49:13

C.

Significance of *Kaaba* – Muslims don't worship it

Psalms 84:4-7

III

ISLAM IS A COMPLETE WAY OF LIFE

These five pillars do not constitute complete Islam. Only if the pillars are strong, will the structure be strong.

1.
HUMANS CREATED TO WORSHIP ALLAH

A.

Jinn and Man created for worship of Allah
Al-Qur'an 51:56

B.
Meaning of *Ibadaah* – root word *Abd* meaning ‘slave’.

2.
OBEYING COMMANDMENTS OF ALLAH IS SUBMITTING YOUR WILL TO ALLAH

A.

Abstaining from alcohol
Al-Qur'an 5:90
Proverbs 20:1
Ephesians 5:18

B.

Abstaining from prohibited food
Al-Qur'an 5:5
Al-Qur'an 2:173, 5:3, 6:145, 16:115

(i)

Dead meat
Leviticus 17:15
Deuteronomy 14:21

(ii)

Blood
Genesis 9:4, Leviticus 17:14, Deuteronomy 12:16,
I Samuel 14:33, Acts 15:29

(iii)

Pork is prohibited
Leviticus 11:7-8
Deuteronomy 14:8
Isaiah 65:2-5

(vi)

Food on which names beside Allah have been invoked
Acts 15:29; Revelation 2:14

C.
(i)
Being Honest in your Business
(ii)
Helping Neighbours
Al-Qur'an 107:1-7
(iii)

Abstaining from Backbiting
Al-Qur'an 104:1-3
Al-Qur'an 49:11-12

(iv)

Obeying and Respecting Parents
Al-Qur'an 17:23, 24

(v)

Celibacy or Monasticism is prohibited in Islam
Sahih Bukhari: Vol. 7 Book of Nikah, Chapter No. 3, Hadith No. 4

(vi)

Loving, being Kind and Just to your Wife
Al-Qur'an 4:19

(vii)

Abstaining from Adultery
Al-Qur'an 17:32

D.
Dressing Modestly
(i)

Al-Qur'an 24:30
Mathew 5:27-28

(ii)
Al-Qur'an 24:31
(iii)

Six Criteria for Hijab in Islam
Deuteronomy 22:5
I Timothy 2:9 e.g. of Mary
I Corinthians 11:5-6

E.
Circumcision
Acts 7:8
John 7:22
Luke 2:21
F.
In short, every Muslim should follow all the Commandments of Allah (swt) and His Messenger Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) and abstain from the things they have prohibited.

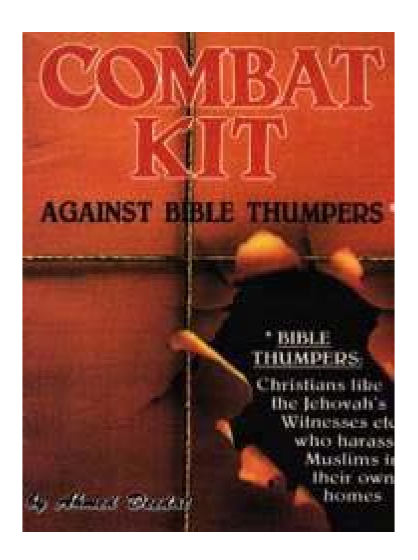
CONCLUSION

(a)
If Christian is a person who follows the teachings of Christ (pbuh) and not one who worships Christ (pbuh). (We are more Christian than the Christians themselves).
(b)
Muslim is a person who submits his will to Allah.
Jesus (pbuh) said, "not my will but thy will be done." i.e. Muslim.
John 5:30

(c)

Al-Qur'ân 5:82

"COMBAT KIT" - TOOL FOR DA'WAH TO CHRISTIANS



HOW TO USE COMBAT KIT.

INDEX

1. AIDS AND HOMOSEXUALITY: The Holy Bible gives the cause of this cancer and blight: " Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, And changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four footed beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves: Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet. Romans 1:22-27

2. ARABS AND ARABIA: In the Christian Bible. (a) The burden upon Arabia" ISAIAH 21:13. "Burden" = responsibility. God has imposed upon the Muslims, the duty to deliver His Message to mankind. ISAIAH mentions this after having seen the vision of a chariot of asses and a chariot of camels (ISAIAH 21:7) The chariot of asses turned out to be Jesus (PBUH) who entered Jerusalem riding on two donkeys (Matthew 21:7) Who then was of the "Chariot of Camels"?

It could be none other than Muhummed (PBUH) who came about six hundred years after the advent of Jesus Christ (PBUH). If this conclusion is not accepted, then this prophecy would still remain unfulfilled.

(b) " . . the villages that Kedar doth inhabit ISAIAH 42:11 Kedar being Ishmael's offspring. "Arabia, and all the princes of Kedar. . ." EZEKIEL 27:21

The International Standard Bible Encyclopedia quotes the following from A.S. Fulton:

". . . Of the Ishmaelite tribes, Kedar must have been the most important and thus in later times the name came to be applied to all the wild tribes of the desert. It is though Kedar (Arab Keidar) that Muslim genealogists trace the descent of Muhammad from Ishmael."

(c) ". . . he (Muhummed pbuh) shined forth from mount Paran (in Arabia), and he came with ten thousand saints. DEUTERONOMY 33:2. (Referring to the conquest of Makkah). (d) " . . and I (God Almighty) will move them (the Jews) to jealousy with those (the Arabs) which are NOT A PEOPLE (a non-entity): I will provoke them (the Jews) to anger with a FOOLISH NATION," |the pre-Islamic Arabs) DEUTERONOMY 32:21

3. ABRAHAM: He wedded his own sister (Sarah.) (?) **(a)** "Why saidst thou (O Abraham), she is my sister? So I might have taken her to me to WIFE . . . now take her (Sarah) and go thy way. GENESIS 12:19 **(b)** "And yet INDEED she (Sarah) is my sister (!) and she became my (Abraham's) WEE" GENESIS 20:12 Hagar Abraham's wife! " . . and (she, Sarah) gave her (Hagar) to her husband TO BE HIS WIFE GENESIS 16:3

Unfulfilled prophecy **(a)** "And I will give unto thee (O Abraham), the land wherein thou art a stranger, ALL THE LAND OF CANAAN (Palestine), for an ever-lasting possession, and I will be their God GENESIS 17:8. Also GENESIS 13:15 and EXODUS 32:13. Poor Abraham (pbuh) did not receive a single square foot of land FREE! **(b)** "And he (God Almighty) gave him (Abraham) NO inheritance in it, NO, NOT SO MUCH TO SET HIS FOOT UPON; but he (God) promised that he would ,give it to him for a possession . . ." ACTS 7:5

4. ABSURDITIES: in the Book of God (?) the Holy Bible **(a)** A TALKING ass. NUMBERS 22:27-28 **(b)** FOUR footed fowls. LEVITICUS 11:20 **(c)** Birth of females a DOUBLE pollution LEVITICUS 12:1,2,5 **(d)** Shamgar KILLS 600 with an ox goad JUDGES 3:31 **(e)** Samson KILLS A THOUSAND with the jaw bone of a donkey. JUDGES 15:15-16 **(f)** A SEVEN HEADED leopard REVELATION 13:1-2 **(g)** To eat SHIT and drink PISS. 2 KINGS 18:27 and ISAIAH 36:12**(h)** DUNG on your faces. MALACHI 2:3 **(i)** To eat cake with SHIT. EZEKIEL 4:12-15 **(j)** Samson has SEX with a whore in Gaza JUDGES 16:1 **(k)** Ruth COHABITS with Boaz in the barn. RUTH 3:4-l5 (1) David SLEEPS with a young virgin I KINGS 1 1:1,3

5. ALCOHOL: devilish advice in God's (?) Book? **(a)** "Alcohol is for people who are DYING, for those who are in MISERY. Let them drink and FORGET their poverty and unhappiness." (From the "Good News Bible In Today's English") PROVERBS 31:6-7 Alcohol recommended in preference to water! **(b)**"Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thine often infirmities 1 TIMOTHY 5:23 What does the AA (Alcoholics Anonymous) say? **(c)** Alcohol is the Devil's handiwork says the . . . Holy Qur'ân 5:93

6. APOSTASY: " . . neither shall thine eye pity him (the apostate), neither shalt thou spare him, neither shalt thou conceal him: "But thou shalt SURELY KILL HIM: thine hand shall be first upon him TO PUT HIM TO DEATH . . .DEUTERONOMY I 3 -8 9

7. BACA IS MECCA: the holy Ka'ba built by the prophet Abraham (PBUH) and his son Ishmael (PBUH) is in Mecca.

The name Mecca (Makkah) is mentioned in the Holy Qur'an in 48:24. Another name for Mecca is Bakka, depending on the dialect of the tribe: this is also mentioned once, in Sura 3:96

"Verily, the first house (of worship) appointed for mankind was that in Bakka (Mecca), full of blessing, and guidance for all people." Amazingly enough, this word Bakka is mentioned by the prophet David (PBUH) in the Bible:

"Who passing through the valley of Baca make it a well, the rain also filleth the pools." (Psalm 84:6)

The well here is the well known well of Zam-Zam, still present now, close to the Ka'bah; after thousands of years.

8. BASTARD: This word occurs in the Bible THREE times **(a)** "The BASTARD shall not enter the congregation of the Lord; even to his tenth generation . . . DEUTERONOMY 23:2 **(b)** "And a BASTARD shall dwell in Ashdod . .ZECHARIAH

9:6 **(c)** "But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then ye are BASTARDS and not sons. " HERREWS 12:8

9. CIRCUMCISION: A perpetual pact with God— **(a)** "He that is born in thy house, and he that is bought with thy money (your slaves), MUST needs be circumcised and my covenant shall be in your flesh for an EVERLASTING covenant. " GENESIS 17:13 **(b)** The uncircumcised to be "CUT OFF" (to be killed). GENESIS 17:14

10. CONTRADICTIONS: In the Bible— **(a)** The "Lord" tempted David . . . 2 SAMUEL 24:1 or "Satan provoked David . . . I CHRONICLES 21:1 **(b)** 700 or 7000? "Horsemen" or "Footmen" . . . ? 2 Samuel 10:18 vs 1 CHRONICLES 19: 18 **(c)** Solomon had 2000 baths or 3000 baths? 1 KINGS 7-26 vs 2 CHRONICLES 4:5 **(d)** Solomon had 4000 stalls of horses or 40000? 2 CHRONICLES 9:25 vs 1 KINGS 4:26 **(e)** Did Saul enquire of the Lord or didn't he? 1 SAMUELS 28:6 vs 1 CHRONICLES 10:13-14 **(f)** Heaven, no man hath ascended JOHN 3:13 Contradicted by. 2 KINGS 2:11 Elijah ascended, and GENESIS 5:24 Enoch ascended. **(g)** Jesus lost "None" of his disciples JOHN 18:9 Contradicted by. He lost only "One" JOHN 17:12 **(h)** ALL are sinners 2 CHRONICLES 6:36 Contradicted by: "Whosoever is born of God DOTH NOT commit sin. . ." 1 John 3:9

11. DAVID: "Man after God's own heart"— Commits adultery with Bath-sheba the wife of Uriah: **(a)** "And David sent messengers, and took her (Bathsheba); and she came in unto him, and he LAY (had intercourse) with her. . . 2 SAMUEL 11:4 **(b)** David wickedly caused the death of Uriah, the husband of Bath-sheba. 2 SAMUEL 11:6-25 **(c)** David shamelessly dances NAKED, see in index under "PROPHETS, but naked."

12. ELOHIM: In Hebrew it literally means "gods". This word Elohim is consistently translated as "gods" in one hundred and ninety-six places in the Old Testament. The Christians however make an exception when this term occurs the very first time in the Holy Bible. Amazingly this they do in the very first book, the very first chapter and the very first verse of their so-called book of God:

"In the beginning God (literally it should have been gods) created the heaven and the earth."

13. GENEALOGY OF JESUS: The Christians have contrived two separate lists of the ancestors of Jesus (PBUH); **a.** Matthew 1:1-16 and **b.** Luke 3:23-38. In these two lists consisting of sixty-six names, there is only one name which is common to both and that is of Joseph the carpenter, and he should never have been mentioned since he was never responsible for the conception of Jesus (pbuh).

14. GOD: Qualities ill-befitting God— **(a)** A hissing God (?) ISAIAH 5:26, 7: 18, ZECHARIA 10:8 **(b)** A "roaring" God (?) ISAIAH 42:13, JEREMIAH 25:30**(c)** A "barber" God (?) ISAIAH 7:20 **(d)** A "penitent" God (?) JEREMIAH 15:6, GENESIS 6:6 **(e)** A God "riding" a cherub (?) 2 SAMUEL 22:11 **(f)** A God murders 50,070 for looking into a box (?) SAMUEL 6:19

15. GOD WITH A SMALL "g": In Arabic, Hebrew and Greek there is no differentiation between a capital "G" for God, and a small "g" for god, as in the languages of the Western countries today; yet the Christians have played fast and loose when translating the Bible i.e.

(a) " In whom the god (the Devil) of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not "2 Cor 4:4 **(b)** "And the Lord said unto Moses, See, I have made thee a god to Pharaoh, and Aaron thy brother shall be thy prophet. " Exodus 7:1 Compare the above with JOHN 1:1, where the Christians have used capital "G"'s and "W"'s when referring to Jesus.

16. GOD: His contradictory attributes— **(a)** "No man hath seen God at any time John 1: 18 **(b)** " (God) whom no man hath seen, nor can see .,."I TIMOTHY 6:16 **(c)** "And he (God) said, Thou canst see my face: for there shall no man see me, and 1ive. EXODUS 33:20

Contradicted by: **(a)** "And the Lord spake unto Moses face to face, as a man speaketh unto his friend Exodus 33:11 **(b)** 'And they (Moses, Aaron and seventy others) saw the God of Israel . ." EXODUS 24:10 **(c)** "And Jacob called the name of the place Peniel for I have seen God face to face, and my life is preserved GENESIS 32:30

And as a special favour God shows his back parts to Moses "And I (God) will take away my hand and thou shalt see my back parts . . . " EXODUS 33:23

17. GOD: Is not a fabricator of confusion— **(a)** "For God is NOT the author of confusion . ." I CORINTHIANS 14:33 Contradicted by". **(b)** " . . I make peace, and CREATE EVIL . . ." ISAIAH 45:7 (by But the spirit of the Lord departed from Saul and AN EVIL SPIRIT from the Lord troubled him. I SAMUEL 16:14 **(c)** "And for this cause God shall send them a strong delusion, that they should BELIEVE A LIE." 2 THESSALONIANS 2:1 1

18. GOD: Further contradictory qualities— **(a)** GOD AS AN OMNIPOTENT BEING: "And Jesus saith . for with God ALL THINGS are possible MARK 10:27, also MATTHEW 19:26 Contradicted by. "And the Lord was with Judah, and he drove out the inhabitants of the mountain, but COULD NOT drive out the inhabitants of the valley, because they had Chariots OF IRON." JUDGES 1:19**(b)** GOD'S ANGER ABIDETH FOR A MINUTE: For his (God's) anger endureth but a MOMENT." PSALMS 30:5 . Contradicted by: " And the lord's anger was kindled against Israel and he made them (the Jews) wander in the wilderness FORTY YEARS..." NUMBERS 32:13 **(c)** GOD DOES NOT SHOW ANY SELF-REPROACH: "God is not a mar, that he should lie; neither the son of man, that he should repent . . ." NUMBERS 23:19 Contradicted by. " . . and the Lord REPENTED that he made Saul king over Israel " SAMUEL 15:35 Also: ; And the Lord REPENTED of the evil which he thought to do unto his people (Israel)" EXODUS 32:14 **(d)** GOD'S MERCY ENDURETH FOR EVER "For the Lord is good; and his mercy is Everlasting." PSALMS 100:5 Contradicted by: "I (God) remember that which Amalek did to Israel (four hundred years before) . . . Now go and smite Amalek and UTTERLY DESTROY ALL they have, and spare them not, but slay both man and woman, infant and suckling ox and sheep, camel and ass (the donkey) I SAMUEL 15:3 **(e)** GOD DWELLS IN LIGHT: " . . (God) dwelling in the LIGHT which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see . . " 1 TIMOTHY 6:16 Contradicted by: "Then spake Solomon, the Lord said that he would dwell in the Thick Darkness." 1 Kings 8:12 **(f)** GOD DOES NOT ENTICE MAN: 'Let no man say he is tempted, I am TEMPTED of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, NEITHER TEMPTETH he any man" JAMES 1:13 Contradicted by: 'And it came to pass after these things, that God DID TEMPT Abraham . " GENESIS 22:1

19. HOLY GHOST: Every sect and denomination of Christian cults claim the "Gift" of the HOLY GHOST. This gift is so cheap that 75,000,000 "BORN AGAIN" Christians of America are also boasting this possession. **(a)** "and he (John the Baptist) shall be filled with the HOLY GHOST, even from his mother's womb. LUKE 1:15 I have not yet been able to establish what this phrase means from his mother's womb . . ." really Alas, poor Jesus (peace be upon him) had to mark time for THIRTY YEARS after his birth to obtain his gift of the HOLY GHOST on his baptism at the hands of John the Baptist (MATTHEW 3:16). **(b)** " and Elizabeth was filled with the HOLY GHOST. LUKE 1:41 **(c)** "And his father Zacharias was filled with the HOLY GHOST . . ." LUKE 1:67 **(d)** "he (Jesus pbuh) breathed on them, and saith unto them, receive ye the HOLY GHOST." JOHN 20:22 **(e)** "But he that shall blaspheme against the HOLY GHOST ☐ hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation." MARK 3:29. HOLY GHOST: The words "Holy Ghost" here, should read the ''HOLY SPIRIT,'' a reference to the Holy Prophet of Islam, the Holy Prophet Muhummed (pbuh). For a detailed exposition obtain the FREE copy of my Book — "Muhummed (pbuh) the natural successor to Christ (pbuh).''

20. INCEST: "Sexual intercourse between two persons who are too closely related." (New Collins Dictionary). For example, between father and daughter, son and mother, father-in-law and daughter-in-law, brother and sister, etc. INCEST IN GOD'S BOOK (?) BETWEEN A FATHER AND HIS DAUGHTERS: **(a)** "That night they (both the daughters of Lot) gave him (their father Lot) wine to drink and the older daughter had INTERCOURSE with him ... "The next day the older daughter said to her sister, I slept with him last night. now let's get him drunk again tonight, and you sleep with him. Then each of us will have a child by our father. So that night they got him drunk and the younger daughter had INTERCOURSE with him ... "In this way both of Lot's daughters became PREGNANT by their father. " GENESIS 19:33-35 (From the "Good News Bible- In Today's English"). In the older Versions, like the King James and the Roman Catholic Versions, "SEXUAL INTERCOURSE" is vaguely described as "COLLECTING THE SEED OF OUR FATHER." INCEST BETWEEN MOTHER AND SON: **(b)** "While Jacob (Israel) was living in the land, Reuben (his firstborn, his eldest son) had SEXUAL

INTERCOURSE with Bilhah, his father's concubine. GENESIS 35:22. The older Versions of the Bible, use the word, "lay" for SEXUAL INTERCOURSE. INCEST BETWEEN FATHER-IN-LAW AND DAUGHTER-IN-LAW: **(c)** "When Judah saw her (Tamar, his daughter-in-law), he thought she was a prostitute, because she had covered her face. "He went over to her at the side of the road and said, "ALL RIGHT, HOW MUCH DO YOU CHARGE?" (He did not know that she was his daughter-in-law) {The words in parenthesis i.e. within brackets from He did not know to daughter-in-law are not in the original Hebrew manuscripts. They are the editors g loss.}

"She said, what will you give me?" (To have sex with me) 'He answered, I WILL SEND YOU A YOUNG GOAT FROM MY FLOCK "She said, "All right, if you will give me something to keep as a pledge until you send the ,goat. ' . . He gave them (the pledges) to her. Then had INTERCOURSE, and she became pregnant GENESIS 38: 15-18 (Quoted from the ''Good News Bible"). CONCUBINE and WIFE are synonymous terms in the Bible. Look for it in the index under ''KETURAH" (the third wife of Abraham). Out of this incestuous relationship between a father-in-law and his daughter-in-law, twins were born, who were destined to become the great-grand-fathers of Jesus Christ see Matthew 1:3; "And Judas begat Phares and Zarah of Thamar . . . INCEST AND RAPE BETWEEN BROTHER AND SISTER **(d)** " . . he took

hold of her (Thamar, his sister, not to be confused with Tamar in "c" above,, and said unto her, Come lie with me (have sex with me), my sister. "And she answered him, Nay, my brother (Amnon, one of the sons of David, the man after God's own heart) do not force me . . . "But he would not listen to her, and since he was stronger than she was, he overpowered her and RAPED her (his sister). " 2 Samuel 13:5-14 WHOLESALE RAPE AND INCEST BETWEEN SON AND HIS MOTHERS! **(e)** So they set up a tent for Absalom (another son of King David) on the palace roof, and in the sight of everyone, Absalom went in and had INTERCOURSE with his father's concubines " 2 SAMUELS 16:22

". . . In the sight of every one" is rendered in the King James Version as "in the sight of all Israel." This is a fulfillment of God's promise to David the King:

"Thus saith the Lord, Behold, I will raise up evil against thee (David) out of thine own house, and I will take THY WIVES before thine eyes, and give them unto thy neighbor (actually thy son) and he shall lie (have sexual intercourse) with thy wives in the sight of sun (for the whole world to watch the fun).

For thou didst it secretly (with Bath-Sheba the wife of Uriah): but I will do this thing before ALL Israel, and before the sun." 2 Samuel 12:11-12

You can well guess where "Penthouse" and "Playboy" got their inspiration from. Wherefrom if not from the Book of Books?

(f) For other various types of incest see LEVITICUS 18:8-18. 20:11-14 and 17-21. Concubine seems synonymous to the word wife in the Bible. Look for this reference in index under "Keturah" the third wife of Abraham.

21. ISHMAEL OR ISAAC?: A controversy has raged between the people of the Bible and the House of Islam as to which of the sons of Abraham (pbuh), Ishmael or Isaac was offered as a sacrifice.

The Bible is quite clear in designating the offering:

"And he (God Almighty) said, take now thy son, THINE ONLY SON . . ., whom thou lovest, and et thee into the land of Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt offering . . ." Genesis 22:2.

If at anytime, an offspring of Abraham (pbuh) can be described as "thine only son: it could only be Ishmael, because for more than thirteen years, he was the only son and seed of Abraham.

God Almighty acknowledges Ishmael as the "son and seed" of Abraham in no less than twelve places in the Book of Genesis alone. At no time was Isaac the only son and seed of Abraham!

The false pen of the scribe was in the hand of the Jews who edited the Books of Moses (pbuh), as the prophet Jeremiah bewails:

"How do ye say, We are wise, and the law (the Torah) of the Lord is with us? Lo, certainly in VAIN made he it; the PEN OF THE SCRIBE IS IN VAIN." Jeremiah 8:8

When the Jews are found to convert an Israelite into an Ishmaelite when no motives are involved, then how much easier for them to change the word "you only son Ishmael" to : your only son Isaac!"

Confirm the Jewish sickness in your Bible:

"Amasa was a man's son, whose name was Ithra an Israelite . . . " 2 Samuel 17:25

Contadicted by

". . . and the father of Amasa was Jether (dame as Ithra) the Ishmaelite." 1 Chronicles 2:17

22. ISRAELITES: Insatiable whores— **(a)** "Thou hast played the WHORE also with the Assyrians, because thou (the Israelites) wast UNSATIABLE; yea, thou hast played the HARLOT with them, and yet couldest NOT BE SATISFIED." EZEKIEL 16:28

WHOREDOMS OF THE 2 SISTERS — AHOLA AND AHOLIBA: **(b)** "And she kept LUSTING in the style of concubines belonging to those whose fleshly member (genitals) is as the fleshly member (genitals) of male asses (donkeys) and whose GENITAL ORGAN is as the GENITAL ORGAN of male horses. EZEKIEL 23:1-49 (New World Translation) **(c)** " . . for the spirit of WHOREDOMS hath cause them (the Jews) to err, and they have gone a WHORING from under their God " HOSEA 4:12, 6:10, and 9:1

23. JEHOVAH: It is an amazing fact, that if Jehovah is the name of God as the Jehovah's Witnesses so boldly claim, then this high-sounding word does not occur even once in the original manuscripts of the twenty-seven books of the New Testament.

For further details obtain a FREE copy of my book - "What is His Name?" from the IPCI.

24. JEREMIAH: Made a prophet before his birth **(a)** "Before I formed thee in the belly (of your mother) I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and ordained thee a prophet unto the nations." Jeremiah 1:5

JEREMIAH DECEIVED BY GOD (?): **(b)** "O Lord, thou hast DECEIVED me, and I was DECEIVED: thou art stronger than 4 and hast PREVAILED: I am in derision daily, everyone mocketh me. JEREMIAH 20:7

25. JESUS (pbuh): HIS FIRST MIRACLE IN THE HOLY BIBLE AND THE HOLY QUR'AN: To turn water into wine at the marriage feast at Cana JOHN 2:9 In the Holy Qur'an his first Miracle was to defend his mother, as an infant, against the false accusations of his enemies. SURAH MARIAM 19:30-33

HIS INVECTIVES AGAINST THE ELDERS OF HIS PEOPLE: **(a)** Ye hypocrites. . . MATTHEW 23:13 "Ye wicked and adulterous generation Matthew 12:39 "Ye whited sepulchers . . . MATTHEW 23: 27 "Ye generation of vipers . . . " MATTHEW 23:33 **(b)** He calls his mother "WOMAN" JOHN 2:4, the same manner in which he addresses a prostitute, ". . . WOMAN where are those thine accusers?" JOHN 8:10

"THE PRINCE OF PEACE," boasts that he had not come to bring peace on earth but fire and division! "I came to set the earth on fire, and how I wish that it were ALREADY KINDLED. 'Do you supposed that I came to bring peace to the world? No, not peace BUT DIVISION." I LUKE 12:49 and 51 (JESUS) NOT GOD! Jesus would not allow anyone even to call him "good", let alone call him god, even with a small "g". "Small "g" See in the index for "GOD" with a small "g".

"One came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life? 'And Jesus said unto him, WHY CALLEST THOU ME GOOD? there is NONE GOOD BUT ONE. THAT IS GOD" MATTHEW 19:16-17

(JESUS') POWER NOT HIS OWN: **(a)** And Jesus came and spoke unto them, saying, All power is GIVEN unto me in heaven and In earth MATTHEW 28: 18**(b)** 'T can of mine own self DO NOTHING: as I hear, I judge . . . JOHN 5:30**(c)** " . . I by the FINGER OF GOD cast out devils . . **(d)** "And Jesus lifted up his eyes (towards heaven) and said, Father, I thank thee that THOU HAST HEARD ME. "And I know that THOU HEAREST ME ALWAYS: but because of the people which stand by I said my supplication aloud that THEY MAY BELIEVE that thou hast sent me. "And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, lazarus, come forth "And he that was dead came forth . . .JOHN 11 :41-43

Who then gave life back to Lazarus? The answer is "GOD!" For God heard the prayer of Jesus, as always!",,,

LISTEN NOW TO PETER'S TESTIMONY: **(e)** "Ye men of Israel (Jews!) hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, A MAN approved of God, , , _ (meaning a prophet) among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which GOD DID BY HIM in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know." ACTS 2:22

WAS LUKE INSPIRED BY GOD TO SAY THAT JESUS (PBUH) WAS THE SON OF JOSEPH? "And Jesus himself began to be ABOUT ("about" the Holy Ghost did not know for sure) thirty years of age, being (AS WAS SUPPOSED) the son of Joseph . . . LUKE 3:23

The words "(as was supposed)" appearing in brackets are not in the original Greek manuscript of Luke! These words are a gloss of the translators.

In the different vernacular languages of the world, like Arabic, Afrikaans, Zulu, etc. the words "as was supposed" are retained in the translations but the brackets are removed. Thus by removing the brackets the words become the declaration of Luke, and if Luke was inspired then the words are transmuted into an utterance of God. This is how easily the word of man is transformed into the word of God in Christianity.

JESUS (PBUH), TOO SELF-CONSIDERATE: "There came R woman with a box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his (Jesus' Pbuh) head . . "But when his DISCIPLES saw it, they had INDIGNATION, SAYING, to WHAT PURPOSE IS THIS WASTE? "For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor. (When Jesus understood it, he said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me. "For ye have the POOR ALWAYS WITH YOU; but me ye have not always." MATTHEW 26:7-11

26. JESUS (pbuh) A "GOD"?: Powerless **(a)** "I can of mine own self W NOTHING . . ." JOHN 5:30

HE HAD NO KNOWLEDGE OF THE HEREAFTER **(b)** "But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, NEITHER THE SON, but the Father " MARK 13:32 HE WAS IGNORANT OF THE SEASONS **(c)**'And seeing a fig tree afar of having leaves, he came if happily he might find any thing there on. and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves, FOR THE TIME OF FIGS WAS NOT YET." MARK 11:13

JESUS (PBUH) AS A THIRSTY "GOD'? **(d)** " . . (Jesus) saith, I THIRST." JOHN 19:28 JESUS (PBUH) AS A WEEPING "GOD'? **(e)** Jesus WEPT. JOHN I 1:3 5 Remember that this is the shortest sentence in the Bible! (Only two words)

IMAGINE A "GOD" BEING TEMPTED by THE DEVIL (?) **(f)** "Where he (Jesus) stayed forty days, being tempted by Satan" MARK 1:13

27. JESUS (pbuh) (A RACIST): Only came for the Jews **(a)** these twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them saying GO NOT into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans ENTER YE NOT. "But go ye rather unto the lost sheep of THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL (to the Jews only)." MATTHEW 10:5-6 **(b)** "But he (Jesus) answered and said, I am NOT SENT but unto the lost sheep of the HOUSE OF ISRAEL (the Jews only). "Then came she (the Canaanite woman) and worshipped him, saying Lord, help me (to cure my daughter). "But he answered and said, it is not me to take the children's bread and CAST IT TO DOGS (the non-Jews). " MATTHEW 15:24-26

28. JESUS (pbuh) (SUNDRY TIDBITS): JESUS' (PBUH) SECOND COMING, NEVER MATERIALIZED: "But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye unto another, for VERILY I say unto you, Ye shall NOT HAVE GONE over the cities of Israel till the SON OF MAN (as referring to himself) BE COME." MATTHEW 10:23

The disciples of Jesus fled and they fled, and have now perished for two thousand years, with no sign of the return of Jesus.

JESUS (PBUH) SPOKE IN PARABLES TO DECEIVE THE UNINITIATED: . . all these things are done in parables. That seeing they may see, and NOT perceive; and hearing they may hear, and NOT understand, LEST at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven " MARK 4: 11-12

HATE AS FOUNDATION OF HIS (Jesus) FAITH: "If any man come to me, and HATE NOT his father, and mother, and wife, and children. . . HE CANNOT be my disciple." LUKE 14:26

PETER CONTRADICTS JESUS (PBUH) REGARDING HIMSELF AS IF THE ONLY WAY:" "Jesus saith unto him, Z am the way, the truth, and the life. no man cometh unto the father but by me. JOHN 14:6 Contradicted by: "Then Peter opened his mouth . . . But IN EVERY NATION he that feareth him (God), and works righteousness, IS ACCEPTED with him (God)." ACTS 10:34-35

29. JEWS: A rebellious people "Ye have been rebellious against the Lord from the day that I knew you DEUTERONOMY 9:24

A STIFF NECKED PEOPLE: 'For I know thy rebellion, and thy stiff neck behold, while I am yet alive with you this day, Ye have been rebellious against the Lord, and how much more after my death? DEUTERONOMY 31:27

A SECOND BONDAGE IN EGYPT: 'And the Lord shall bring you (the Jews) into Egypt again with ships, by the way whereof I spate unto you (Jews), Thou shall see it no more again. and there ye shall be sold unto your enemies for bondmen and bondwomen, and NO MAN shall buy you DEUTERONOMY 28:68 . . now will he (the Lord) remember their (the Jews') iniquity, and visit their the Jews') sins: they shall RETURN to Egypt (for a second bondage). HOSEA 8:13

THE JEWS TO BE SUBSTITUTED: "Therefore said I (Jesus)\ unto you (Jews), The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. MATTHEW 21:43

30. KETURAH: The third wife of Abraham "Then again Abraham took a WIFE, and her name was Keturah GENESIS 25:1 Keturah being the WIFE of Abraham is being contradicted in the self-same "Word of God" — i.e. I CHRONICLES 1:32, where Keturah is described as Abraham's CONCUBINE. Here is an extra contradiction in the Bible, unless 'WIFE" and "CONCUBINE" are synonymous terms.

31. MASSACRE: At the hands of the Jews— **(a)** "Now therefore KILL every male among the little ones, and KILL every woman (female) that hath known man by lying (having sex) with him. "But keep ALIVE for yourselves all the GIRLS and all the women who are VIRGINS." NUMBERS 31:17-18 "And the Jews salvaged for themselves 32,000 virgins, verse 35; see also verse 40.**(b)** But of the cities of these people, which the Lord thy God doth give thee for an inheritance, thou (o Jews) shall save alive NOTHING that BREATHES. DEUTERONOMY 20:16 **(c)** 'And they (the Jews) UTTERLY DESTROYED all that was in the city, both man and woman, young and old, ox and sheep, and ASS, with the edge of the sword " JOSHUA 6:21 (Even donkeys were not spared) **(d)** "He (Joshua) let NONE remain alive." Joshua 10:28

32. MELCHIDESEK: This High Priest of Salem has qualities which outshines, even Jesus Christ (peace be upon him). "Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days nor end of life. . . HEBREWS 7:3 (These attributes only befit God!)

33. MESSIAH TRANSLATED "CHRIST": Messiah is a very common noun in Hebrew. Translated into Greek it became "Christos", which in plain English means ANOINTED Every where the word "anointed" appears in the English translation of the Bible (any Version) that word in the Hebrew original is invariably the word "MESSIAH"! Here are a few ready examples **(a)** "I am the God of Beth-el, where thou ANOINTEDEST (messiah) the PILLAR. . ." (Christ Pillar!) Genesis 31:13 **(b)** 'And Moses took the ANOINTING (Messiah) OIL, and ANOINTED (Messiah) the TABERNACLE. . .'' (Christ Oil! and Christ Tabernacle!) LEVITICUS 8:10 **(c)** . . he (the Lord) shall give strength unto his king and exalt the HORN of his ANOINTED (messiah) . . • (Christ Horn!) I SAMUEL 2:10 **(d)** "Thou art the ANOINTED (Messiah) CHERUB (Christ Cherub!) EZEKIEL 28:14 **(e)** thus saith the Lord to his ANOINTED

(messiah) CYRUS. . . (Christ CYRUS!) ISAIAH 45:1 (God addresses even a pagan king as His Messiah!)

34. MUHUMMED (pbuh): Is a true prophet of God according to the Bible **(a)**" . . Every spirit (meaning every prophet) that confesses that Jesus Christ is come in flesh is of God 1 JOHN 4.2 Compare with Holy Qur'an 3:45 and many other Qur'ânic references where Jesus (pbuh) is referred to as the CHRIST.

MUHUMMED (PBUH) MENTIONED BY NAME IN THE BIBLE: **(b)** "his mouth is most sweet: yea, he is (Muhummed-im) altogether lovely, this is my beloved, and this is my friend, O daughters of Jerusalem. SONG OF SOLOMON 5:16 From the original Hebrew manuscript the word "MUHUMMEDIM", is translated as "altogether lovely' which is actually the word MUHUMMED with "im" added. "IM" is the plural of respect in the Hebrew language.

MUHUMMED A "COMFORTER" LIKE JESUS, PEACE BE UPON THEM **(c)** "And I will pray the father, and he shall give you ANOTHER Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever. JOHN 14:16

Jesus (pbuh) was the first Comforter, and ANOTHER would have to be one like him, of the same kind as Jesus, a man and not a Ghost.

35. ONANISM: "The withdrawal of the penis from the vagina before ejaculation." (The New Collins Dictionary). Medical term — "coitus interruptus." "And Judah said to Er's (deceased) brother Onan. Go and sleep (have sex) with your brothers widow. . . "But Onan knew that the children would not belong to him ie. would not carry his name), so when he had INTERCOURSE with his brother's widow (Tamar), he let the semen (the older Versions call it "seed") spill on the ground, so that there would be no children (no name) for his brother. GENESIS 38:8-9

36. Original Sin: The Christina dogma that sin is inherited is against all ethics, morality and common sense. It is against the explicit pronouncement of God:

"The soul that sinneth, it shall die. The son (the progeny of Adam) shall not bear the iniquity of the father (Adam), neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son: the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him. But if the wicked will turn from all his sins that he hath committed, and keep all my statutes, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live, he shall not die." Ezekiel 18:20-21

(a) In Islam the notion of original sin is regarded as inconsistent with the justice of Allah. How could a just and loving God make an innocent child responsible for, or at least bear the guilt for the sins of a distant ancestor? (Steve A. Johnson)

(b) No heathen tribe has conceived so grotesque an idea, involving as it does the assumption, that man was born with a hereditary stain upon him, and this stain for which he was not personally responsible was to be atoned for, and that the creator of all things had to sacrifice His only begotten son to neutralize this mysterious curse. (Major Yeats Brown)

That Jesus (pbuh) himself regarded children as innocent and pure, and NOT BORN IN SIN, is clear from his reported saying:

"Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not, for such is the kingdom of God . . ." Mark 10:14

37. Paul: On his own admittance being cunning, used deceit "But be it so, I did not burden you nevertheless, being crafty, I CAUGHT YOU WITH GUILE." 2 CORINTHIANS 12:16 (GUILE: means ruse, sharp practice, treachery, trickery and wiliness.)

38. PIGS: See "Swine" in the index

39. POLYGAMY: Solomon the wise had a thousand wives and concubines (a) "And he (Solomon) had seven hundred wives, and three hundred concubines: and his wives turned away his heart (towards other gods). "KINGS 1 1:3 (b) Abraham the friend of God had more than one wife; and so had Israel (Jacob) and David the king. There is not a single word of reproach in the "Book of God" the Holy Bible against polygamous marriages.

40. PROPHESIES: Empty threats— **(a)** "But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil thou 1☐ Adam) shalt not eat of it. for IN THE DAY that thou eatest thereof thou shalt SURELY DIE." GENESIS 2:17

Contradicted by*. **(b)** And all the days that Adam lived were NINE HUNDRED AND THIRTY YEARS: and he died" GENESIS 5:5 Amazing! In the language of God (?) "In the day" does not mean That very day" but centuries later (?). According to the Holy Bible the devil was more truthful about the consequence of eating the "forbidden fruit," he had assured Eve— **(c)** (And the serpent (the devil) said unto the woman, Ye shall NOT SURELY DIE." GENESIS 3:4

41. PROPHETS (BUT NAKED): If such are the priests, God bless the congregation— **(a)** "And he (Noah) drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he lay NAKED within his tent." GENESIS 9-21 **(b)** 'And he (Saul) stripped off his clothes also, and prophesied before Samuel in like manner, and lay down NAKED all that day and all that night Wherefore they say, Is Saul also among the prophets? " 1 SAMUEL 19:24 **(c)** "How glorious was the king of Israel (David) to day, who UNCOVERED (became naked) himself to day in the eyes of the handmaids of his servants, as one of the vain fellows shamelessly UNCOVERS himself 2 SAMUEL 6:20 **(d)** And the Lord said, like as my servant ISAIAH hath walked NAKED and barefoot three years . . . " . . young and old, NAKED and barefoot, even with their buttocks UNCOVERED, to the shame of Egypt. ISAIAH 20:3-4

42. RAPE: Brother rapes and commits incest with his sister— **(a)** Howbeit he (Amnon, one of the sons of David) would not hearken unto her this sister Tamar's voice: but, being stronger than she, forced (raped) her, and LAY (had sex) with her." 2 SAMUEL 13:14 Son commits incest and rapes his mothers wholesale! **(b)** "So they spread Absalom (another of the sons of David) a tent upon the top of the house; and Absalom WENT IN (had intercourse) unto his father's concubines (same as "wives", see KETURAH in the index) in the sight of ISRAEL" 2 SAMUEL 16:22

43. SABBATH: Sabbath as a standing insult to God in the Bible— " . . for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, and on the seventh day he rested and WAS REFRESHED." EXODUS 31:17 On the contrary the Holy Qur'an states: "His throne doth extend Over the heavens And the earth, and He feeleth No fatigue in guarding And preserving them For He is the most High, The Supreme (in glory)." Holy Qur'an 2:255

44. SARAH: The Holy Bible does not even spare God from illicit sexual aspersions being ascribed to Him: In the case of the conception of Jesus Christ (peace be upon him), God Almighty arranged for Mary to conceive Jesus by the intervention of the Holy Ghost, as witnessed in the Bible: **(a)**"The Holy Ghost shall COME UPON thee (the question is, how?) and the power of the most High shall OVERSHADOW thee (again, how?). LUKE 1:35 Whereas in the case of Isaac, his conception took place in the womb of Sarah by the direct intervention of God himself, as recorded in His (?) Holy Book: **(b)** "And the Lord VISITED Sarah, as he had PROMISED and FULFILLED what he had SPOKEN. And Sarah CONCEIVED . . . " GENESIS 21:1-2

45. SLAVERY: Sanctioned by God— "ye, shall take them (the slaves) as an inheritance for your children after you, to inherit them (the slaves) for a possession, they shall be ,your BONDMEN (slaves) for ever . . . LEVITICUS 25:46

46. SODOMY: The Bible's reason why human beings become lesbians and homosexuals 'Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and WORSHIPPED and SERVED the creature (like men and monkeys) more than the Creator . . . "BECAUSE THEY DO THIS (worshipping men and monkeys), God has given them over to shameful passions. Even women pervert the natural use of their sex by unnatural acts (like lesbianism and bestiality). "In the same way. . . the men burn with passion for one another (as sodomites and homosexuals) . . . ROMANS 1:25-27 (The Good News Bible).

47. SONS OF GOD: The Bible ascribes sons by the tons to God. **(a)** 'Which was the son of Enos, which was the son of Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was the SON OF GOD." LUKE 3:38 **(b)** "That the SONS OF GOD saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took wives of all which they chose. ". . when the SONS OF GOD came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown." GENESIS 6:2 and 4 **(c)** " . . Thus- saith the Lord, Israel is MY SON even my FIRSTBORN." EXODUS 4:22 **(d)** " . . and Ephraim is my FIRSTBORN," JEREMIAH 31:9 **(e)** " . . Thou (o David) ART MY SON; this day have I (God) BEGOTTEN thee. " PSALMS 2:7 (TONS A ton is 2000 lbs weight, that is about a thousand kilograms.) ("FIRST BORN:" How can there be two "firstborns"?) ("BEGOTTEN" How can God beget David at the age of forty? "This day'?)

(f) "For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the SONS OF GOD. ' ROMANS 8:14

48. SWINE: The flesh of the swine forbidden _ **(a)** "Of their flesh (of the swine) shall ye NOT EAT, and their carcass ye shall NOT TOUCH; they are unclean to you " LEVITICUS 11:8

Jesus (pbuh) destroyed 2000 pigs to heal one man— **(b)** "And forthwith Jesus gave them leave (permission). And the unclean spirits (the devils) went out, and entered

into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea (they were about two thousand); and were choked in the sea MARK 5:13

49. TRINITY: According to the Athanasian Creed:

"The Father is God, the Son is God, and the Holy Ghost is God, and yet there are not three Gods but one God."

In this Holy Trinity: "The three Persons are CO-EQUAL and CO-ETERNAL: all alike are UNCREATED and OMNIPOTENT." (The Catholic Encyclopedia)

Thus the Trinity is considered to be: (One God in three Persons."

There is only one verse in the whole of Holy Scripture called the Bible which unequivocally supports this Christian dogma, and that is:

"For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost; and these three are one. " The first Epistle of John 5:7

Dr C.I, Scofield, D.D. backed by eight other D.D.'s in a footnote to this verse opine:

"IT IS GENERALLY AGREED THAT THIS VERSE HAS NO MANUSCRIPT AUTHORITY AND HAS BEEN INSERTED."

The fundamentalist Christians still retain this fabrication whereas, in all the modern translations including the Revised Standard Version (RSV) this pious fraud has been unceremoniously expunged, thus confirming this Qur'ânic refutation:

"They do blaspheme who say: God is one of three In a Trinity: for there is no God except one God. If they desist not from their word (of blasphemy), verily a grievous penalty will befall the blasphemers among them." Holy Qur'an 5:76.

Thank God! The Christians are willy-nilly discovering pagan forgeries in their "word of God", but they are still dragging their feet.

50. WHORRING: See under "ISRAELITES" in the index.

51. WINE: Look for "Alcohol" in the index.

52. WOMEN: Forbidden to open their mouths in the Church—

(a). . for it is a SHAME for women to speak in the Church" 1 CORINTHIANS 14:34-35

(b) To chop off her hands for saving her husband's life. Deuteronomy 25: 11-12.

(c) Her husband to rule over her. Genesis 3:16. The head of the woman is the man. 1 Corinthians 11:3. Man can sell his daughter. Exodus 21:7.

53. WORD OF GOD: Not to add or delete a word from it.

"Whatsoever thing I command you, observe to do it; and thou shalt not add thereto, nor diminish from it." Deuteronomy 12:32.

54. WORSHIP: The word "worship" in Mark 5:6 and many other places means to adore, to adulate, to respect, to revere. Compare the same verse with LUKE 8:28 where the word "worship' is alternatively recorded as "FELL DOWN BEFORE HIM."

WAS CHRIST CRUCIFIED ?

JESUS (PBUH) SAID, "THE DAY THAT I DIE", not "THE DAY THAT I DIED"

It is mentioned in **Surah Maryam, Chapter 19 verse 33**
"So Peace is on me the day I was born, the day that I die and the Day that I shall be raised up to life (again)".
[Al-Qur'ân 19:33]

The Qur'ân mentions that Jesus (pbuh) said "Peace is on me the Day I was born, the day that I die". "It is not stated the day that I died". It is in the future tense and not in the past tense.

JESUS (PBUH) WAS RAISED UP ALIVE

The Qur'ân further says in **Surah Nisa, Chapter 4 verse 157-158:**
"That they said (in boast), 'We killed Jesus Christ the son of Mary, the Messenger of Allah' But they killed him not, Nor **crucified** him, but so it was made to appear to them, and those who differ therein are full of doubts, with no (certain) knowledge, but only conjecture to follow, for of a surety they killed him not-
Nay, Allah raised him up unto Himself; and Allah is exalted in Power, Wise."
[Al-Qur'ân 4:157-158]

Dictionary of World Religions

NAME	AUTHOR	PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS
THE HARPERCOLLINS DICTIONARY OF RELIGION	Jonathan Z. Smith (General Editor) William Scott Green (Associate Editor)	Harper San Francisco An imprint of Harper Collins Publishers, 10, East 53rd Street, New York, NY 10022
THE PERENNIAL DICTIONARY OF WORLD RELIGIONS	Keith Crim (General Editor) Roger A. Bullard Larry D. Shinn (Associate Editors)	Harper & Row, Publishers San Francisco, New York, Grand Rapids,Philadelphia, St. Louis London, Singapore, Sydney, Tokyo, Toronto
A DICTIONARY OF COMPARATIVE RELIGION	S. G. F. Brandon	Charles Scribner's Sons . New York
DICTIONARY OF RELIGION AND PHILOSOPHY	Geddes Macgregor	J. M. Dent & Sons Ltd. 91, Clapham High Street, London SW4 7TA
ENCYCLOPEDIA OF WORLD RELIGIONS	G. T. Bettany	Bracken Books, Princess House, 50, Eastcastle Street, London WIN 7AP, England
CONCISE DICTIONARY OF RELIGION	Irving Hexham	Intervarsity Press Downers Grove, Illinois 60515

Material to be referred for Da'wah to Hindus

SR.NO : 1

NAME : THE PRINCIPAL UPANISHADS

NO. OF VOLS : 1

TRANSLATOR : English Translation and Notes by: S. Radhakrishnan

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Indus - Harper Collins Publishers India Pvt. Ltd. 7/16 Ansari Road, New Delhi 110002 (India).

SR.NO : 2

NAME : THE SACRED BOOKS OF THE EAST: THE UPANISHADS

NO. OF VOLS : Vol. 1 and 15

TRANSLATOR : English Translation by: F. Max Muller

PUBLISHER'S NAME AND ADDRESS : Motilal Banarsidass Publishers Pvt. Ltd. 41 U.A., Bungalow Road, Jawahar Nagar, Delhi 110007 (India)

SR. NO. : 1

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : The Eternal Religion Hinduism

VERSION :

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : This package includes the origin an evolution of Hinduism, details of places of Hindu interest, more than hundred verses from the Vedas.

PRODUCER : Visonosoft Limited # 12, Canal Bank Rd., R.A. Puram, Chennai 600 028. (India) Tel: 91-44-8553586

SR. NO. : 2

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : India Mystica

VERSION : 2.0

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : Hundreds of pages of text with 400 pictures and illustrations. Over 400 audios, videos and animations bring alive one of the word's oldest living faiths with the power of multimedia.

PRODUCER : Magic Software Pvt. Limited N-114 1st Flr, Greater Kailash I, New Delhi 110 048, India. Tel: 6476556/6476989/6216965 Fax: (91-11)6472688

SR. NO. : 3

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : Bhagavad Gita

VERSION :

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : Bhagavad Gita - the multimedia book is a full featured interactive CD-Rom which brings to you the quintessence of Cosmic Law in the divine Sanskrit language, in eternal words of Sri Krishna. It also includes: Gita based quiz, Gita based games, Gita based stories, Gita quotes, Gita Management, about Gita, Picture gallery, Gita dictionary, Gita knowledge & wisdom.

PRODUCER : Multimedia Station # 501, 5th Cross, HMT layout, Ganganagar, Bangalore 560032. India. Tel:91-80-3337619

International Sanskrit Research Academy # 627, 1st B Main Rd., Yediur, 7th block (west), Jayanagar, Bangalore 560082, India. Tel: 91-80-640732 e-mail: info@bhagavadgita.com website: www.bhagavadgita.com

---

SR. NO. : 4

NAME OF THE PACKAGE : The Mahabharata

VERSION :

FORMAT : CD-Rom

LANGUAGE : English

DESCRIPTION : It Contains beautiful hand-painted illustrations, colourful animations, and an original music score. Hours of viewing pleasure.

PRODUCER : Magic's Software Pvt. Ltd. F-6 Kailash Colony, New Delhi 110 048. Tel: 6487229, 6216965, 6476989 Fax: 91-11-6472688 e-mail: mail@magicsw.com website: www.magicsw.com

INTRODUCTION
TO
HINDUISM

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

I INTRODUCTION TO HINDUISM:

The most popular among the Aryan religions is Hinduism. '*Hindu*' is actually a Persian word that stands for the inhabitants of the region beyond the Indus Valley. However, in common parlance, Hinduism is a blanket term for an assortment of religious beliefs, most of which are based on the Vedas, the Upanishads and the Bhagavad Gita.

II INTRODUCTION TO HINDU SCRIPTURES.

There are several sacred scriptures of the Hindus. Among these are the Vedas, Upanishads and the Puranas.

1.
VEDAS:

i. The word Veda is derived from *vid* which means to know, knowledge par excellence or sacred wisdom. There are four principal divisions of the Vedas (although according to their number, they amount to 1131 out of which about a dozen are available). According to Maha Bhashya of Patanjali, there are 21 branches of Rigveda, 9 types of Atharvaveda, 101 branches of Yajurveda and 1000 of Samveda).
ii. The Rigveda, the Yajurveda and the Samveda are considered to be more ancient books and are known as *Trai Viddya* or the 'Triple Sciences'. The Rigveda is the oldest and has been compiled in three long and different periods of time. The 4th Veda is the Atharvaveda, which is of a later date.
iii. There is no unanimous opinion regarding the date of compilation or revelation of the four Vedas. According to Swami Dayanand, founder of the *Arya Samaj*, the Vedas were revealed 1310 million years ago. According to other scholars, they are not more than 4000 years old.
iv. Similarly, there are differing opinions regarding the places where these books were compiled and the *Rishis* to whom these Scriptures were given. Inspite of these differences, the Vedas are considered to be the most authentic of the Hindu Scriptures and the real foundations of the *Hindu Dharma.*

2.

UPANISHADS:

i. The word 'Upanishad' is derived from *Upa* meaning near, *Ni* which means down and *Shad* means to sit. Therefore 'Upanishad' means sitting down near. Groups of pupils sit near the teacher to learn from him the secret doctrines.

   According to Samkara, 'Upanishad' is derived from the root word Sad which means 'to loosen', 'to reach' or 'to destroy', with *Upa* and *ni* as prefix; therefore 'Upanishad' means Brahma-Knowledge by which ignorance is loosened or destroyed.

ii. The number of Upanishads exceeds 200 though the Indian tradition puts it at 108. There are 10 principal Upanishads. However, some consider them to be more than 10, while others 18.

iii. The Vedanta meant originally the Upanishads, though the word is now used for the system of philosophy based on the Upanishad. Literally, Vedanta means the end of the Veda, *Vedasua-antah*, and the conclusion as well as the goal of Vedas. The Upanishads are the concluding portion of the Vedas and chronologically they come at the end of the Vedic period.

iv. Some *Pundits* consider the Upanishads to be more superior to the Vedas.

3.

PURANAS:

Next in order of authenticity are the Puranas which are the most widely read scriptures. It is believed that the Puranas contain the history of the creation of the universe, history of the early Aryan tribes, life stories of the divines and deities of the Hindus. It is also believed that the Puranas are revealed books like the Vedas, which were revealed simultaneously with the Vedas or sometime close to it.

Maharishi Vyasa has divided the Puranas into 18 voluminous parts. He also arranged the Vedas under various heads.

Chief among the Puranas is a book known as Bhavishya Purana. It is called so because it is believed to give an account of future events. The Hindus consider it to be the word of God. Maharishi yasa is considered to be just the compiler of the book.

4.

ITIHAAS:

The two epics of Hinduism are the Ramayana and the Mahabharata.

A. Ramayana:

According to Ramanuja, the great scholar of Ramayana, there are more than 300 different types of Ramayana: Tulsidas Ramayana, Kumbha Ramayana. Though the outline of Ramayana is same, the details and contents differ.

Valmiki's Ramayana:

Unlike the Mahabharata, the Ramayana appears to be the work of one person – the sage Valmiki, who probably composed it in the 3rd century BC. Its best-known recension (by Tulsi Das, 1532-1623) consists of 24,000 rhymed couplets of 16-syllable lines organised into 7 books. The poem incorporates many ancient legends and draws on the sacred books of the Vedas. It describes the efforts of Kosala's heir, Rama, to regain his throne and rescue his wife, Sita, from the demon King of Lanka.

Valmiki's Ramayana is a Hindu epic tradition whose earliest literary version is a Sanskrit poem attributed to the sage Valmiki. Its principal characters are said to present ideal models of personal, familial, and social behavior and hence are considered to exemplify *Dharma*, the principle of moral order.

B. Mahabharata:

The nucleus of the Mahabharata is the war of eighteen days fought between the*Kauravas*, the hundred sons of Dhritarashtra and *Pandavas*, the five sons of Pandu. The epic entails all the circumstances leading upto the war. Involved in this*Kurukshetra* battle were almost all the kings of India joining either of the two parties. The result of this war was the total annihilation of Kauravas and their party. Yudhishthira, the head of the Pandavas, became the sovereign monarch of Hastinapura. His victory is supposed to symbolise the victory of good over evil. But with the progress of years, new matters and episodes relating to the various aspects of human life, social, economic, political, moral and religious as also fragments of other heroic legends came to be added to the aforesaid nucleus and this phenomenon continued for centuries until it acquired the present shape. The Mahabharata represents a whole literature rather than one single and unified work, and contains many multifarious things.

C. Bhagavad Gita:

Bhagavad Gita is a part of Mahabharata. It is the advice given by Krishna to Arjun on the battlefield of Kurukshetra. It contains the essence of the Vedas and is the most popular of all the Hindu Scriptures. It contains 18 chapters.

The Bhagavad Gita is one of the most widely read and revered of the works sacred to the Hindus. It is their chief devotional book, and has been for centuries the principal source of religious inspiration for many thousands of Hindus.

The Gita is a dramatic poem, which forms a small part of the larger epic, the Mahabharata. It is included in the sixth book (Bhismaparvan) of the Mahabaharata and documents one tiny event in a huge epic tale.

The Bhagavad Gita tells a story of a moral crisis faced by Arjuna, which is solved through the interaction between Arjuna, a Pandava warrior hesitating before battle, and Krishna, his charioteer and teacher. The Bhagavad Gita relates a brief incident in the main story of a rivalry and eventually a war between two branches of a royal family. In that brief incident - a pause on the battlefield just as the battle is about to begin - Krishna, one chief on one side (also believed to be the Lord incarnate), is presented as responding to the doubts of Arjuna. The poem is the dialogue through which Arjuna's doubts were resolved by Krishna's teachings.

COMMON QUESTIONS ASKED BY HINDUS ABOUT ISLAM

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

1. IDOL USED FOR CONCENTRATION

Question:

The Hindu Pundits and Scholars agree that the Vedas and other Hindu religious scriptures prohibit idol worship, but initially because the mind may not be matured, an idol is required for concentration while worshipping. After the mind reaches higher consciousness, the idol is not required for concentration.

Answer :

Muslims have reached the higher level of consciousness

Muslims have reached the higher level of consciousness. If an idol is required for concentration only in the initial stages and not later on when the mind reaches higher consciousness then I would like to say the Muslims have already reached the state of higher consciousness because when we worship Allah (swt) we do not require any idol or statue.

Child asks why does it thunder?

When I was discussing with a Swami in IRF. He said that when our child asks us, "Why does the sky thunder?", we reply that "aaee ma chakki pees rahi hai", the grandmother is grinding flour in the heaven; because he is too young to understand. Similarly in the initial stages people require an idol for concentration.

In Islam we don't believe in telling a lie, even if it's a white lie. I will never give such a wrong answer to my child because later on when he goes to school and learns that the thundering sound after lightning is due to the expansion of rapidly heated air, he will either think that the teacher is lying or later on when he understands the fact he will conclude that the father is a liar. If you feel that the child may not understand certain difficult things you should simplify the answer rather than give a wrong fictitious reply. If you, yourself do not know the answer, you should have the guts to be truthful and say 'I don't know'. But many children nowadays will not be satisfied with this answer. If this answer was given to my son, he would say "Abba (father), why don't you know?' This will compel you to do your homework and thus educate yourself as well as your child.

Those in standard one require idol for concentration – (2 + 2 = 4 will remain same in standard one and ten)

Some pundits while trying to convince me regarding idol worship said that in standard one the student is initially taught to worship God by concentrating with the help of an idol but later on when he graduates he no longer requires the idol to concentrate while worshipping the God.

A very important fact to be noted is that only if the fundamentals of any particular subject is strong, then only will he be able to excel in future for e.g. A teacher of mathematics in standard one teaches the students that 2 + 2 = 4 irrespective whether the student passes school or does graduation or does a Ph. D. in mathematics, the basics of 2 + 2 = 4 will yet remain the same, it will not change to 5 or 6. In higher standards the student, besides addition may learn about Algebra, Trigonometry, Logarithm, etc. but the fundamental of addition will yet remain the same. If the teacher in standard one itself teaches the fundamentals wrong, how can you expect the student to excel in future?

It is the fundamental principal of the Vedas regarding the concept of God that He has got no image, so how can the Scholars even after knowing this fact keep silent at the wrong practice being done by people.

Will you tell your son who is in standard one that 2 plus 2 is not equal to 4 but 5 or 6 and only confirm the truth after he passes school? Never. In fact if he makes a mistake you will correct him and say it is 4 and not wait till he graduates; and if you don't correct him initially you will ruin his future.

2. WATER IS CALLED BY DIFFERENT NAMES IN DIFFERENT LANGUAGES – GOD IS CALLED BY DIFFERENT NAMES AS ALLAH, RAM OR JESUS

Question:

Water is called by different names in different languages: in English as water, in Hindi as paani, in Tamil as tanni. Similarly if God is called either Allah, Ram or Jesus, is it not one and the same?

Answer:

To Allah belongs the Most Beautiful Names

The Glorious Qur'an says in Surah Isra chapter 17 verse 110

"Say: 'Call upon Allah, or call upon Rahman: by whatever name ye call upon Him, (it is well): for to Him belong the Most Beautiful Names.'"

[Al-Qur'an 17:110]

You can call Allah by any name, but it should be a beautiful name,should not conjure up a mental picture, and should have qualities that only Allah possesses.

Water can be called by differnt names in different languages but something else besides water cannot be called water in another language.

You can call water by various names in different languages, like water in English, paani in Hindi, tanni in Tamil, mai in Arabic, apah in Sanskrit, jal in Shudh Hindi, jal or paani in Gujrati, pandi in Marathi, neer in Kannad, neeru in Telugu, vellam in Malayalam, etc. If a

person tells me that his friend has advised that everyday early in the morning he should have one glass of paani, but he is unable to drink it because when he drinks it, he feels like vomiting. On enquiry he says that the paani stinks and it is yellowish in colour. Later I realise that what he is referring to as paani is not water but urine. Thus you can call water by different names having the same meaning but you cannot call other things as water or paani.

People may think that the example is not realistic and I agree with them because even an ignorant person knows the difference between water and urine. He will have to be a fool to call urine ‘water’. Similarly when any person who knows the correct concept of God, sees people worshipping false gods, he naturally wonders how a person cannot differentiate between a true God and false gods.

Purity of Gold is not verified by calling it by different names in different languages but rubbing it against a Touchstone.

In the same way, gold can be called sona in Hindi, gold in English, dhahaba in Arabic. Inspite of knowing all these different names for gold, if a person wants to sell you his gold jewellery and says this is 24 carat pure sona, you will not blindly believe, without verifying it with a goldsmith. The goldsmith confirms whether it is gold or not with the help of a touchstone. The yellow glittering jewellery may not be gold, because all that glitters is not gold.

Surah Ikhlas is the Touchstone of Theology.

Similarly, any person or candidate who is called God cannot be accepted as the true God without verifying him with the touchstone. The touchstone of theology, that is study of God, is Surah Ikhlas chapter 112 of the Holy Qur’an which says:

"Say, ‘He is Allah, The One and Only; Allah, The Eternal, Absolute; He begetteth not Nor is He begotten; and there is none like unto Him.’”

[Al-Qur’an 112:1-4]

Any candidate who passes the Acid test can be called God.

Any candidate who claims to be God and fits in this four line definition, passes the Acid test, is entitled to be called God and worshipped as God.

Suppose a lunatic says that Muhammad (pbuh) is God, (God forbid). Let's put him to the test of Surah Ikhlas.

"Kul hu allah hu ahad" – Say He is Allah, The One and Only;

Is Muhammad (pbuh) one and only? No! he was not the only messenger. There were many other messengers.

"Allah hus Samad" – Allah, The Eternal, Absolute;

We know that Muhammad (pbuh) had to undergo many hardships. Though he was the mightiest messenger of God, he died at the age of 63 and was buried in Madeenah.

"Lam ya lid wa lam yulad" – He begetteth not Nor is He begotten;

We know that he was born in Makkah and his parents were Abdullah and Aaminah. He even had several children e.g. Fatimah, Ibrahim (may Allah be pleased with them), etc.

"Wa lam ya kullahu kufuwan ahad" – And there is none like unto Him.

Though all the Muslims love and revere the Prophet (pbuh) and are supposed to follow each and every of his commandments, yet you will not find a single Muslim in the whole world, who in his senses will ever say that Muhammad (pbuh) is God. The Islamic Creed is, "La illaha illallah Muhammadur Rasoolullah", which means that there is no god but Allah, and Muhammad (pbuh) is the messenger of Allah. This is repeated five times a day during the call for prayer, so that the Muslims are reminded daily that although they respect and obey him, he is only a Messenger and servant of God, and not God Himself.

Verify the Gods you worship.

Now that we have explained to you how to use the touchstone of theology it is the duty of everyone to verify with this touchstone, whether the gods that they worship are true or false.

3. IS ALLAH MENTIONED IN OTHER SCRIPTURES

Question:

"Allah" is the most appropriate name for God in the Qur'an. Is this name "Allah" mentioned in other religious scriptures besides the Qur'an?

Answer:

Almost all the major religious scriptures of the world contain the word "Allah" as one of the names of God.

Elohim El, Elah, Alah

In the Bible, God is very often referred to as 'Elohim' in the Hebrew language. The 'im' in the ending is a plural of honour and God is referred to as 'El' or 'Elah' in the English Bible with commentary, edited by reverend C. I. Scofield. 'Elah' is alternatively spelled as 'Alah'. The difference in spelling is only of a single 'L'. Muslims spell Allah as 'Allah' while the Reverend has spelled it as Alah and they pronounce it as 'Elah'. Muslims pronounce it as Allah. Hebrew and Arabic are sister languages therefore we say it should be pronounced as 'Allah' and not as 'Elah'.

When I was in school, I was taught 'D, O' is do, 'T, O' is to. What is 'G, O' It is 'go' and not 'gu'. 'N, U, T' is nut, 'C, U, T' cut; 'B, U, T' is but, what is 'P, U, T'? Not 'pat' but it is 'put'. If you ask "Why?" The answer is "It is their language". If I have to pass I have to say 'P, U, T' is 'put' and not 'pat'. Similarly the right pronunciation for A, L, L, A, H, is Allah.

Jesus (pbuh) cried out Allah Allah when he was put on the cross

It is mentioned in the New Testament in the Gospel of Mathew, chapter 27 verse 46 as well as Gospel of Mark, chapter 15 verse 34 when Jesus (pbuh) was put on the cross.

Jesus cried with a loud voice saying "E'-Li, E'-Li la'-ma sa-bach'-tha-ni?" that is to say, 'My God, My God why hast Thou Forsaken Me?' Does this sound like Jehovah! Jehovah! why has thou forsaken me? Does it sound like Abba Abba? The answer is 'No'. Hebrew and Arabic are sister languages and if you translate "E'-Li, E'-Li la'-ma sa-bach'-tha-ni" into Arabic it is 'Allah Allah lama tarak tani' does it sound similar?

This statement of Jesus (pbuh), "E'-Li, E'-Li la'-ma sa-bach'-tha-ni" is preserved in its original Hebrew in each and every of its translation which is available in more than 2000 different languages of the world and in each and every of them, "Allah" is present.

"Allah" in Sikhism

One of the names by which Gurunanak Sahib referred to God is "Allah".

"Allah" in Rigveda Book 2 Hymn I verse II

Even in the Rigveda which is the most sacred scripture of the Hindus, one of the attributes given to God Almighty in Book no 2 Hymn no I verse II, is 'Ila' which if pronounced properly is the same as Allah.

Allo Upanishad:

Amongst the various Upanishads one of the Upanishad is named as 'Allo' Upanishad in which God is referred to as "Allah" several times.

4. HINDUISM IS NOT THE OLDEST AND BEST RELIGION

Question

Hinduism is the oldest of all the religions and thus the, most pure, authentic and best of all the religions of the world.

Answer:

Islam is the oldest religion

Hinduism is not the oldest of all the religions. It is Islam which is the first and the oldest of all religions. People have a misconception that Islam is 1400 years old and that Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) is the founder of this religion. Islam existed since time immemorial, ever since man first set foot on this earth. Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) was not the founder of Islam. He was the last and final Messenger of Almighty God.

The oldest religion need not be the purest and the most authentic religion

A religion cannot be claimed to be most pure and authentic, only on the criterion that it is the oldest. It is similar to a person saying that the water he has kept in an open glass, in his house, outside the refrigerator, for three months is purer than the water which has just been collected in a clean glass, immediately after it has been purified.

The latest religion need not be the purest and the most authentic religion

On the other hand a religion cannot be claimed to be the purest or authentic, only on the criterion that the religion is new or the latest. A bottle of distilled water which is sealed, packed and kept in the refrigerator for three months is much purer than a bottle of water freshly collected from the sea.

For religion to be pure and authentic, it should not have interpolations, changes and revisions in its scriptures revealed from God

For any religion to be pure and authentic, its scriptures should not contain any interpolation, addition, deletion or revision. Moreover the religion’s source of inspiration and direction should be Almighty God. The Qur’an is the only religious scripture on the face of the earth which has been maintained it its original form. All the other religious scriptures, of all the other religions have interpolations, additions, deletions or revisions.

The Qur'an has been in the memory of a multitude of people, intact in its original form ever since its revelation, and now there are hundreds of thousands of people who have preserved it in their memory. Moreover, if you compare the copies made by Caliph Uthman from the original Qur'an which is yet present in the museum in Tashkent and in Koptaki museum in Turkey, they are the same as the ones we possess today.

Allah (swt) promises in the Qur'an, in Surah Al Hijr, chapter 15 verse 9

"We have, without doubt, sent down the Message; and We will assuredly guard it (from corruption)."

The oldest religion need not be best religion

A religion cannot be claimed to be the best religion only on the criterion that it is the oldest. It is similar to a person saying, that my 19th century car is better than a Toyota car manufactured in 1998, because it is older. He would be considered to be a fool to say that his 19th century car which required a rod to be turned in circles to start it, is better than a key-start 1998 Toyota car, just because it is older.

The latest religion need not be the best religion

On the other hand a religion cannot be called as the best religion only on the criterion that the religion is new or that it came later. It is similar to a person who says that my 800 cc Suzuki car manufactured in 1999 is better than a 5000 cc Mercedes 500 SEL manufactured in 1997. To judge which car is better, a person should compare the specifications of the car e.g. the power of the car, safety measures, the capacity of the cylinders, the pickup, the speed, the comfort, etc. 5000 cc Mercedes, 500 SEL car manufactured in 1997, is far superior and better than a 800 cc Suzuki (Maruti Suzuki 800) manufactured in 1999.

A religion is best, if it has the solutions to the problems of mankind

For a religion to be considered the best, it should have the solution to all the problems of mankind. It should be the religion of truth, and should be applicable to all ages. Islam is the only religion which has the solution to all the problems of mankind. e.g. the problem of alcoholism, surplus women, rape and molestation, robbery, racism, casteism, etc.

Islam is the religion of truth, and its laws and solutions are applicable to all the ages. The Qur'an is the only religious book on the face of the earth, which has maintained its purity and authenticity proving itself to be the word of God in all the ages. i.e. previously, when it was the age of miracles, literature and poetry and in present times when it is the age of science and technology. Moreover, Islam is not a man-made religion, but a religion revealed and inspired by Almighty God. It is the only religion acceptable in His Sight.

5. BURYING BETTER THAN CREMATING DEAD BODIES

Question:

Why do Muslims bury dead bodies instead of cremating them, i.e. burning them?

Answer:

Components of human body present in the soil

Elements that are present in the human body are present in lesser or greater quantity in the soil. Hence it is more scientific to bury a dead body, as it easily gets decomposed and mixed in the soil.

No Pollution

Cremating (burning) the dead body leads to pollution of the atmosphere which is detrimental to health and harmful for the environment. There is no such pollution caused by burying a dead body.

Surrounding land becomes fertile

To cremate a dead body several trees have to be chopped, which reduces the greenery and harms the environment and the ecology. When dead bodies are buried, besides the trees being saved, the surrounding land becomes fertile and it improves the environment.

Economical

It is expensive to cremate a dead body when tons of wood have to be burned. Annually there is a loss of crores of rupees, only because dead bodies are cremated in India. Burying dead bodies is very cheap. It hardly costs any money.

Same land can be utilised for burying another body

The wood used for cremating a dead body cannot be reutilised for cremating another dead body since it gets converted to ashes. The land used for burying a dead body can be reutilised for burying another body after a few years since the human body gets decomposed and mixed in the soil.

6. BINDI AND MANGALSUTRA

Why do the Muslim married women not put bindi or tika on the forehead and wear Mangalsutra, like Hindu married women?

Bindi or tika

Bindi is derived from the sanskrit word bindu, which means a ‘dot’. It is usually a red dot made with vermilion powder and is worn by the Hindu women between their eyebrows on their forehead.

Bindi is considered a symbol of ‘Parvati’ and signifies female energy which is believed by Hindus to protect women and their husbands. It is traditionally a symbol of marriage and is worn by the Hindu married women. It is also called as tika.

Bindi has become a fashion

Nowadays, wearing bindi has become a fashion and is even worn by unmarried girls and women. The shape of the bindi is no longer restricted to a dot and is available in various shapes, including oval, star, heart shaped, etc. It is even available in different bright colours like blue, green, yellow, orange, etc. The material of the bindi is no longer restricted to vermilion powder, but is made of coloured felt and other material. It is also available in a variety of designs in combination with coloured glass, glitter, etc.

Mangalsutra

Mangalsutra means a thread of good-will. It is a necklace worn specially by Hindu married women as a symbol of their marriage. It consists of two strings of black beads with a pendant usually of gold. The black beads are believed to act as a protection against evil. It is believed to protect the women's marriage and the life of her husband. In southern India, mangalsutra is called tali, which is a small gold ornament string on a cotton cord or a gold chain.

Hindu Married women are never supposed to remove their mangalsutra. It is only cut off when a Hindu lady becomes a widow.

Allah Is the Protector

Allah (swt), our Creator, is the best to protect human beings. We do not require any red dot or black thread to protect us from evil. It is mentioned in the Glorius Qur'an in Surah Anam Chapter 6 verse 14

"Say: Shall I take for my protector any other than Allah, the Maker of the heavens and the earth?"

[Al-Qur'an 6:14]

It is mentioned in several places in the Glorius Qur'an including

Surah Ali Imran Chapter 3 Verse 150 and Surah Alhajj Chapter 22 Verse 78

"Allah is your Protector, and He is the best of helpers."

Wearing a bindi or mangalsutra signifies a lack of faith in Almighty God, our Creator, who is the best to protect.

Against the Islamic Dress Code

Wearing a bindi or mangalsutra is a sign of Hindu women. The Islamic dress code does not permit a Muslim to wear any sign, symbol or mark which is specially significant of a non-Muslim.

In Islam, Both Married and Unmarried women should not be Teased

Once, a Hindu friend of mine, while mentioning the benefits of mangalsutra said that it easily identifies a married women, and thus prevents them from being teased and molested. According to Islam, each and every woman, whether married or unmarried, Muslim or Non-Muslim, should neither be teased nor molested.

7. TAKING NAME OF EMPEROR AKBAR IN ADHAAN

Question:

Why do Muslims take the name of Emperor Akbar while calling people to pray?

Answer:

Non Muslim misunderstand that Emperor Akbar's name is taken in Adhaan

Once, when I attended a conference in Kerala, a non-Muslim minister spoke just before my speech. He was highlighting the achievements of the Indian Muslims and their role in the progress of India. He said that amongst the Indian kings, the greatest was Emperor Akbar. No wonder the Muslims take his name five times a day, while calling people to pray. During my speech however, I clarified this misconception.

The 'Akbar' word of the Adhaan has nothing to do with Emperor Akbar

The word 'Akbar' mentioned in the Adhaan which is given to call people to pray has nothing to do with Emperor Akbar of India.The words in the Adhaan were used centuries before the birth of Emperor Akbar.

‘Akbar’ means ‘Great’

The Arabic word ‘Akbar’ means ‘great’. When we say ‘Allahu Akbar’ in the Adhaan we proclaim that ‘Allah is Great’ or ‘Allah is the Greatest’ and we call people to worship the one and only Allah who is the Greatest.

8. WHY DON’T MUSLIMS IN INDIA FOLLOW THE ISLAMIC CRIMINAL LAW?

Question

When Muslims in India insist on having a separate Muslim Personal Law for themselves, why don’t they also insist on implementing the Islamic Criminal Law for the Muslims; for example implementing the rule that the robber’s hands should be chopped off if a Muslim robs?

Answer:

Muslim Personal Law

Personal Law is a law concerning an individual person and the persons closely related to him, e.g. laws relating to marriage, divorce, inheritance, etc. It includes laws which are mutually agreed upon by a group of people. This law does not include any crime or an act that will harm the society directly.

India is Secular And Democratic

In any country, the Personal Law may differ for different groups of people and for different communities. Since India is a secular and democratic country it allows different groups of people to follow their own personal law if they wish.

Islamic Personal Law is the Best

Muslims believe that compared to all the different types of personal laws available in the world, the best and the most result oriented is the Islamic Personal Law. Muslims of India prefer following the Muslim personal law also because of their own belief in Islam.

Criminal Law

Criminal law is that law which is associated with a crime or an act which directly affects the society e.g. robbing, raping, murdering, etc.

The Criminal Law should be the same for all people

In any country, the criminal law unlike the Personal Law cannot be different for different groups of people. It has to be same for all people of different groups and different religions e.g. In Islam if a person robs, his hands are chopped off. This punishment is not prescribed in Hinduism. If a Hindu robs a Muslim, what would be the robber's punishment? The Muslim would want the hands of the robber to be chopped, while the Hindu Law would not agree.

The Muslims in India alone cannot separately follow the Islamic Criminal Law without involving the Non-Muslims

Even if a Muslim agrees, that as far as he commits a crime he should be given the punishment according to Islamic Criminal Law, it would not be practical. In case an allegation is made against a Muslim for robbery and if the witnesses are Non-Muslims, and if each one follows his own Criminal Law, the punishment in Islam for bearing false witness is 80 lashes, whereas in the Indian Crimial Law, a person giving false witness can easily escape. Thus, for a non-Muslim to falsely accuse a Muslim of any crime is very easy, if both follow their own criminal law. However, if both follow the Indian Law where the punishment is lenient for false witnesses and robbers, it will encourage both the robber to rob as well as encourage the witnesses to give false witness for their own benefit.

The Muslims in India would prefer the Islamic Criminal Law to be implemented on all Indians

We Muslims would prefer that in India the Islamic Criminal Law be implemented on all the Indians, since, chopping the hands of a thief will surely reduce the rate of robbery in India. Similarly, 80 lashes for giving false testimony will prevent a person from giving false witness.

Islamic Criminal Law is Most Practical

Islam besides pointing out a crime, it also gives you a solution showing how to prevent the crime e.g. chopping the hands of a robber, death penalty for the rapist. The punishment is so severe that it is a deterrent for the criminal to commit the crime. He will think a hundred times before committing a crime.

Thus if crime has to be reduced or stopped in India the best solution is to implement ‘The Common Islamic Criminal Law’.

9. ARE RAM AND KRISHNA PROPHETS OF GOD?

Question:

If according to Islam, messengers or prophets were sent to each and every nation of the world, then which prophet was sent to India? Can we consider Ram and Krishna to be messengers of God?

Answer:

Prophets sent to every nation

The Glorious Qur’an mentions in Surah Fatir, chapter 35 verse 24

". . . And there never was a people, without a warner

having lived among them (in the past)."

[Al-Qur’an 35:24]

A similar message is repeated in Surah Rad, chapter 13 verse 7

". . . and to every people a guide."

[Al-Qur'an 13:7]

Stories only of some prophets narrated in the Qur'an

Allah (swt) says in Surah Nisa, chapter 4 verse 164

"Of some messengers We have already told thee the story; of others we have not."

[Al-Qur'an 4:164]

A similar message is repeated in Surah Ghafir chapter 40 verse 78

"We did aforetime send messengers before thee: of them there are some whose story We have related to thee, and some whose story We have not related to thee. . ."

[Al'Qur'an 40:78]

25 Prophets of God are mentioned by name in the Qur'an

By name, only 25 Prophets of God are mentioned in the Qur'an e.g. Adam, Noah, Abraham, Moses, Jesus, Muhammed (pbut)

More than 1,24,000 prophets of God

According to Prophet Muhammad (pbuh), there were more than 1,24,000 prophets sent to this world.

All previous prophets sent only for their people

All the prophets that came before Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) were only sent for their own people and were to be followed only for a particular period of time.

Surah Ali Imran, chapter 3 verse 49

"And (appoint him) a messenger to the Children of Israel, . . ."

[Al-Qur'an 3:49]

Muhammad (pbuh), the last messenger of God

Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) is the last and final messenger of Almighty God. It is mentioned in

Surah Ahzab, chapter 33 verse 40

"Muhammad is not the father of any of your men, but (he is) the Messenger of Allah, and the seal of the Prophets: and Allah has full knowledge of all things."

[Al-Qur'an 33:40]

Prophet Muhammad (pbuh), sent for whole Humankind

Since Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) is the last and final messenger, he was not sent only for the Muslims or the Arabs, but he was sent for the whole of humankind.

It is mentioned in

Surah Anbiya, chapter 21 verse 107

"We sent thee not, but as a mercy for all creatures."

[Al'Qur'an 21:107]

A similar message is repeated in

Surah Saba, chapter 34 verse 28

"We have not sent thee but as a universal (Messenger) to men, giving them glad tidings, and warning them (against sin), but most men understand not."

[Al Qur'an 34:28]

It is mentioned in Sahih Bukhari, volume 1, Book of Salaah, chapter 56 hadith no. 429

Narrated Jabir bin Abdullah: Allah's Messenger said,

"Every Prophet used to be sent to his nation only but I have been sent to all mankind."

Which prophet was sent to India?

Regarding the question of which prophet of God was sent to India, and can we consider Ram or Krishna to be prophets of God, there is no text in the Qur'an or Sahih Hadith mentioning the name of the prophet that was sent to India. Since the names of Ram and Krishna are nowhere to be found in the Qur'an and Sahih Hadith, one cannot say for sure whether they were prophets of God or not. Some Muslims, especially certain Muslim politicians who try to appease the Hindus, say Ram Alai-his-salaam, i.e. Ram, may peace be on him. This is totally wrong, since there is no authentic proof from the Qur'an and Sahih Hadith that he was a prophet of God. However, a person may say that perhaps they may have been the prophets of God.

Even if Ram and Krishna were prophets, today we have to follow the last Prophet of God i.e. Muhammad (pbuh)

Even if Ram and Krishna were prophets of God, they were only meant for people of that time and were to be followed only for that particular period of time. Today, all the human

beings throughout the world, including India should only follow the last and final prophet and Messenger of God – prophet Muhammad (pbuh).

10. ARE THE VEDAS A REVELATION OF GOD?

Question:

If Allah has sent His books and revelations in every period, then which revelation was sent to India? Can we consider the Vedas and other Hindu scriptures to be the word of God?

Answer:

Revelation sent in every period

The Glorious Qur'an mentions in Surah Rad, chapter 13 verse 38

"For each period is a book (revealed)."

[Al-Qur'an 13:38]

Four revelations of God mentioned by name in Qur'an

By name, only four revelations of God are mentioned in the Qur'an i.e. Torah, Zaboor, Injeel and the Qur'an

Torah is the revelation which was given to Moses (pbuh)

Zaboor is the revelation which was given to David (pbuh)

Injeel is the revelation which was given to Jesus (pbuh)

and Qur'an is the last and final revelation which was given to the last and final Messenger Muhammad (pbuh).

All the previous revelations sent only for their people

All the revelations that came before Qur'an were only sent for their own people and were to be followed only for a particular time period.

The Qur'an sent for whole humankind

Since the Qur'an is the last and final revelation, it was not sent only for the Muslims or the Arabs but it was sent for the whole of humankind. It is mentioned in:

Surah Ibrahim, chapter 14 verse 1

"Alif Lam Ra. A book which We have revealed unto thee, in order that thou mightest lead mankind out of the depths of darkness into light . . ."

[Al-Qur'an 14:1]

A similar message is repeated in Surah Ibrahim chapter 14 verse 52

"Here is a Message for mankind: let them take warning therefrom, and let them know that He is (no other than) One God: let men of understanding take heed."

[Al-Qur'an 14:52]

Qur'an mentions in Surah Baqarah chapter 2 verse 185

"Ramadan is the (month) in which was sent down the Qur'an, as a guide to mankind, also clear (Signs) for guidance and judgement (between right and wrong)."

[Al-Qur'an 2:185]

A similar message is repeated in Surah Zumur chapter 39 verse 41

"Verily We have revealed the Book to thee in Truth, for (instructing) mankind."

[Al-Qur'an 39:41]

Which revelation sent to India?

The question that arises is "which revelation of God was sent to India and whether we can consider the Vedas and the other Hindu Scriptures to be the revelations of God?" There is no text in the Qur'an or Sahih Hadith mentioning the name of the revelation that was sent to India. Since the names of the Vedas or other Hindu scriptures are no where to be found in Qur'an and Sahih Hadith, one cannot say for sure that they were the revelations of God. They may be the revelation of God or may not be the revelation of God.

Even if the Veda was the word of God today you have to follow the Qur'an

Even if the Vedas and the other scriptures were the revelations from God, they were only meant for people of that time and were to be followed only for that particular period of time. Today all human beings through out the world including India should only follow the last and final Revelation of God, i.e. the Qur'an. Moreover since all the previous revelations were not meant to be followed for eternity, Almighty God did not preserve them in their original form. There is not a single religious scripture of any of the major religions which claims to be the word of God and has maintained its pure original text and is free from alteration, adulteration and interpolation. Since the Glorious Qur'an is to be followed for eternity, Allah (swt) has taken upon Himself to maintain its original purity and guard it from corruption. Allah says in Glorious Qur'an.

Surah Hijr chapter 15 verse 9

"We have, without doubt, sent down the Message; and We will assuredly guard it (from corruption)."

[Al-Qur'an 15:9]

CONCEPT OF GOD IN HINDUISM

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

1.

Common Concept of God in Hinduism:

Hinduism is commonly perceived as a polytheistic religion. Indeed, most Hindus would attest to this, by professing belief in multiple Gods. While some Hindus believe in the existence of three gods, some believe in thousands of gods, and some others in thirty three crore i.e. 330 million Gods. However, learned Hindus, who are well versed in their scriptures, insist that a Hindu should believe in and worship only one God.

The major difference between the Hindu and the Muslim perception of God is the common Hindus' belief in the philosophy of Pantheism. Pantheism considers everything, living and non-living, to be Divine and Sacred. The common Hindu, therefore, considers everything as God. He considers the trees as God, the sun as God, the moon as God, the monkey as God, the snake as God and even human beings as manifestations of God!

Islam, on the contrary, exhorts man to consider himself and his surroundings as examples of Divine Creation rather than as divinity itself. Muslims therefore believe that everything is God's i.e. the word 'God' with an apostrophe 's'. In other words the Muslims believe that everything belongs to God. The trees belong to God, the sun belongs to God, the moon belongs to God, the monkey belongs to God, the snake belongs to God, the human beings belong to God and everything in this universe belongs to God.

Thus the major difference between the Hindu and the Muslim beliefs is the difference of the apostrophe 's'. The Hindu says everything is God. The Muslim says everything is God's.

2.

Concept of God according to Hindu Scriptures:

We can gain a better understanding of the concept of God in Hinduism by analysing Hindu scriptures.

BHAGAVAD GITA

The most popular amongst all the Hindu scriptures is the Bhagavad Gita.

Consider the following verse from the Gita:

"Those whose intelligence has been stolen by material desires surrender unto demigods and follow the particular rules and regulations of worship according to their own natures."
[Bhagavad Gita 7:20]

The Gita states that people who are materialistic worship demigods i.e. ‘gods’ besides the True God.

UPANISHADS:

The Upanishads are considered sacred scriptures by the Hindus.

The following verses from the Upanishads refer to the Concept of God:

i. "*Ekam evadvitiyam*"
"He is One only without a second."
[Chandogya Upanishad 6:2:1][1]
ii. "*Na casya kascij janita na cadhipah*."
"Of Him there are neither parents nor lord."
[Svetasvatara Upanishad 6:9][2]
iii. "*Na tasya pratima asti*"
"There is no likeness of Him."
[Svetasvatara Upanishad 4:19][3]
iv. The following verses from the Upanishad allude to the inability of man to imagine God in a particular form:

"*Na samdrse tisthati rupam asya, na caksusa pasyati kas canainam*."

"His form is not to be seen; no one sees Him with the eye."
[Svetasvatara Upanishad 4:20][4]

---

[1][The Principal Upanishad by S. Radhakrishnan page 447 and 448]
[Sacred Books of the East, volume 1 ‘The Upanishads part I’ page 93]

[2][The Principal Upanishad by S. Radhakrishnan page 745]
[Sacred Books of the East, volume 15, ‘The Upanishads part II’ page 263.]

[3][The Principal Upanishad by S. Radhakrishnan page 736 & 737]
[Sacred Books of the East, volume 15, ‘The Upanishads part II’ page no 253]

[4][The Principal Upanishad by S. Radhakrishnan page 737]
[Sacred Books of the East, volume 15, 'The Upanishads part II' page no 253]

THE VEDAS

Vedas are considered the most sacred of all the Hindu scriptures. There are four principal Vedas: Rigveda, Yajurveda, Samveda and Atharvaveda.

1. **Yajurveda**
   The following verses from the Yajurveda echo a similar concept of God:

   i. "*na tasya pratima asti*
   "There is no image of Him."
   [Yajurveda 32:3][5]

   ii. "*shudhama poapvidham*"
   "He is bodyless and pure."
   [Yajurveda 40:8][6]

   iii. "*Andhatama pravishanti ye asambhuti mupaste*"
   "They enter darkness, those who worship the natural elements" (Air, Water, Fire, etc.). "They sink deeper in darkness, those who worship sambhuti."
   [Yajurveda 40:9][7]

   Sambhuti means created things, for example table, chair, idol, etc.

   iv. The Yajurveda contains the following prayer:
   "Lead us to the good path and remove the sin that makes us stray and wander."
   [Yajurveda 40:16][8]

---

[5][Yajurveda by Devi Chand M.A. page 377]

[6][Yajurveda Samhita by Ralph T. H. Giffith page 538]

[7][Yajurveda Samhita by Ralph T. H. Giffith page 538]

[8][Yajurveda Samhita by Ralph T. H. Griffith page 541]

2. **Atharvaveda**
   The Atharvaveda praises God in Book 20, hymn 58 and verse 3:

   i. "*Dev maha osi*"
   "God is verily great"
   [Atharvaveda 20:58:3][9]

3. **Rigveda**

i. The oldest of all the vedas is Rigveda. It is also the one considered most sacred by the Hindus. The Rigveda states in Book 1, hymn 164 and verse 46:
"Sages (learned Priests) call one God by many names."
[Rigveda 1:164:46]

ii. The Rigveda gives several different attributes to Almighty God. Many of these are mentioned in Rigveda Book 2 hymn 1.

Among the various attributes of God, one of the beautiful attributes mentioned in the Rigveda Book II hymn 1 verse 3, is *Brahma*. *Brahma*means 'The Creator'. Translated into Arabic it means *Khaaliq*. Muslims can have no objection if Almighty God is referred to as *Khaaliq* or 'Creator' or *Brahma*. However if it is said that *Brahma* is Almighty God who has four heads with each head having a crown, Muslims take strong exception to it.

Describing Almighty God in anthropomorphic terms also goes against the following verse of Yajurveda:

"Na tasya Pratima asti"
"There is no image of Him."
[Yajurveda 32:3]

Another beautiful attribute of God mentioned in the Rigveda Book II hymn 1 verse 3 is *Vishnu*. *Vishnu* means 'The Sustainer'. Translated into Arabic it means *Rabb*. Again, Muslims can have no objection if Almighty God is referred to as *Rabb* or 'Sustainer' or *Vishnu*. But the popular image of

---

[9][Atharveda Samhita vol 2 William Dwight Whitney page 910]

Vishnu among Hindus, is that of a God who has four arms, with one of the right arms holding the Chakra, i.e. a discus and one of the left arms holding a 'conch shell', or riding a bird or reclining on a snake couch. Muslims can never accept any image of God. As mentioned earlier this also goes against Svetasvatara Upanishad Chapter 4 verse 19.

"Na tasya pratima asti"
"There is no likeness of Him"

The following verse from the Rigveda Book 8, hymn 1, verse 1 refer to the Unity and Glory of the Supreme Being:

iii. *"Ma cid anyad vi sansata sakhayo ma rishanyata"*
"O friends, do not worship anybody but Him, the Divine One. Praise Him alone."
[Rigveda 8:1:1][10]

iv. *"Devasya samituk parishtutih"*
"Verily, great is the glory of the Divine Creator."
[Rigveda 5:1:81][11]

***Brahma Sutra* of Hinduism:**

The *Brahma Sutra* of Hinduism is:

"*Ekam Brahm, dvitiya naste neh na naste kinchan*"

"There is only one God, not the second; not at all, not at all, not in the least bit."

Thus only a dispassionate study of the Hindu scriptures can help one understand the concept of God in Hinduism.

---

[0][Rigveda Samhita vol. 9, pages 2810 and 2811 by Swami Satya Prakash Sarasvati and Satyakam Vidyalankar]

[11][Rigveda Samhita vol. 6, pages 1802 and 1803 by Swami Satya Prakash Saraswati and Satyakam Vidyalankar]

as from the sun." The Prophecy confirms:

i. The name of the Prophet as Ahmed since Ahmed is an Arabic name. Many translators misunderstood it to be '*Ahm at hi'* and translated the *mantra as* "I alone have acquired the real wisdom of my father".
ii. Prophet was given eternal law, i.e. the *Shariah*.
iii. The Rishi was enlightened by the Shariah of Prophet Muhammad. The Qur'an says in Surah Saba Chapter 34 verse 28 (34:28):

"We have not sent thee but as a universal (Messenger) to men, giving them glad tidings and warning them (against sin), but most men understand not."

MUHAMMAD IN HINDU SCRIPTURES

I) Muhammad (pbuh) prophesised in Bhavishya Purana

1. According to Bhavishya Purana in the Prati Sarag Parv III Khand 3 Adhay 3 Shloka 5 to 8.

"A *malecha* (belonging to a foreign country and speaking a foreign language) spiritual teacher will appear with his companions. His name will be Mohammad. Raja (Bhoj) after giving this *Maha Dev* Arab (of angelic disposition) a bath in the *Panchgavya* and the Ganga water (i.e. purifying him of all sins) offered him the present of his sincere devotion and showing him all reverence said, "I make obeisance to thee. O ye! The pride of mankind, the dweller in Arabia, Ye have collected a great force to kill the Devil and you yourself have been protected from the malecha opponents."

The Prophecy clearly states:

(i) The name of the Prophet as Mohammad.

(ii) He will belong to Arabia. The Sanskrit word *Marusthal*means a sandy track of land or a desert.

(iii) Special mention is made of the companions of the Prophet, i.e. the Sahabas. No other Prophet had as many companions as Prophet Muhammad (pbuh).

(iv) He is referred as the pride of mankind (*Parbatis nath*). The Glorious Qur'an reconfirms this

"And thou (standest) on an exalted standard of character"

[Al-Qur'an 68:4]

"Ye have indeed in the Messenger of Allah, a beautiful pattern (of conduct)".

[Al-Qur'an 33:21]

(v) He will kill the devil, i.e. abolish idol worship and all sorts of vices.

(vi) The Prophet will be given protection against his enemy.

Some people may argue that Raja Bhoj mentioned in the prophecy lived in the 11th century C.E. 500 years after the advent of Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) and was the descendant in the 10th generation of Raja Shalivahan. These people fail to realise that there was not only one Raja of the name Bhoj. The Egyptian Monarchs were called as Pharaoh and the Roman Kings were known as Caesar, similarly the Indian Rajas were given the title of Bhoj. There were several Raj Bhoj who came before the one in 11th Century C.E.

The Prophet did not physically take a bath in the*Panchgavya* and the water of Ganges. Since the water of Ganges is considered holy, taking bath in the Ganges is an idiom, which means washing away sins or immunity from all sorts of sins. Here the prophecy implies that Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) was sinless, i.e. *Maasoom*.

2. According to Bhavishya Purana in the Pratisarag Parv III Khand 3 Adhay 3 Shloka 10 to 27 Maharishi Vyas has prophesised:

"The *Malecha* have spoiled the well-known land of the Arabs. Arya *Dharma* is not to be found in the country. Before also there appeared a misguided fiend whom I had killed; he has now again appeared being sent by a powerful enemy. To show these enemies the right path and to give them guidance, the well-known Muhammad (pbuh), is busy in bringing the *Pishachas* to the right path. O Raja, You need not go to the land of the foolish*Pishachas*, you will be purified through my kindness even where you are. At night, he of the angelic disposition, the shrewd man, in the guise of *Pishacha* said to Raja Bhoj, "O Raja! Your Arya Dharma has been made to prevail over all religions, but according to the commandments of *Ishwar Parmatma*, I shall enforce the strong creed of the meat eaters. My followers will be men circumcised, without a tail (on his head), keeping beard, creating a revolution announcing the *Aadhaan*(the Muslim call for prayer) and will be eating all lawful things. He will eat all sorts of animals except swine. They will not seek purification from the holy shrubs, but will be purified through warfare. On account of their fighting the irreligious nations, they will be known as *Musalmaans*. I shall be the originator of this religion of the meat-eating nations."

The Prophecy states that:

(i) The evil doers have corrupted the Arab land.

(ii) Arya *Dharma* is not found in that land.

(iii) The Indian Raja need not go the Arab land since his purification will take place in India after the *musalmaan*will arrive in India.

(iv) The coming Prophet will attest the truth of the Aryan faith, i.e. Monotheism and will reform the misguided people.

(v) The Prophet’s followers will be circumcised. They will be without a tail on the head and bear a beard and will create a great revolution.

(vi) They will announce the *Aadhaan*, i.e. ‘the Muslim call for prayer’.

(vii) He will only eat lawful things and animals but will not eat pork. The Qur’an confirms this in no less than 4 different places:

In Surah Al-Baqarah chapter 2 verse 173

In Surah Al-Maidah chapter 5 verse 3

In Surah Al-Anam chapter 6 verse 145

In Surah Al-Nahl chapter 16 verse 115

"Forbidden to you for food are dead meat, blood, flesh of swine, and that on which hath been invoked the name of other than Allah".

(viii) They will not purify with grass like the Hindus but by means of sword they will fight their irreligious people.

(ix) They will be called *musalmaan*.

(x) They will be a meat-eating nation.

The eating of herbivorous animals is confirmed by the Qur’an in Surah Maidah, chapter 5 verse 1 and in Surah Muminun chapter 23 verse 21

3. According to Bhavishya Purana, Parv - III Khand 1 Adhay 3 Shloka 21-23:

"Corruption and persecution are found in seven sacred cities of Kashi, etc. India is inhabited by Rakshas, Shabor, Bhil and other foolish people. In the land of Malechhas, the followers of the Malechha dharma (Islam) are wise and brave people. All good qualities are found in Musalmaans and all sorts of vices have accumulated in the land of the Aryas. Islam will rule in India and its islands. Having known these facts, O Muni, glorify the name of thy lord".

The Qur’an confirms this in Surah Taubah chapter 9 verse 33 and in Surah Al Saff chapter 61 verse 9:

"It is He who hath sent His Messenger with Guidance and the Religion of Truth, to proclaim it over all religion, even though the Pagans may detest (it)".

A similar message is given in Surah Fatah chapter 48 verses 28 ending with, "and enough is Allah as a witness".

top

II Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) Prophesised in Atharvaveda

1. In the 20th book of Atharvaveda Hymn 127 Some Suktas (chapters) are known as Kuntap Sukta. Kuntap means the consumer of misery and troubles. Thus meaning the message of peace and safety and if translated in Arabic means Islam.

Kuntap also means hidden glands in the abdomen. These mantras are called so probably because their true meaning was hidden and was to be revealed in future. Its hidden meaning is also connected with the navel or the middle point of this earth. Makkah is called the Ummul Qur'a the mother of the towns or the naval of the earth. In many revealed books it was the first house of Divine worship where God Almighty gave spiritual nourishment to the world. The Qur'an says in

Surah Ali-Imran chapter 3, verse 96:

"The first house (of worship) appointed for men was that at Bakkah (Makkah) full of blessings and of guidance and for all kinds of beings".

Thus Kuntap stands for Makkah or Bakkah.

Several people have translated these Kuntap Suktas like M. Bloomfield, Prof. Ralph Griffith, Pandit Rajaram, Pandit Khem Karan, etc.

The main points mentioned in the Kuntap Suktas i.e. in Atharvaveda book 20 Hymn 127 verses 1-13 are:

Mantra 1

He is Narashansah or the praised one (Muhammad). He is Kaurama: the prince of peace or the emigrant, who is safe, even amongst a host of 60,090 enemies.

b) Mantra 2

He is a camel-riding Rishi, whose chariot touches the heaven.

c) Mantra 3

He is Mamah Rishi who is given a hundred gold coins, ten chaplets (necklaces), three hundred good steeds and ten thousand cows.

d) Mantra 4

Vachyesv rebh. 'Oh! ye who glorifies'.

(i) The Sanskrit word Narashansah means 'the praised one', which is the literal translation of the Arabic word Muhammad (pbuh).

The Sanskrit word Kaurama means 'one who spreads and promotes peace'. The holy Prophet was the 'Prince of Peace' and he preached equality of human kind and universal brotherhood. Kaurama also means an emigrant. The Prophet migrated from Makkah to Madinah and was thus also an Emigrant.

(ii) He will be protected from 60,090 enemies, which was the population of Makkah. The Prophet would ride a camel. This clearly indicates that it cannot be an Indian Rishi, since it is forbidden for a Brahman to ride a camel according to the Sacred Books of the East, volume 25, Laws of Manu pg. 472. According to Manu Smirti chapter 11 verse 202, "A Brahman is prohibited from riding a camel or an ass and to bathe naked. He should purify himself by suppressing his breath".

(iii) (a) This mantra gave the Rishi's name as Mamah. No rishi in India or another Prophet had this name Mamah which is derived from Mah which means to esteem highly, or to revere, to exalt, etc. Some Sanskrit books give the Prophet's name as 'Mohammad', but this word according to Sanskrit grammar can also be used in the bad sense. It is incorrect to apply grammar to an Arabic word. Actually shas the same meaning and somewhat similar pronunciation as the word Muhammad (pbuh).

(b) He is given 100 gold coins, which refers to the believers and the earlier companions of the Prophet during his turbulent Makkan life. Later on due to persecution they migrated from Makkah to Abysinia. Later when Prophet migrated to Madinah all of them joined him in Madinah.

(c) The 10 chaplets or necklaces were the 10 best companions of the Holy Prophet (pbuh) known as Ashra-Mubbashshira (10 bestowed with good news). These were foretold in this world of their salvation in the hereafter i.e. they were given the good news of entering paradise by the Prophet's own lips and after naming each one he said "in Paradise". They were Abu Bakr, Umar, Uthman, Ali, Talha, Zubair, Abdur Rahman Ibn Auf, Saad bin Abi Waqqas, Saad bin Zaid and Abu Ubaidah (May Allah be well-pleased with all of them).

(d) The Sanskrit word Go is derived from Gaw which means 'to go to war'. A cow is also called Go and is a symbol of war as well as peace. The 10,000 cows refer to the 10,000 companions who accompanied the Prophet (pbuh) when he entered Makkah during Fateh Makkah which was a unique victory in the history of mankind in which there was no blood shed. The 10,000 companions were pious and compassionate like cows and were at the same time strong and fierce and are described in the Holy Quran in Surah Fatah:

"Muhammad is the Messenger of Allah; and those who are with him are strong against unbelievers, (but) compassionate amongst each other."

[Al-Qur'an 48:29]

(iv) This mantra calls the Prophet as Rebh which means one who praises, which when translated into Arabic is Ahmed, which is another name for the Holy Prophet (pbuh).

2. Battle of the Allies described in the Vedas.

It is mentioned in Atharvaveda Book XX Hymn 21 verse 6, "Lord of the truthful! These liberators drink these feats of bravery and the inspiring songs gladdened thee in the field of battle. When thou renders vanquished without fight the ten thousand opponents of the praying one, the adoring one."

(i) This Prophecy of the Veda describes the well-known battle of Ahzab or the battle of the Allies during the time of Prophet Muhammed. The Prophet was victorious without an actual conflict which is mentioned in the Qur'an in Surah Ahzab:

"When the believers saw the confederate forces they said, "This is what Allah and His Messenger had promised us and Allah and His Messenger told us what was true." And it only added to their faith and their zeal in obedience."

[Al-Qur'an 33:22]

(ii) The Sanskrit word karo in the Mantra means the 'praying one' which when translated

into Arabic means 'Ahmed', the second name of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh).

iii) The 10,000 opponents mentioned in the Mantra were the enemies of the Prophet and the Muslims were only 3000 in number.

iv) The last words of the Mantra *aprati ni bashayah* means the defeat was given to the enemies without an actual fight.

3. The enemies' defeat in the conquest of Makkah is mentioned in Atharvaveda book 20 Hymn 21 verse no 9:

"You have O Indra, overthrown 20 kings and 60,099 men with an outstripping Chariot wheel who came to fight the praised one or far famed (Muhammad) orphan."

i) The population of Makkah at the time of Prophet's advent was nearly 60,000.

ii) There were several clans in Makkah each having its own chief. Totally there were about 20 chiefs to rule the population of Makkah.

iii) An *Abandhu* meaning a helpless man who was far-famed and 'praised one'. Muhammad (pbuh) overcame his enemies with the help of God.

top

III Muhammad (pbuh) prophesised in the Rigveda

A similar prophecy is also found in Rigveda Book I, Hymn 53 verse 9:

The Sanskrit word used is *Sushrama*, which means praiseworthy or well praised which in Arabic means Muhammad (pbuh).

top

IV Muhummad (pbuh) is also prophesised in the Samveda

Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) is also prophesised in the Samveda Book II Hymn 6 verse 8:

"Ahmed acquired from his Lord the knowledge of eternal law. I received light from him just as from the sun." The Prophecy confirms:

i) The name of the Prophet as Ahmed since Ahmed is an Arabic name. Many translators misunderstood it to be*Ahm at hi* and translated the *mantra* as "I alone have acquired the real wisdom of my father".

ii) Prophet was given eternal law, i.e. the *Shariah*.

iii) The Rishi was enlightened by the *Shariah* of Prophet Muhammad. The Qur'an says in Surah Saba chapter 34 verse 28

"We have not sent thee but as a universal (Messenger) to men, giving them glad tidings and warning them (against sin), but most men understand not."

[Al-Qur'an 34:28]

top

CATEGORISATION OF MAJOR WORLD RELIGIONS:

Religions of the world can be broadly categorized into Semitic religions and non-Semitic religions. Non-Semitic religions can be divided into Aryan religions and non-Aryan religions.

Semitic religions

Semitic religions arereligions that originated among the Semites. According to the Bible, Prophet Noah (pbuh) had a son called Shem.

The descendents of Shem areknown as Semites. Therefore, Semitic religions are the religions that originated among the Jews, Arabs, Assyrians, Phoenicians, etc. Major Semitic religions are Judaism, Christianity and Islam. All these religions are Prophetic religions that believe in Divine Guidance sent through prophets of God.

Non-Semitic religions

The non-Semitic religions are further subdivided into Aryan and non-Aryan religions:

Aryan Religions

Aryan religions are the religions that originated among the Aryans, a powerful group of Indo-European speaking people that spread through Iran and Northern India in the first half of the second Millenium BC (2000 to 1500 BC).

The Aryan Religions are further sub divided into *Vedic* and non-*Vedic* religions.

The *Vedic* Religionis given the misnomer of Hinduism or Brahminism. The non-*Vedic* Religions are Sikhism, Buddhism, Jainism, etc.

Almost all Aryan religions are non-Prophetic religions.

Zoroastrianism is an Aryan, non-Vedic religion, which is not associated with Hinduism. It claims to be a prophetic religion.

Non-Aryan Religions

The non-Aryan religions have diverse origins. Confucianism and Taoism are of Chinese origin while Shintoism is of Japanese origin.

Many of these non-Aryan religions do not have a concept of God. They are better referred to as ethical systems rather than as religions.

DA'WAH
TO ZOROASTRIANS (PARSIS)

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

Da'wah To Zoroastrians (Parsis)

I INTRODUCTION TO PARSI-ISM / ZOROASTRIANISM

Zoroastrianism is an ancient Aryan religion that originated in Persia more than 2500 years ago. Though it has relatively few adherents, less than one hundred and thirty thousand in the whole world, it is one of the oldest religions. Zoroaster was the founder of Zoroastrianism, also commonly known as Parsi-ism. It is also known as the religion of fire worshippers and Magianism.

Parsi Scriptures consist of Dasatir and Vesta or Zend-Avesta. Dasatir is further divided into two parts: Khurda Dasatir and Kalan Dasatir.

Avesta is further divided into Khurda Avesta and Kalan Avesta also known as Zend or Maha-Zend.

The religious scriptures of the Parsis are found in two languages: *Pahlawi* (Pahlawi script resembles the present Persian script) and *Zendi*. Besides these two scripts, some religious literature is found in cuneiform writing.

Some Parsis consider the Zend Avesta to be more authentic than the Dasatir while the others consider Dasatir to be more authentic.

Zend Avesta is divided into three parts:

1. The first part contains *Vendid.*
2. The second part contains *Sirozahs, Yashts and Nyays.*
3. The third part contains *Gathas, Yasha, Visparad, Afrinagan Gahs* and miscellaneous.

DASATIR:

Dasatir means a book of ten parts: '*Das'* meaning 'ten' and '*tir'* meaning 'a part'. Dasatir is also the plural of Dastur, which means law or religious code.

II CONCEPT OF GOD IN ZOROASTRIANISM:

God in Zoroastrianism is known as '*Ahura Mazda'*. '*Ahura'* means 'the Lord' or 'The Master' and '*Mazda'* means 'the Wise'; hence '*Ahura Mazda'* means 'the Wise Lord' or 'the Wise God'. *Ahura Mazda* stands for God, in a strictly monotheistic sense.

Qualities of God according to the Dasatir:

According to the Dasatir, *Ahura Mazda* has the following qualities:

i. He is One.
ii. He is without an origin or end.
iii. He has no father or mother, wife or son.
iv. He is without a body or form.
v. Nothing resembles Him.
vi. Neither the eye can behold Him, nor the power of thinking can conceive Him.
vii. He is above all that you can imagine.
viii. He is nearer to you than your own self.

Qualities of God according to Avesta

According to the *Avesta*, the Gathas and the Yasna give various characteristics to*Ahura Mazda* such as:

i. Creator – Yasna 31:7 & 11
Yasna 44:7
Yasna 50:11
Yasna 51:7
ii. Most Mighty – the Greatest
Yasna 33:11
Yasna 45:6
iii. Beneficent – *Hudai*.
Yasna 33:11
Yasna 48:3
iv. Bountiful – *Spenta*;
Yasna 43:4,5,7,9,11,13,15
Yasna 44:2
Yasna 45:5
Yasna 46:9
Yasna 48:3

Thus, in Zoroastrianism too, we find a concept of an eternal, omnipotent God. Several verses of *Yasna* praise the Lord as a Bountiful Creator.

III MUHAMMED (PBUH) IN THE PARSI SCRIPTURES

1. **Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) in Zend Avesta**
It is mentioned in *Zend* Avesta *Farvardin Yasht* chapter 28 verse 129 (Sacred Books of the East, volume 23, *Zend Avesta* Part II pg. 220):

"Whose name will be the Victorious, *Soeshyant* and whose name will be*Astvat-ereta*. He will be *Soeshyant* (The Beneficent one) because he will benefit the whole bodily world. He will be *Astvat-ereta* (he who makes the people, bodily creatures rise up) because as a bodily creature and as a living being he will stand against the destruction of the bodily (being) creatures to withstand the drug of the two footed brood, to withstand the evil done by the faithful (idolaters and the like and the errors of the Mazdaynians)".

This Prophecy applies to no other person more perfectly than it does to

Muhammad (pbuh):

a. The Prophet was not only victorious at Fatah Makkah but was also merciful when he let go the blood thirsty opponents by saying:

   "There shall be no reproof against you this day".

b. *Soeshyant* means the 'praised one' (refer Haisting's Encyclopedia), which translated in Arabic means Muhammad (pbuh).
c. *Astvat-ereta* is derived from the root word *Astu* which in Sanskrit as well as in *Zend* means 'to praise'. The infinitive *Sitaudan* in present day Persian means praising. It can also be derived from the Persian root word *istadan* which would mean 'one who makes a thing rise up'. Therefore *Astvat-ereta* means the one who praised, which is the exact translation of the Arabic word *'Ahmed'* which is another name for Prophet Muhammad (pbuh). The Prophecy clearly mentions both the names of the Prophet i.e. Muhammad (pbuh) and Ahmed (pbuh).
d. The Prophecy further says that he will benefit the whole bodily world and the Qur'an testifies this in Surah Al-Anbiya chapter 21 verse 107:

   "We sent thee not, but as a mercy for all creatures."
   [Al-Qur'an 21:107]

2. **Sanctity of Prophet's Companions:**
In Zend Avesta Zamyad Yasht chapter 16 verse 95 (Sacred Books of the East, volume 23 Zend Avesta Part II pg. 308):

"And there shall his friends come forward, the friends of *Astvat-ereta*, who are fiend-smitting, well thinking, well-speaking, well-doing, following the good law and whose tongues have never uttered a word of falsehood."

a. Here too Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) is mentioned by name as*Astvat-ereta.*
b. There is also a mention of the Prophet's friends as companions who will be fighting the evil; pious, holy men having good moral values and always speaking the truth. This is a clear reference to the *Sahabas* – the prophet's companions.

3. **Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) in Dasatir**:
The sum and substance of the prophecy mentioned in Dasatir is, that when the Zoroastrian people will forsake their religion and will become dissolute, a man will rise in Arabia, whose followers will conquer Persian and subjugate the arrogant Persians. Instead of worshipping fire in their own temples, they will turn their faces in prayer towards *Kaaba* of Abraham (pbuh) which will be cleared of all idols. They (the followers of the Arabian Prophet), will be a mercy unto the world. They will become masters of Persia, *Madain*, *Tus, Balkh*, the sacred places of the Zoroastrians and the neighbouring territories. Their Prophet will be an eloquent man telling miraculous things.

This Prophecy relates to no other person but to Muhammad (pbuh).

4. **Muhammad (pbuh) will be the Last Prophet:**
It is mentioned in Bundahish chapter 30 verses 6 to 27 that *Soeshyant* will be the last Prophet implying that Muhammad (pbuh) will be the last Prophet. The

Qur’an testifies this in Surah Ahzab.

"Muhammad is not the father of any of your men, but (he is) the Messenger of Allah, and the Seal of the Prophets: and Allah has full knowledge of all things." [Al-Qur'an 33:40]

DA'WAH
TO
SIKHS

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

I

INTRODUCTION TO *SIKHISM:*

Sikhism is a non-Semitic, Aryan, non-Vedic religion. It is a religion that has the sixth largest following in the world. Some consider it as an offshoot of Hinduism. It was founded by Guru Nanak at the end of the 15th century. It originated in the area of Pakistan and North West India called Punjab, meaning the land of the five rivers. Guru Nanak was born in a *Kshatriya* (warrior caste) Hindu family but was very strongly influenced by Islam and Muslims.

DEFINITION OF SIKH AND *SIKHISM*

The word 'Sikh' is derived from the word *sisya* meaning disciple or follower. *Sikhism*is a religion of ten Gurus, the first Guru being Guru Nanak and the tenth and the last being Guru Gobind Singh. The sacred book of *Sikhism* is Sri Guru Granth also called Adi Granth Sahib.

THE FIVE – 'K's

Every Sikh is supposed to keep the following five 'K's, which also serve to identify him as a Sikh:

i. *Kesh* – uncut hair.
ii. *Kanga* – comb; used to keep the hair clean.
iii. *Kada* – metal or steel bangle; for strength and self-restraint.
iv. *Kirpan* – dagger; for self-defence.
v. *Kaccha* – special knee length underwear or under-drawer for agility.

II

CONCEPT OF GOD IN *SIKHISM:*

***MULMANTRA*: THE FUNDAMENTAL CREED OF SIKHISM**

The best definition that any Sikh can give regarding the concept of God in Sikhism is to quote the *Mulmantra* – the fundamental creed of Sikhism, which occurs at the beginning of Sri Guru Granth Sahib.

It is mentioned in Sri Guru Granth Sahib, volume 1 *Japuji*, the first verse:

"There exists but one God, who is called The True, The Creator, Free from fear and hate, Immortal, Not begotten, Self-Existent, Great and Compassionate."

Sikhism is a monotheistic Religion

Sikhism enjoins its followers to practise strict monotheism. It believes in only One Supreme God who is, in the unmanifest form, called *Ek Omkara*.

In the manifest form He is called *Omkara* and has several attributes such as:

Kartar – The Creator
Akal – The Eternal
Sattanama – The Holy Name
Sahib – The Lord
Parvardigar – The Cherisher
Rahim – The Merciful
Karim – The Benevolent

He is also called *Wahe Guru* – the One true God.

Besides Sikhism being strictly monotheistic, it also does not believe in *Avataravada*– the doctrine of incarnation. Almighty God does not incarnate Himself in what is known as *Avatara*. Sikhism is also strongly against idol worship.

Guru Nanak was influenced by Sant Kabir

Guru Nanak was influenced by the sayings of Sant Kabir so much that several chapters of Sri Guru Granth Sahib contain couplets of Sant Kabir.

One of the famous couplets of Sant Kabir is:

"*Dukh mein sumirana sabh karein*
Sukh mein karein na koya
Jo sukh mein sumirana karein
To dukh kaye hoye?"

"In times of trouble, God is remembered by all
But none remembers Him during peace and happiness.
If God is remembered in good times of happiness
Why should trouble occur?"

Compare this with the following verse of the Qur'an:

"When some trouble toucheth man,
He crieth unto his Lord,
Turning to Him in repentance:
But when He bestoweth
A favour upon him
As from Himself,
(Man) doth forget what he cried
And prayed for before,
And he doth set up
Rivals unto Allah."
[Al-Qur'an 39:8]

The Sikh scriptures therefore emphasise monotheism and God-consciousness.

DA'WAH

TO

JEWS

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

(I) INTRODUCTION TO JUDAISM:

Judaism is one of the important Semitic religions. Its followers are known as Jews and they believe in the prophetic mission of Prophet Moses (pbuh).

(II) CONCEPT OF GOD IN JUDAISM:

(i) The following verse from the book of Deuteronomy contains an exhortation from Moses (pbuh):

"Shama Israelu Adonai Ila Hayno Adna Ikhad"

It is a Hebrew quotation which means:

"Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord"
[The Bible, Deuteronomy 6:4]

The following verses are from the Book of Isaiah:

(ii) "I, even I, am the Lord; and beside me there is no saviour."
[The Bible, Isaiah 43:11]

(iii) "I am Lord, and there is none else There is no God besides me."
[The Bible, Isaiah 45 : 5]

(iv) "I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me."
[The Bible, Isaiah 46:9]

(v) Judaism condemns idol worship in the following verses:

"Thou shalt have no other gods before me."

"Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of anythingthat is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth."

"Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them; for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God."
[The Bible, Exodus 20:3-5]

(iv) A similar message is repeated in the book of Deuteronomy:

"Thou shalt have none other gods before me."

"Thou shalt not make thee any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that in the earth beneath, or that is in the water beneath the earth."

"Thou shalt not bow down thyself unto them, nor serve them; for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God."
[The Bible, Deuteronomy 5:7-9]

In Judaism too, we find the same thread of monotheism, that is seen in other religions.

(III) MUHAMMAD IN JEWISH SCRIPTURES (THE OLD TESTAMENT):

1) Muhammad (pbuh) prophesised in the book of Deuteronomy:

a) God Almighty speaks to Moses in Book of Deuteronomy chapter 18 verse 18:

"I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him."

B) Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) is like Moses (pbuh):

i) Both had a father and a mother.

ii) Both were married and had children.

iii) Both were accepted as Prophets by their people in their lifetime.

iv) Both besides being Prophets were also kings i.e. they could inflict capital punishment.

v) Both brought new laws and new regulations for their people.

vi) Both died a natural death.

e) Muhammad (pbuh) is from among the brethren of Moses (pbuh). Arabs are brethren of Jews. Abraham (pbuh) had two sons: Ishmail and Isaac. The Arabs are the descendants of Ishmail (pbuh) and the Jews are the descendants of Isaac (pbuh).

f) Words in the mouth:

Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) was unlettered and whatever revelations he received from God Almighty he repeated it verbatim.

Deuteronomy (18:18):

"I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him."

2) Muhammad (pbuh) is prophesised in the book of Isaiah:

It is mentioned in the book of Isaiah chapter 29 verse 12:

"And the book is delivered to him that is not learned saying, ‘Read this, I pray thee’; and he saith, ‘I am not learned’.

"When Archangel Gabrail commanded Muhammad (pbuh) by saying ‘Iqra’, he replied "I am not learned".

3) Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) is mentioned by name in the Song of Solomon

chapter 5 verse 16:

"Hikko Mamittakim we kullo Muhammadim Zehdoodeh wa Zehrace Bayna Jerusalem."

"His mouth is most sweet: ye, he is altogether lovely. This is my beloved, and this is my friend, O daughter of Jerusalem."

All the prophecies mentioned in the Old Testament regarding Muhammad (pbuh) besides applying to the Jews also hold good for the Christians (H Q. 61:6).

DA'WAH

TO

BUDDHISTS

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

I INTRODUCTION TO BUDDHISM:

Gautama Buddha was the founder of Buddhism. His original name was Siddharth (meaning one who has accomplished). He was also called *Sakyamuni*, i.e. the sage of the tribe of *Sakya*. He was born in the year 563 B.C. in the village of Lumbini near Kapila Vastu, within the present borders of Nepal.

According to legend, an astrologer foretold his father, the king, that young Gautama would give up the throne and luxury and renounce the world the day he would see four things (i) an old man, (ii) a sick man, (iii) a diseased man and (iv) a dead man. Hence, the king confined Gautama in a special palace which was provided with all worldly pleasures. He was married at the age of sixteen to Yasoddhra.

At the age of 29 after the birth of his first son, Gautama on the same day saw an old man, a sick man, a diseased man and a dead man. The impact of the dark side of life made him renounce the world that same night and he left his wife and son and became a penniless wanderer.

He studied and practised Hindu discipline initally, and later, Jainism. For several years he observed rigorous fasting along with extreme self-mortification. On realising that tormenting his body did not bring him closer to true wisdom, he resumed eating normally and abandoned asceticism.

At the age of 35, one evening as he sat beneath a giant fig tree (*Bodh* tree), he felt that he had found the solution to his problem and felt that he had attained enlightenment. Thus, he came to be known as '*Gautama'*, 'The *Buddha'*, or 'The Enlightened One'.

Later, he spent 45 years in preaching the truth that he felt he had discovered. He travelled from city to city bare-footed, clean-headed, with nothing more on his self than his saffron robe, walking stick and begging bowl. He died at the age of 80 in the year 483 BC.

Buddhism is divided into two sects viz. *Hinayana* and *Mahayana*.

II BUDDHIST SCRIPTURES:

Historical criticism has proved that the original teachings of Buddha can never be known. It seems that Gautama Buddha's teachings were memorized by his disciples. After Buddha's death a council was held at Rajagaha so that the words of Buddha could be recited and agreed upon. There were differences of opinion and conflicting memories in the council. Opinion of Kayshapa and Ananda who were prominent disciples of Buddha were given preference. A hundred years later, a second council at *Vesali* was held. Only after 400 years, after the death of Buddha were his teachings and doctrines written down. Little attention was paid regarding its authenticity, genuineness and purity.

Buddhist Scriptures can be divided into *Pali* and *Sanskrit* Literature:

A. Pali Literature :

The *Pali* literature was monopolized by the *Hinayana* sect of Buddhism.

Tri Pitaka

The most important of all Buddhist scriptures is the *TRI-PITAKA* which is in *Pali* text. It is supposed to be the earliest recorded Buddhist literature which was written in the 1st Century B.C.

The *TRI-PITAKA* or Three Baskets of law is composed of 3 books:

1. *Vinaya Pitaka*: 'Rules of Conduct'

his is a boTok of discipline and mainly deals with rules of the order.

2. *Sutta Pitaka*: 'Discourses'

It is a collection of sermons and discourses of Gautama Buddha and the incidents in his life. It is the most important *Pitaka* and consists of five divisions known as *Nikayas*. *Dhammapada* is the most famous *Pali* literature and contains aphorisms and short statements covering the truth.

3. *Abhidhamma*: 'Analysis of Doctrine'

This third basket contains meta physical doctrines and is known as Buddhist meta physicals. It is an analytical and logical elaboration of the first two pitakas. It contains analysis and exposition of Buddhist doctrine.

B. Sanskrit Literature:

Sanskrit literature was preferred by the *Mahayana*. Sanskrit literature has not been reduced to a collection or in Cannon like the *Pali* literature. Thus much of the original Sanskrit literature has been lost. Some were translated into other languages like Chinese and are now being re-translated into Sanskrit.

1. *Maha vastu*: 'Sublime Story'

Mahavastu is the most famous work in Sanskrit which has been restored from its Chinese translation. It consists of voluminous collection of legendary stories.

2. *Lalitavistara*

Lalitavistara is one of the holiest of the Sanskrit literature. It belongs to the first century C.E., 500 years after the death of Buddha. It contains the miracles which the superstition loving people have attributed to Buddha.

III TEACHINGS OF BUDDHA:

A. **Noble Truths**:

The principal teachings of Gautama Buddha can be summarised in what the Buddhists call the 'Four Noble Truths':

First – There is suffering and misery in life .

Second – The cause of this suffering and misery is desire.

Third – Suffering and misery can be removed by removing desire.

Fourth – Desire can be removed by following the Eight Fold Path.

B. **The Noble Eight Fold Path**:

(i) Right Views

(ii) Right Thoughts

(iii) Right Speech

(iv) Right Actions

(v) Right Livelihood

(vi) Right Efforts

(vii) Right Mindfulness

(viii) Right Meditation

C. ***Nirvana***:

Nirvana' literally means "blowing out" or "extinction". According to Buddhism, this is the ultimate goal of life and can be described in various words. It is a cessation of all sorrows, which can be achieved by removing desire by following the Eight Fold Path.

IV PHILOSOPHY OF BUDDHISM IS SELF – CONTRADICTORY:

As mentioned earlier, the main teachings of Buddhism are summarised in the Four Noble Truths:

(i) There is suffering and misery in life.

(ii) The cause of suffering and misery is desire.

(iii) Suffering and misery can be removed by removing desire.

(iv) Desire can be removed by following the Eight Fold Path.

This Philosophy of Buddhism is self-contradictory or self-defeating because the third truth says ‘suffering and misery can be removed by removing desire’ and the fourth truth says that 'desire can be removed by following the Eight Fold Path'.

Now, for any person to follow Buddhism he should first have the desire to follow the Four Noble Truths and the Eight Fold Path. The Third great Noble Truth says that desire should be removed. Once you remove desire, how can we follow the Fourth Noble truth i.e. follow the Eight Fold Path unless we have a desire to follow the Eight Fold Path. In short desire can only be removed by having a desire to follow the Eight Fold Path. If you do not follow the Eight Fold Path, desire cannot be removed. It is self contradicting as well as self-defeating to say that desire will only be removed by continuously having a desire.

V CONCEPT OF GOD

Buddha was silent about the existence or non-existence of God. It may be that since India was drowned in idol worship and anthropomorphism that a sudden step to monotheism would have been drastic and hence Buddha may have chosen to remain silent on the issue of God. He did not deny the existence of God. Buddha was once asked by a disciple whether God exists? He refused to reply. When pressed, he said that if you are suffering from a stomach ache would you concentrate on relieving the pain or studying the prescription of the physician. "It is not my business or yours to find out whether there is God – our business is to remove the sufferings of the world".

Buddhism provided *Dhamma* or the ‘impersonal law’ in place of God. However this could not satisfy the craving of human beings and the religion of self-help had to be converted into a religion of promise and hope. The *Hinayana* sect could not hold out any promise of external help to the people. The *Mahayana* sect taught that Buddha’s watchful and compassionate eyes are on all miserable beings, thus making a God out of Buddha. Many scholars consider the evolution of God within Buddhism as an effect of Hinduism.

Many Buddhists adopted the local god and thus the religion of ‘No-God’ was transformed into the religion of ‘Many-Gods’ – big and small, strong and weak and male and female. The ‘Man-God’ appears on earth in human form and incarnates from time to time. Buddha was against the caste-system prevalent in the Hindu society.

VI MUHAMMAD (PBUH) IN BUDDHIST SCRIPTURES:

1. Buddha prophesised the advent of a *Maitreya*:

A) Almost all Buddhist books contain this prophecy. It is in *Chakkavatti Sinhnad Suttanta* D. III, 76:

"There will arise in the world a Buddha named *Maitreya* (the benevolent one) a holy one, a supreme one, an enlightened one, endowed with wisdom in conduct, auspicious, knowing the universe:

"What he has realized by his own supernatural knowledge he will publish to this universe. He will preach his religion, glorious in its origin, glorious at its climax, glorious at the goal, in the spirit and the letter. He will proclaim a religious life, wholly perfect and thoroughly pure; even as I now preach my religion and a like life do proclaim. He will keep up the society of monks numbering many thousands, even as now I keep up a society of monks numbering many hundreds".

B) According to Sacred Books of the East volume 35 pg. 225:

"It is said that I am not an only Buddha upon whom the leadership and order is dependent. After me another Buddha *maitreya* of such and such virtues will come. I am now the leader of hundreds, he will be the leader of thousands."

C) According to the Gospel of Buddha by Carus pg. 217 and 218 (From Ceylon sources):

"*Ananda* said to the Blessed One, 'Who shall teach us when thou art gone?'

And the Blessed one replied, 'I am not the first Buddha who came upon the earth nor shall I be the last. In due time another Buddha will arise in the world, a holy one, a supremely enlightened one, endowed with wisdom in conduct, auspicious, knowing the universe, an incomparable leader of men, a master of angels and mortals. He will reveal to you the same eternal truths, which I have taught you. He will preach his religion, glorious in its origin, glorious at the climax and glorious at the goal. He will proclaim a religious life, wholly perfect and pure such as I now proclaim. His disciples will number many thousands while mine number many hundreds.'

Ananda said, 'How shall we know him?'

The Blessed one replied, 'He will be known as *Maitreya'*."

(i) The Sanskrit word '*Maitreya'* or its equivalent in *Pali* '*Metteyya'* means loving, compassionate, merciful and benevolent. It also means kindness and friendliness, sympathy, etc. One Arabic word which is equivalent to all these words is '*Rahmat'*. In Surah Al-Anbiya:

"We sent thee not, but as a mercy for all creatures."
[Al-Qur'an 21:107]

Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) was called the merciful, which is '*Maitri'*.

(ii) The words Mercy and Merciful are mentioned in the Holy Qur'an no less than 409 times.

(iii) Every chapter of the Glorious Qur'an, except Chapter 9, i.e. Surah Taubah

begins with the beautiful formula, *'Bismillah Hir-Rahman Nir-Rahim*', which means 'In the name of Allah, Most Gracious, Most Merciful'.

(iv) The Word Muhammad is also spelt as '*Mahamet'* or '*Mahomet'* and in various other ways in different languages. The word '*Maho'* or '*Maha'* in Pali and Sanskrit mean Great and Illustrious and '*Metta'* means mercy. Therefore 'Mahomet' means 'Great Mercy'.

2. Buddha's doctrine was Esoteric and Exoteric:

According to Sacred Books of the East, volume 11, pg. *36 Maha-Parinibbana Sutta*chapter 2 verse 32:

"I have preached the truth without making any distinction between exoteric and esoteric doctrine, for in respect of truths, *Ananda*, the *Tathagata* has no such thing as the closed fist of a teacher, who keeps something back".

Muhammad (pbuh) on the commandment of Almighty God delivered the message and doctrine without making any distinction between esoteric and exoteric. The Qur'an was recited in public in the days of the Prophet and is being done so till date. The Prophet had strictly forbidden the Muslims from hiding the doctrine

3. Devoted Servitors of the Buddhas:

According to Sacred Books of the East volume 11 pg. 97 Maha-Parinibbana *Sutta*Chapter 5 verse 36:

"Then the Blessed one addressed the brethren, and said, 'Whosoever, brethren have been *Arahat-Buddhas* through the long ages of the past, they were servitors just as devoted to those Blessed ones as Ananda has been to me. And whosoever brethren shall be the *Arahat-Buddhas* of the future, there shall be servitors as devoted to those Blessed ones as Ananda has been to me'."

The Servitor of Buddha was Ananda. Muhammad (pbuh) also had a servitor by the name Anas (r.a.) who was the son of Malik. Anas (r.a...) was presented to the Prophet by his parents. Anas (r.a...) relates: "My mother said to him, 'Oh Messenger of God, here is your little servant'." Further Anas relates, "I served him from the time I was 8 years old and the Prophet called me his son and his little beloved". Anas (r.a...) stayed by the Prophet in peace and in war, in safety as well as in danger till the end of his life.

i) Anas (r.a.), even though he was only 11 years old stayed beside the Prophet during the battle of Uhud where the Prophet's life was in great danger.

ii) Even during the battle of Honain when the Prophet was surrounded by the enemies who were archers, Anas (r.a...) who was only 16 years old stood by the Prophet.

Anas (R) can surely be compared with Ananda who stood by Gautam Buddha when the mad elephant approached him.

4. Six Criteria for Identifying Buddha:

According to the Gospel of Buddha by Carus pg. 214:

"The Blessed one said, ‘There are two occasions on which a *Tathagata’s*appearance becomes clear and exceedingly bright. In the night Ananda, in which a*Tathagata* attains to the supreme and perfect insight, and in the night in which he passes finally away in that ultra passing which leaves nothing whatever of his earthly existence to remain.’ "

According to Gautam Buddha, following are the six criteria for identifying a Buddha.

i) A Buddha attains supreme and perfect insight at night-time.

ii) On the occasion of his complete enlightenment he looks exceedingly bright

iii) A Buddha dies a natural death.

iv) He dies at night-time.

v) He looks exceedingly bright before his death.

vi) After his death a Buddha ceases to exist on earth.

i) Muhammad (pbuh) attained supreme insight and Prophethood at night-time.

According to Surah Dukhan:

"By the books that makes thing clear – We sent it down during a blessed night."
[Al-Qur'an 44:2-3]

According to Surah Al-Qadar:

"We have indeed revealed this (message) in the night of power."
[Al-Qur'an 97:1]

ii) Muhammad (pbuh) instantly felt his understanding illumined with celestial light.

iii) Muhammad (pbuh) died a natural death.

iv) According to Ayesha (r.a.), Muhammad (pbuh) expired at night-time. When he was dying there was no oil in the lamp and his wife Ayesha (r.a.) had to borrow oil for the lamp.

v) According to Anas (r.a.), Muhammad (pbuh) looked exceedingly bright in the night of his death.

vi) After the burial of Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) he was never seen again in his bodily form on this earth.

5. <u>Buddhas are only Preachers:</u>

According to Dhammapada, Sacred Books of East volume 10 pg., 67:

"The *Jathagatas* (Buddhas) are only Preachers."
The Qur'an says in Surah Ghashiya:
"Therefore do thou give admonition, for thou art one to admonish. Thou art not one to manage (men's) affairs."
[Al-Qur'an 88:21-22]

6. <u>Identification of *Maitreya* by *Buddha*:</u>

According to *Dhammapada*, *Mattaya Sutta*, 151:

"The promised one will be:

i) Compassionate for the whole creation

ii) A messenger of peace, a peace-maker

iii) The most successful in the world.

The Maitreya as a Preacher of morals will be:

i) Truthful

ii) Self-respecting

iii) Gentle and noble

iv) Not proud

v) As a king to creatures

vi) An example to others in deeds and in words".

CONCEPT OF GOD IN JUDAISM

Judaism is one of the major Semitic religions. Its followers are known as Jews and they believe in the prophetic mission of Prophet Moses (pbuh).

(i) The following verse from Deuteronomy contains an exhortation from Moses: (pbuh)

"Shama Israelu Adonai Ila Hayno Adna Ikhad" It is a Hebrew quotation which means

"Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord"

[The Bible, Deut 6:4]

(ii) Consider the following verses from the Book of Isaiah :

"I, even I, am the Lord; and beside me there is no saviour."

[The Bible, Isaiah 43:11]

(iii) "I am lord, and there is none else There is no God besides me."

[The Bible, Isaiah 45 : 5]

(iv) "I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me."

[The Bible, Isaiah 46:9]

(v) Judaism condemns idol worship in the following verses :

"Thou shalt have no other gods before me. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor see them; for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God…"

[The Bible, Exodus 20:3-5]

(iv) A similar message is repeated in the book of Deutoronomy :

"Thou shalt have none other gods before me.Thou shalt not make thee any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that in the earth beneath, or that is in the water beneath the earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself unto them, nor serve them; for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God…"

[The Bible, Deut 5:7-9]

TECHNIQUES OF HANDLING THE QUESTION & ANSWER SESSION

RULES AND REGULATIONS OF THE QUESTION AND ANSWER SESSION

To be Announced by the Chairman:

"To derive more benefit for all present here today, in the limited time available, we would like the following guidelines or rules to be observed during the Question and Answer Session:

1. Questions asked should be on the topic only. Questions not relevant to the topic will not be entertained.

2. Kindly state your question briefly and to the point. This is a Question and Answer time and not a Lecture or a Debate time.

3. Only one question at a time may be asked. For your 2nd question you will have to go at the back of the row again, and await your 2nd chance for questioning.

4. 3 Mikes have been provided for the questions from the audience: 2 for the Gents next to the stage on the right and left sides, and 1 at the back for the Ladies. Please stand in a queue at one of the mikes if you wish to put a question to the speaker, and speak into the mike only when the mike is handed to you by the mike handling assistants.

5. We will allow one question on each of the mikes in clockwise rotation.

6. Written questions on slips of paper, which are available from our volunteers in the sides, would be given second preference after the open questions on the mikes are answered by the speaker.

7. In the interest of not having any time wasted on irrelevant issues, and to ensure a more educative and an interesting Question & Answer Session, our decision to allow or disallow irrelevant questions will be final.

8. In the interest of getting a proper and clear answer from the speaker, kindly state your name and profession before putting forth your question.

top

STRUCTURE AND CONTENT WHILE ANSWERING A QUESTION IN PUBLIC

I INTRODUCTION OF THE ANSWER:

1. While the question is being asked, pay careful attention to each and every word of the question.

2. Repeat the question in brief mentioning only the important points.

3. If a question contains two different questions or sub-questions, mention at the outset, that the brother has asked two questions or that the brother's question contains two or three parts.

4. Advantages of repeating the questions are:

(i) It helps the audience to understand the question better.

(ii) If the speaker has misunderstood the question, the questioner can correct him.

(iii) During video recording, it enables the questions to be recorded clearly.

(iv) If you are not prepared with the answer, it gives you time to think and formulate the contents of the answer, and their sequence.

5. Appreciate or Comment on the Question, if required:

i) Brother has asked a Good Question.

ii) Brother has asked an Important Question.

iii) Brother has asked a Relevant Question.

iv) Brother has asked a Tricky Question.

v) Brother has asked a Common Question.

vi) Brother has asked an Unusual Question.

6. Mention the relevance of the question, if any, to the occasion of the talk, present situation, surrounding, etc.

7. If the questioner prolongs his question, after it is clear to you, by giving unnecessary details and background which are not required, then politely interrupt the questioner by saying:

i) Brother, I have understood your question.

ii) Brother, the question is clear to me since I am in the field of Da'wah.

8. If the questioner gives a short speech or makes several irrelevant comments without asking a question, then politely interrupt by saying:

i) Brother, could you please pose your question?

ii) Brother, could you please be precise and to the point?"

9. If the question is not related to the topic (unless it is an open question and answer session) comment by saying: "I am sorry brother, the question is not relevant to the topic under discussion but…"

i) "…you are most welcome to have it clarified on Sunday morning at IRF during the open question and answer session (or refer him to an appropriate source)."

ii) "…however you can refer to my video cassette on the topic… (or any other video cassette of another speaker) for the answer to your question."

10. If the question is on 'fiqh' or 'masaail' or if it is a controversial question, ask the questioner to go to a Maulana or an expert in that field. You may quote Al-Qur'an 16:43 or 21:7.

11. If the question is related to the topic, and you do not know the answer, reply in a humble manner by saying:

i) "I am sorry, I do not know the answer, but Inshallah, I will refer and let you know."

ii) Refer him to the appropriate person by saying, "Shaikh _____________ will do better justice in replying the question".

II <u>BODY OF THE ANSWER:</u>

Answer the question by covering all the following four aspects if possible or as many as possible.

1. Islamic viewpoint

(i) Quote with reference the relevant Qur'anic verse, if any.

(ii) Quote with reference the relevant authentic hadith, if any.

(iii) Commentary and explanation of the Qur'anic verse or hadith quoted.

(iv) View of an expert, scholar or any knowledgeable person in the Islamic field, related to the topic.

2. Comparative Religion

(i) Quote the portions of scriptures of other religions (e.g. Bible, Veda, Upanishad, Geeta, etc.) related to the answer.

(ii) Commentary and explanation of the verses of the religious scripture quoted.

(iii) View of an expert or a scholar of the respective religion, if beneficial.

3. Reason and Logic

(i) Explain the answer with the help of reason and logic.

(ii) Give logical examples to prove your point.

(iii) Give simple examples related to day to day living e.g. school life, household examples, etc.

(iv) Use universally accepted facts to prove your point e.g. 2 + 2 = 4, the world is spherical, etc.

(v) Give statistics to support the answer, mentioning its source.

(vi) Quote articles to support your answer from reputed newspapers, magazines, etc.

(vii) Give references from authentic and famous books to support your answer.

(viii) Quote scholars, historians and experts in the field, related to the answer.

4. Scientific Viewpoint

(i) Mention established scientific facts, if any, to support your answer.

(ii) Give medical reasons, if any, to support your answer.

(iii) Give references from medical journals and books, if any, to support your answer.

(iv) Quote the viewpoint of any Scientist or Doctor, if any, to support your answer.

III CONCLUSION

Use any one or two of the following:

(i) Give a hitting example.

(ii) Ask a rhetoric question.

(iii) Give a quotation with reference of a relevant Qur'anic verse.

(iv) The last sentence should be emphatic: hitting with a punch line.

(v) Whenever there is room for discussion in the answer, or if the contents of the answer are not clearly mentioned in the Qur'an or in authentic Ahadith, then conclude your answer by saying, "*Wallaahu-A'alam*" (And Allah knows best).

IV IMPORTANT POINTS WHILE ANSWERING:

1. Follow all the important points of the structure and content of Islamic lectures.

2. The answer should not contradict any of your other answers.

3. If the question contains an argument or example to prove the Islamic viewpoint wrong, then either (i) Agree with the questioner's reasoning of the argument or example and give another example to turn the table over and use the same reasoning to prove the Islamic view point, or (ii) Prove the questioner's reasoning of the argument or example wrong by giving another argument or example.

4. Do not let the question and answer session run into a discussion or a debate. If required, ask the questioner to meet you after the programme.

5. Non-Muslims should be given preference to ask questions.

6. Notes should never be carried for a question and answer session.

7. The same Qur'anic verse can be utilized in answering several questions.

8. Follow the guidelines of Surah Nahl chapter 16 verse 125 while answering

the questions.

V PREPARATION FOR QUESTION AND ANSWER SESSION:

1. View all the video cassettes of various Islamic orators dealing with the topic on which you have to speak. (Talk plus question and answer session).

2. Prepare a list of all the possible questions that can be asked on the topic, including the questions asked to various other speakers while they gave the talk on the same topic and categorise the list into very important, important and other questions.

3. Prepare the answer to each and every question.

4. Memorise all the answers.

5. Portions of your talks on other topics can be utilized in answers, if relevant.

6. Memorisation of talks on various topics along with the answers helps you in handling a variety of questions.

7. Note all the verses of the Qur'an dealing with the topic.

8. Note as many authentic hadith as possible dealing with the topic.

top

PUBLIC SPEAKING TECHNIQUES WHILE ANSWERING QUESTIONS:

I. IMPORTANT POINTS

1. Follow all the techniques of public speaking.

2. Answer very confidently.

3. Answer very loudly.

4. Look more at the questioner while answering, but do not neglect the others.

5. If someone contradicts any of your statements but you are positive about your homework and statistics, please don't get shaken up.

6. Do not allow the answers to be interrupted by frequent, unwanted comments.

7. Always keep your mind open and alert while answering.

II POINTS TO BE AVOIDED

1. Do not get irritated with the questioner.

2. Do not get angry, and always remain cool and calm.

3. Do not beat around the bush and answer precisely to the point.

4. Do not give false and wrong information.

5. Do not confuse yourself while answering.

6. Do not become blank.

7. Do not fumble.

8. Do not look tense.

9. Do not become nervous.

III. UNUSUAL CIRCUMSTANCES

1. Questioner is provocative and violent:

(i) If the questioner is provocative and violent, do not get angry. Maintain your cool and calmness by answering humbly.

(ii) The more violent and provocative the questioner is, the more humble, calm and soft should your approach be while answering.

(iii) Try to have the maximum contrast between the attitude of the questioner and yourself while answering, to win over the questioner and the audience.

(iv) Note and answer all his points with logic and reason.

2. Questioner's intention is to play mischief:

(i) Note and answer all his points with logic and reason.

(ii) Do not get irritated.

(iii) If required try and expose his intention to the audience by giving an appropriate example.

3. Questioner tries to insult and put down the speaker:

(i) Do not feel offended.

(ii) Do not get nervous or tense.

(iii) Answer very firmly and confidently.

(iv) If required you may raise your voice and answer loudly but do not loose

your temper.

(v) Answer loudly to be effective but not out of anger or in retaliation.

(vi) Ask rhetoric questions to the questioner, to substantiate his claim.

(vii) Give information or statistics to prove his point wrong.

4. Questioner interrupts the Answer:

It may happen that the questioner interrupts the answer and makes some comments or remarks before the answer is complete. In such a situation:

(i) If his intention seems to be good and it is a genuine interruption, be patient and complete the answer and include the clarification he requires.

(ii) If the interruption is not required and he poses a sub-question, politely ask him to be patient and say, "I was about to cover the answer to this sub-question and I request you to be patient till I complete my reply".

(iii) If the questioner often interrupts and disturbs, then say that you gave him a fair hearing while he was posing the question and it is his duty to give you a fair hearing while you are answering. (If the chairman is well-versed, then he too can ask the questioner not to interrupt you).

5. If the Questioner argues with the speaker:

(i) Politely but firmly reply that this is a question and answer session and not a discussion or a debate session.

(ii) Say, "This is my view regarding the question, if you like it then Alhamdulillah you may agree with it. If you don't, no one forces you to follow it blindly. And Allah knows best".

(iii) Say, "If you have any additional question, you are most welcome to go at the back of the queue and await your next chance to ask your next question."

top

Most Common Questions asked by Non-Muslims

1. Why is a man allowed to have more than one wife in Islam? i.e. why is polygamy allowed in Islam?

2. If a man is allowed to have more than one wife why does Islam prohibit a woman from having more than one husband?

3. Why does Islam degrade women by keeping them behind the veil?

4. How can Islam be called the religion of peace when it was spread by the sword?

5. Why are most of the Muslims fundamentalists and terrorists?

6. Killing an animal is a ruthless act. Then why do Muslims consume non-vegetarian food?

7. Why do Muslims slaughter the animal in a ruthless manner by torturing it and slowly and painfully killing it?

8. Science tells us that whatever one eats has an effect on one's behaviour. Why then, does Islam allow Muslims to eat non-vegetarian food, since eating of animal flesh makes a person violent and ferocious?

9. If Islam is against idol worship, why do the Muslims worship and bow down to the Kaaba in their prayer?

10. Why are non-Muslims not allowed in the Holy cities of Makkah and Madinah?

11. Why is the eating of pork forbidden in Islam?

12. Why is the consumption of alcohol prohibited in Islam?

13. Why are two witnesses who are women, equivalent to only one witness who is a man ?

14. Under Islamic law, why is a woman's share of the inherited wealth only half that of a man?

15. How can you prove that the Qur'an is the word of God?

16. How can you prove the existence of hereafter?

17. If all the Muslims follow one and the same Qur'an, then why are there so many sects amongst Muslims?

18. All the religions basically tell their followers to do good deeds. Why

then should a person only follow Islam? Can he not follow any one of the many religions?

19. If Islam is the best religion, then why are many of the Muslims dishonest, unreliable, and involved in activities such as cheating, bribing, dealing in drugs, etc.?

20. Why do Muslims abuse non-Muslims by calling them Kafirs?

21. Was not your Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) hypersexual since he had about eleven wives?

22. Why does Islam not permit a woman to give divorce?

23. Why do Muslims call God, 'Allah'?

24. Why cannot a Muslim wish Assalamu Alaikum (peace be on you) to Non-Muslims?

25. Why are women not allowed in mosques?

26. Who created Allah?

27. Why is giving or taking of interest prohibited in Islam?

28. Why is building of temples, churches, etc. and the propagation of any other religion not allowed in Islamic countries like Saudi Arabia?

29. Why do Muslims have to pray five times every day. Isn't praying once a day sufficient?

30. Why does Allah require praises?

31. If God is just then why are some people born healthy while some are born with defects and are deaf and dumb, some are born in rich families while others in poor families?

32. Why are Muslim men circumcised?

33. Religion or way of life should not be rigid but be flexible. Islam is very rigid with several rules and regulations and do's and don'ts?

34. What is the Concept of Jihad in Islam?

35. Can a woman be a head of the state?

36. Why are Muslims not allowed to marry Non-Muslims?

37. Why do Muslims bow down, prostrate and then stand as though they are exercising while offering prayers?

38. What is the significance of fasting?

39. If Allah is your God and indeed the only God, then why do the prayers of Muslims to Allah go unanswered?

40. Why do Muslims follow the lunar calendar?

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS OF A DEBATE

by

Dr. ZAKIR NAIK

a Debate consists of A Talk, Rebuttal and Question & Answer Session:

A.TALK

I

Structure and Content OF Your Talk:

1)
Follow all the points of the structure and content of Islamic lecture.

2)
Do full justice to the topic of the debate.

3)
If the topic is framed as a Question, see that you provide the complete answer to that Question in your talk.

4)
The opinion you want to convey to the audience and the other speaker should be clear and the presentation should be such that a neutral person or an unbiased non-Muslim should have no option but to agree with your opinion, viewpoint or stand.

5)
If the topic contains two contradictory / opposite subjects or stances to be discussed, then your talk should convincingly prove your viewpoint and at the same time should also contain logical explanations to disprove the opponent's viewpoint. For e.g. "The Qur'an or the Bible: Which is God's Word?" In such a debate, your talk should convincingly prove that Qur'an is the Word of God as well as prove that the Bible is not the Word of God.

II

Important Points:

1)
Besides giving quotations with references from Qur'an and *Hadith* also give quotations with references of the Scriptures and authentic sources of the opponent.

2)
Your talk should clarify the Common Misconceptions of the topic of the debate.

3)
The talk should contain the replies to the allegations made by the critics against your viewpoint as well as the replies to the theories which disprove your viewpoint.

4)
Give logical explanation to disprove the theories supporting the viewpoints of the opponent.
5)
If you miss any important points or time does not permit you to cover them in your talk, mention it in your rebuttal or include it appropriately in your replies to related questions posed in the Question and Answer Session.
III
During Opponent's Talk:
1)
Listen to his complete talk very attentively.
2)
Make notes of all the important points mentioned in his talk to prove his viewpoint.
3)
Make notes of all points mentioned to disprove your viewpoint.
4)
Note down the quotations alongwith the references given regarding the Sacred Scriptures or other sources mentioned by the opponent in his talk which you feel are not correct, mistranslated or quoted out of context.
5)
Make note of his favourite repetitive dialogues if any.
6)
Note down any information given by the speaker which you doubt is authentic.
7)
Make note of any comments made by the opponent regarding yourself.
8)
Make note of any sarcastic remark made by the opponent.
N.B. Follow as many of the above points whenever the opponent speaks, including when he is presenting the rebuttal and when he is answering the questions posed to him.
iv
If you are the Second Speaker:
1)

Follow as many points as possible mentioned below in the "Presentation of a Rebuttal" and include them in your speech intermittently whenever required without altering much of the matter that you have prepared in your speech.

b.

Rebuttal:

I.
If you are presenting the Rebuttal First.
PRESENTATION OF A REBUTTAL
1)
Your Rebuttal should refute all the allegations made by the first speaker, i.e. your opponent, in his talk against your viewpoint.
2)
Give a logical explanation to disprove the points put forth by the opponent to prove his viewpoint in his talk.

3)
If the opponent has given any quotations from the Sacred Scriptures or any other sources in his talk which are not correct, mistranslated or are out of context, clarify them.
4)
If the opponent gives any references or statistics from sources which are not reliable, mention their weaknesses as a source or the unauthenticity in your rebuttal.
5)
If the opponent uses any repetitive dialogue or a punch line often, then you may use that same dialogue verbatim after disproving his point.
6)
Thank the opponent if he has praised you.
7)
Clarify any misinformation that he may have given about you.
8)
Give a witty reply to the sarcastic remarks if any, made by the opponent.

During the Opponent's Rebuttal

1.
Follow all the points of "During Opponents Talk".
2.
Follow all the points mentioned in the Presentation of your Rebuttal (substituting the Opponents Rebuttal in place of his Talk) and try to include them appropriately while answering the questions during the Question and Answer session.

II

If you are second in presenting the Rebuttal

1.
If Format A is followed and you are the second speaker as well as second in presenting the Rebuttal then you may have followed the points of the 2nd speaker:
a.
Follow all the points mentioned in the presentation of your Rebuttal, which you may have missed or time did not permit you to cover the points in your speech.
b.
Follow all the points mentioned in the presentation of a Rebuttal substituting his Rebuttal in place of his talk
2.
If Format A is followed when you are the 1st speaker and presenting the Rebuttal second then follow all the points mentioned in the Rebuttal, by substituting the opponent's Talk and Rebuttal in place of only talk.

c.

Question and Answer Session

I

Structure and Content of the Answer

1.
Follow all points of the structure and content of handling the Question and Answer Session.
2.
While answering also include appropriate matter (logical explanations, examples, etc.) to prove the Islamic viewpoint regarding the topic of the Debate.
3.
While answering also include appropriate matter to disprove the opponent's viewpoint regarding

the topic of the debate.

II

Important points

1.

If the opponent presents his rebuttal after your rebuttal and if you feel any clarification is required (i.e. all the points you have to follow in your rebuttal) you can mention it briefly and appropriately while answering the Question.

2.

If you have missed any point, which you should have included in your talk or rebuttal or if you have missed clarifying any point made by your opponent during his talk or rebuttal, you can mention briefly and appropriately while answering the questions.

3.

If the opponent has said something while answering the question, which requires clarification or reply, you can give such clarifications while answering later questions posed to you.

D.

Preparation for Debate

1.

Follow all the points mentioned in the preparation of an Islamic Lecture and Question and Answer session

2.

Study the background of the opponent including profession, educational qualification, activities, etc.

3.

Read all the books authored by the opponent, and thoroughly post-mortem (critically analyse) the book dealing with the subject of the debate.

4.

Listen and view all the audio and video cassettes of the opponent and thoroughly post-mortem (critically evaluate) those dealing with the subject of the debate.

5.

Go through as much material as possible of the organisation to which the opponent belongs.

6.

Self analysis of your prepared speech and rebuttal:

a.

Try and remove as many mistakes as possibles in your talk and rebuttal and correct them.

b.

Assume that you are a non-Muslim and if your opponent is a Muslim and presents the same matter as you have prepared, how would you attack and reply to it? Later try and overcome the shortcomings, if any.

ACTION PLANNING BY PARTICIPANTS

Dear Participant,

Assalamu Alaikum Warahmatullahi Wabarakatuhu.

We pray to Allah (SWT) to accept our efforts and help us serve His Deen better. Aameen.

While we believe that we are responsible for the quality of training inputs provided by us, you will agree that the onus of learning, remembering, practising and implementing the training inputs rests on the participants, i.e. on each of you.

The true success of any training programme depends on the actions taken by participants after receiving the training. To help us systematically achieve this objective, please list down on a sheet of paper, all valuable learnings that you have gained from this training programme along with your resolution of actions to be taken by you against each point of learning.

Now from the list drawn out by you, please choose five most valuable learnings and set for yourself 'SMART' goals for each of these five learnings.

A 'SMART' goal is one that is:
Stretching
Measurable
Agreed
Realistic
Time-bound.

Make sure each goal satisfies these five criteria. For example if you set a goal that, "I will get one new non-Muslim every week to IRF", this will be:

Stretching (if it is challenging enough to retain your interest and enthusiasm).

Measurable (if the goal has a specific quantity - one gent, once a week; and has a standard of quality - new person who is a non-Muslim).

Agreed (if you are committed to it and you promise to achieve this goal to your organizational head or a close friend).

Realistic (if it is attainable; if you are in contact with non-Muslims).

Time-bound (what is the deadline? e.g. every week).

This is a simple example that satisfies all five criteria.

Please share with us a copy of both these above-referred sheets prepared by you with your names written on them so that Inshallah, in future, we may conduct a review of actions taken by you. These sheets will help you continuously review your

own Islamic activities and provide material for introspection.

Moreover, the very fact that you chose to apply for this training and were selected, in preference to several other applicants, puts an additional moral responsibility on you to vindicate your applying for this training. You also have to vindicate IRF's faith in you and your abilities, on the basis of which you were selected for this training. You will Inshallah do so by continuously making efforts to achieve the goals chosen by you.

May Allah (SWT) help all of us in these efforts. Aameen.

Jazakallah.

For the ISLAMIC RESEARCH FOUNDATION

Dr. Zakir Abdul-Karim Naik
President

METHODOLOGY OF REPLYING QUESTIONS

by

Dr. Zakir Naik

ADDITIONAL PUBLIC SPEAKING TECHNIQUES WHILE ANSWERING QUESTIONS:

1. Follow all the techniques of public speaking.
2. Answer very confidently.
3. Answer loudly.
4. Don't confuse yourself while answering.
5. Look more at the questioner while answering, but do not neglect the others.
6. If someone contradicts any of your statements but you are positive about your homework and statistics, please don't get shaken up.
7. Do not allow the answers to be interrupted by frequent, unwanted comments.
8. Always keep your mind open and alert while answering.

STRUCTURE AND CONTENT WHILE ANSWERING A QUESTION IN PUBLIC

I INTRODUCTION OF THE ANSWER:

1. While the question is being asked, pay careful attention to each and every word of the question.

2. Repeat the question in brief mentioning only the important points.

3. If a question contains two different questions or sub-questions, mention at the outset, that, the brother has asked two questions or the brother's question contains two or three parts.

4. Advantages of repeating the questions are:

(i) It helps the audience to understand the question better.

(ii) If the speaker has misunderstood the question, the questioner can correct him.

(iii) During video recording, it enables the question to be recorded clearly.

(iv) If you are not prepared with the answer, it gives you time to think and formulate the contents of the answer, and their sequence.

5. Appreciate or comment on the question, if required:

(i) The brother has asked a good question.

(ii) The brother has asked an important question.

(iii) The brother has asked a relevant question.

(iv) The brother has asked a tricky question.

(v) The brother has asked a common question.

6. Mention the relevance of the question, if any, to the occasion of the talk, present situation, surrounding, etc.

7. If the questioner prolongs his question after it is clear to you, by giving unnecessary details and background that are not required, then politely interrupt the questioner by saying:

(i) Brother, I have understood your question.

(ii) Brother, the question is clear to me since I am in the field of Da'wah.

8. If the questioner gives a short speech or makes several irrelevant comments without asking a question, then politely interrupt by saying:

(i) Brother, could you please pose your question?

(ii) Brother, could you please be precise and to the point?

9. If the question is not related to the topic (unless it is an open question and answer session) comment by saying: "I am sorry brother, the question is not relevant to the topic under discussion but…"

(i) "…you are most welcome to have it clarified on Sunday morning at IRF during the open question and answer session (or refer him to an appropriate source)."

(ii) "…however you can refer to my video cassette on the topic… (or any other video cassette of any other speaker) for the answer to your question".

10. If the question is on ‘fiqh’ or ‘masael’ or if it is a controversial question, ask the questioner to go to an Alim or an expert in that field. You may quote Al-Qur’an 16:43 or 21:7.

11. If the question is related to the topic, and you do not know the answer, reply in a humble manner by saying:

(i) "I am sorry, I do not know the answer, but Inshallah, I will refer and let you know."

(ii) Refer him to the appropriate person by saying, "Shaikh _______ will do better justice in replying the question".

II BODY OF THE ANSWER:

1. Islamic viewpoint.

Answer the question covering all the following four aspects if possible or as many as possible:

(i) Quote with reference the relevant Qur’anic verse, if any.

(ii) Quote with reference the relevant authentic hadith, if any.

(iii) Commentary and explanation of the Qur’anic verse or hadith quoted.

(iv) View of an expert, scholar or any knowledgeable person in the Islamic field, related to the topic.

2. Comparative Religion.

(i) Quote the portions of the scriptures of other religions (e.g. Bible, Veda, Upanishad, Geeta, etc.) related to the answer.

(ii) Commentary and explanation of the verses of the religious scripture quoted.

(iii) View of an expert or a scholar of the respective religion, if beneficial.

3. Reason and Logic.

(i) Explain the answer with the help of reason and logic.

(ii) Give logical examples to prove your point.

(iii) Give simple examples related to day to day living e.g. school life, household examples, etc.

(iv) Use universally accepted facts to prove your point eg. 2 + 2 = 4, the world is spherical, etc.

(v) Give statistics to support the answer, mentioning its source.

(vi) Quote articles to support your answer from reputed newspapers, magazines, etc.

(vii) Give references from authentic and famous books to support your answer.

(viii) Quote scholars, historians and experts in the field, related to the answer.

4. Scientific Viewpoint.

(i) Mention established scientific fact, if any, to support your answer.

(ii) Give medical reasons, if any, to support your answer.

(iii) Give references from medical journals and books, if any, to support your answer.

(iv) Quote the viewpoint of Scientists or Doctors, if any, to support your answer.

III CONCLUSION

(i) Give a hitting example.

(ii) Ask a rhetoric question.

(iii) Give a quotation with reference of a relevant Qur'anic verse.

(iv) The last sentence should be emphatic: hitting with a punch line.

IV IMPORTANT POINTS WHILE ANSWERING:

1. Follow all the important points of the structure and content of Islamic lectures.

2. The answer should not contradict any of your other answers.

3. If a person gives an illogical argument to prove his point, agree with him for the sake of argument and prove him wrong by applying the same illogical argument in his context.

4. Do not let the question and answer session run into a discussion or a debate. If required, ask the questioner to meet you after the programme.

5. Non-Muslims should be given preference in asking questions.

6. Notes should never be carried for a question and answer session.

7. The same Qur'anic verse can be utilized in answering several questions.

8. Follow the guidelines of Surah Nahl chapter 16 verse 125 while answering questions.

V PREPARATION FOR QUESTION AND ANSWER SESSION:

1. View all the video cassettes of various Islamic orators dealing with the topic on which you have to speak. (Talk plus question and answer session).

2. Prepare a list of all the possible questions that can be asked on the topic, including the questions asked to various other speakers while they gave the talk on the same topic and categorise the list into very important, important and other questions.

3. Prepare the answer to each and every question.

4. Memorise all the answers.

5. Portions of your talks on other topics can be utilized in answers, if relevant.

6. Memorisation of talks on various topics along with the answers helps you in handling the question and answer session.

7. Note all the verses of the Qur’an dealing with the topic.

8. Note as many authentic hadith as possible dealing with the topic.

WAS CHRIST CRUCIFIED ?

JESUS (PBUH) SAID, "THE DAY THAT I DIE", not "THE DAY THAT I DIED"

It is mentioned in **Surah Maryam, Chapter 19 verse 33**
"So Peace is on me the day I was born, the day that I die and the Day that I shall be raised up to life (again)".
[Al-Qur'ân 19:33]

The Qur'ân mentions that Jesus (pbuh) said "Peace is on me the Day I was born, the day that I die". "It is not stated the day that I died". It is in the future tense and not in the past tense.

JESUS (PBUH) WAS RAISED UP ALIVE

The Qur'ân further says in **Surah Nisa, Chapter 4 verse 157-158:**
"That they said (in boast), 'We killed Jesus Christ the son of Mary, the Messenger of Allah' But they killed him not, Nor **crucified** him, but so it was made to appear to them, and those who differ therein are full of doubts, with no (certain) knowledge, but only conjecture to follow, for of a surety they killed him not-
Nay, Allah raised him up unto Himself; and Allah is exalted in Power, Wise."
[Al-Qur'ân 4:157-158]